This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

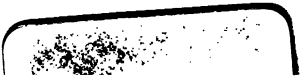
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`



PALEY'S

NATURAL THEOLOGY.

NATURAL THEOLOGY,

OR EVIDENCES OF THE

EXISTENCE AND ATTRIBUTES OF THE DEITY.

BY THE REV. WILLIAM PALEY, D.D.

WITH ADDITIONS AND NOTES.

EDINBURGH:
PUBLISHED BY WILLIAM AND ROBERT CHAMBERS.
1849.

141. m. 265.

EDINBURGH:
PRINTED BY W. AND R. CHAMBERS.

PREFACE TO THE PRESENT EDITION.

THE present republication of Paley's Natural Theology will be found, it is hoped, to combine two important advantages, which distinguish it from every previous edition. In the first place, very considerable additions have been made to the work, these additions consisting of such matter as seemed necessary to place the production on a level with the advanced knowledge of the present day. Secondly, this edition of Paley's treatise stands aloof from all others, preceding or contemporary, as regards form and price. The low rate at which the work is presented to the British public, brings it within the reach of all classes of the community, without pecuniary inconvenience.

The intrinsic value of Paley's treatise is sufficiently demonstrated by the success with which it has stood the test of time; nor indeed would it be easy to point out any other work, professing to handle scientific subjects in a popular manner, that has at once been so satisfactory to the mere man of science, and intelligible to the common reader. No justification, therefore, is required for its re-issue under circumstances so favourable for its extended circulation. But, on the other hand, some apology may appear necessary for the introduction of new matter into the body of a work, the high merits of which are so universally acknowledged. This enlargement of the text, in truth, was not resolved upon without diffidence and hesitation. The conviction, however, that lengthy notes are on all occasions to be avoided if possible, overcame this reluctance, and the reader's convenience has been consulted at the risk of incurring the charge of presumption. The form only, it is to be observed, in which the additions were to be made, is referred to as having been the subject of doubt; for the fact, that the progress of science since the time of Paley has brought to light numberless new proofs of Design in the order of nature, is undeniable. In some cases, these supplementary illustrations could not be inserted in the text without interfering with the tenor, or impairing the consistency, of its arguments; in a few rare instances, the statements in the text have been controverted by recent discoveries; notes on these occasions were unavoidable, as it has been held as an inviolable principle on no account to mutilate a single sentence of the original work.

It may be remarked, in concluding these few explanatory words, that too much latitude appears to have been admitted to the opponents

of Natural Theology, on the score of what are called Final Causes. If, for example, a beautiful purpose is seen to be effected by some arrangement in the order of things, while at the same time nothing resembling human contrivance is visible in that arrangement, the atheist has been allowed freely to assume that the serving of the purpose goes for nothing, since design of the kind in question cannot be traced. No argument can be drawn, it is said, from Final Causes—that is, it cannot be inferred from the end answered that the end was foreseen. The following passage from Dr Buckland is applicable to this point:—'Although, indeed, it be dangerous hastily to have recourse to Final Causes, yet, since in many branches of physical knowledge (more especially in those which relate to organised matter) the end of many a contrivance is better understood than the contrivance itself, it would surely be as unphilosophical to hesitate at the admission of Final Causes, when the general tenor and evidence of the phenomena naturally suggest them, as it would be to introduce them gratuitously unsupported by such evidence.' Upon views according with these, though instances of mechanical contrivance constitute the greater number of the illustrations added to the present work, in some cases examples of useful purposes served have been referred to, even where contrivance was not directly discoverable.

The publishers have only to add, that the additions and notes have been executed by Mr Thomas Smibert, Licentiate of the Royal College of Surgeons, Edinburgh.

Edinburgh, July 1849.

MEMOIR OF THE LIFE OF DR PALEY.

WILLIAM PALEY was the son of a clergyman who held a small living near Peterborough, in Northamptonshire, where the subject of the present notice was born, in the year 1743. Within a few years after this event, his father became master of a grammar-school in Yorkshire, and in this seminary young Paley was instructed in the common elementary branches of knowledge. At the age of sixteen, he entered as a student at Christ's College, Cambridge, and in the course of three or four succeeding years distinguished himself so highly, we are told, as to attract crowded auditories whenever he was expected to engage in the usual academical exercises. The degrees of Bachelor and Master of Arts he took respectively in the years 1763 and 1766, and in the interval between these periods, filled the situation of assistant teacher in a school at Greenwich. On being made Master of Arts, he was also elected a Fellow, and soon after a tutor, of his college, and commenced, in the latter capacity, a series of lectures on moral philosophy and other kindred subjects, some of them prescribed by his office, while others flowed spontaneously from his zeal for the improvement of his pupils. So successful were the exertions of Paley in this situation, furthered as they were by the powerful assistance of his fellow-tutor, Dr John Law (afterwards Bishop of Elphin), that the society of Christ's College speedily rose to a state of prosperity scarcely equalled in the history of the university.

Through his intimacy with Dr John Law, Paley became acquainted with his friend's father, Dr Edmund Law, master of Peter-house, and afterwards Bishop of Carlisle. This connection materially influenced our author's future life. To the Laws he owed his establishment in the church, and the possession of that leisure which enabled him to give to the world the fruits of his academical studies. He quitted the university in 1776, entered about the same period into holy orders, and was inducted into a small benefice in Cumberland. Subsequently, he received the living of Appleby in Westmoreland, and a prebendal stall in the cathedral church of Carlisle. In 1782, he was promoted to the archdeaconry of the same diocese, and not long afterwards to the chancellorship. For these preferments he was indebted to the discriminating friends already mentioned, who wished to afford scope for the display of those abilities which they knew him to possess.

In 1785, at the urgent request of Dr John Law, then an Irish bishop, Paley published his first work, entitled the 'Elements of Moral and Political Philosophy.' This production rapidly reached a deserved popularity. The duties of man, both as an individual and a member of society, are delineated in it with all that strength and perspicacity of reasoning which distinguish the maturer effusions of the author's mind; though it is very certain that a work of more enlarged views, and founded upon a more correct estimate of the constitution of man and his place in the world, is now required. Another work followed in 1790, termed 'Horæ Paulinæ; or the Truth of the Scriptural History of St Paul evinced by a Comparison of the Epistles which bear his name with the Acts of the Apostles, and with one another.' This fragmentary disquisition on the evidences of Christianity was so well received, that Paley was induced to compose a complete treatise on the subject, which appeared in 1794, and was entitled, 'A View of the Evidences of Christianity, in Three Parts,' &c. The warmth of favour bestowed on this work was not unmerited. Perhaps no writer ever lived who possessed greater qualifications for such a task than Paley. The constitution of his mind was essentially and diametrically adverse to casuistry and prejudice; masculine and candid, it was able to throw off all prepossession, and to sift the Christian system and writings by the same tests as are usually applied in determining the authenticity of ordinary historical documents. The result was a work which holds its place to this hour as the most 'complete summary of the evidences of Christianity that has ever appeared.'

For this and his previous services to the cause of religion, Paley was presented by the Bishop of Lincoln to the subdeanery of that see, and by the Bishop of Durham to the valuable living of Bishop-Wearmouth in the county of Durham; in order to accept of which preferments, however, he was obliged to resign his prebend and other appointments. Henceforward he divided his residence between Lincoln and Bishop-Wearmouth, spending his summers at the latter, and his winters at the former of those places. In addition to these presentations, which made his circumstances easy and comfortable, Paley was honoured about the same period (the year 1795) with the degree of Doctor of Divinity by the university of Cambridge. But his health began to fail soon after: a circumstance which, in one sense, it is scarcely possible to regret, seeing that his inability to discharge his public duties tended to accelerate the composition, he informs us, of the last of his valuable works, his 'Natural Theology; or Evidences of the Existence and Attributes of the Deity, collected from the Appearances of Nature,' which issued from the press in 1802. The object of the author in this masterly performance was, to trace out, in the order of the visible creation, in the constitution of animal and vegetable bodies, and in all the varied phenomena of the heavens and the earth, the proofs of the existence of a great and intelligent First Cause. Having executed this noble task, he had the satisfaction of thinking that he had formed a complete system of moral and religious knowledge in his works; for 'in these works, such as they are' (says he, referring to his 'Moral and Political

Philosophy,' his 'Evidences of Christianity,' and his 'Natural Theology'), 'the public have now before them the evidences of natural religion, the evidences of revealed religion, and an account of the duties that result from both. It is of small importance that they have been published in an order the very reverse of that in which they ought to be read.'

In 1805, three years after the perfecting of this great labour, Dr Paley died suddenly on the 25th of May, having attained the age of sixty-two. He had been twice married, and left by his first wife four sons and four daughters. In private life, the deportment of this excellent person was plain, manly, and engaging; he was fond of society, possessed a large fund of cheerful humour, and entered readily into all the innocent amusements that enliven social life. Besides the works noticed, several of his sermons were published during his life, and to these a posthumous collection has been added: they are models of clear and vigorous argumentation.

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
CHAPTER I.—STATE OF THE ARGUMENT,	11
II.—STATE OF THE ARGUMENT CONTINUED,	14
III.—APPLICATION OF THE ARGUMENT,	19
IV.—OF THE SUCCESSION OF PLANTS AND ANIMALS,	39
V.—APPLICATION OF THE ARGUMENT CONTINUED,	42
VI.—THE ARGUMENT CUMULATIVE,	53
VII.—OF THE MECHANICAL AND IMMECHANICAL PARTS AND FUNCTIONS OF ANIMALS AND VEGETABLES,	54
VIII.—OF MECHANICAL ARRANGEMENT IN THE HUMAN FRAME,	61
OF THE BONES,	61
OF THE JOINTS,	69
IX.—OF THE MUSCLES,	76
X.—OF THE VESSELS OF ANIMAL BODIES,	88
XI.—OF THE ANIMAL STRUCTURE REGARDED AS A MASS,	109
XII.—COMPARATIVE ANATOMY,	121
XIII.—PECULIAR ORGANISATIONS,	137
XIV.—PROSPECTIVE CONTRIVANCES,	143
XV.—RELATIONS,	147
XVI.—COMPENSATION,	154
XVII.—THE RELATION OF ANIMATED BODIES TO INANIMATE NATURE,	163
XVIII.—INSTINCTS,	167
XIX.—OF INSECTS,	178
XX.—OF PLANTS,	193
XXI.—THE ELEMENTS,	204
XXII.—ASTRONOMY,	216
XXIII.—OF THE PERSONALITY OF THE DEITY,	232
XXIV.—OF THE NATURAL ATTRIBUTES OF THE DEITY,	246
XXV.—THE UNITY OF THE DEITY,	250
XXVI.—THE GOODNESS OF THE DEITY,	252
XXVII.—CONCLUSION,	287

NATURAL THEOLOGY.

CHAPTER I.

STATE OF THE ARGUMENT.

crossing a heath, suppose I pitched my foot against a *stone*, and
ere asked how the stone came to be there, I might possibly
swer that, for anything I knew to the contrary, it had lain
ere for ever; nor would it, perhaps, be very easy to show the
surdity of this answer. But suppose I had found a *watch* upon
e ground, and it should be inquired how the watch happened
be in that place, I should hardly think of the answer which I
d before given—that for anything I knew, the watch might
ve always been there. Yet why should not this answer serve
the watch as well as for the stone? Why is it not as admis-
ıle in the second case as in the first? For this reason, and for
other—namely, that when we come to inspect the watch, we
rceive (what we could not discover in the stone) that its several
rts are framed and put together for a purpose; that is to say,
ıt they are so formed and adjusted as to produce motion, and
ıt motion so regulated as to point out the hour of the day;
ıt, if the different parts had been differently shaped from
ıat they are, of a different size from what they are, or placed
ier any other manner, or in any other order, than that in which
ey are placed, either no motion at all would have been carried
in the machine, or none which would have answered the use
ıt is now served by it. To reckon up a few of the plainest of
ese parts, and of their offices, all tending to one result:—We see
ylindrical box containing a coiled elastic spring, which, by its
deavour to relax itself, turns round the box. We next observe
lexible chain (artificially wrought for the sake of flexure) com-
ınicating the action of the spring from the box to the fusee.
e then find a series of wheels, the teeth of which catch in and
ply to each other, conducting the motion from the fusee to the
lance, and from the balance to the pointer; and at the same

time, by the size and shape of those wheels, so regulating that motion, as to terminate in causing an index, by an equable and measured progression, to pass over a given space in a given time. We take notice that the wheels are made of brass, in order to keep them from rust; the springs of steel, no other metal being so elastic; that over the face of the watch there is placed a glass, a material employed in no other part of the work, but in the room of which, if there had been any other than a transparent substance, the hour could not be seen without opening the case. This mechanism being observed (it requires, indeed, an examination of the instrument, and perhaps some previous knowledge of the subject, to perceive and understand it; but being once, as we have said, observed and understood), the inference, we think, is inevitable, that the watch must have had a maker; that there must have existed, at some time, and at some place or other, an artificer or artificers, who formed it for the purpose which we find it actually to answer—who comprehended its construction, and designed its use.

I. Nor would it, I apprehend, weaken the conclusion, that we had never seen a watch made; that we had never known an artist capable of making one; that we were altogether incapable of executing such a piece of workmanship ourselves, or of understanding in what manner it was performed; all this being no more than what is true of some exquisite remains of ancient art, of some lost arts, and, to the generality of mankind, of the more curious productions of modern manufacture. Does one man in a million know how oval frames are turned? Ignorance of this kind exalts our opinion of the unseen and unknown artist's skill, if he be unseen and unknown, but raises no doubt in our minds of the existence and agency of such an artist, at some former time, and in some place or other. Nor can I perceive that it varies at all the inference, whether the question arise concerning a human agent, or concerning an agent of a different species, or an agent possessing, in some respects, a different nature.

II. Neither, secondly, would it invalidate our conclusion, that the watch sometimes went wrong, or that it seldom went exactly right. The purpose of the machinery, the design, and the designer might be evident, and in the case supposed would be evident, in whatever way we accounted for the irregularity of the movement, or whether we could account for it or not. It is not necessary that a machine be perfect, in order to show with what design it was made; still less necessary, where the only question is—whether it were made with any design at all.

III. Nor, thirdly, would it bring any uncertainty into the argument if there were a few parts of the watch concerning which we could not discover, or had not yet discovered, in what manner they conduced to the general effect; or even some parts

concerning which we could not ascertain whether they conduced to that effect in any manner whatever. For, as to the first branch of the case, if by the loss, or disorder, or decay of the parts in question, the movement of the watch were found, in fact, to be stopped, or disturbed, or retarded, no doubt would remain in our minds as to the utility or intention of these parts, although we should be unable to investigate the manner according to which, or the connection by which, the ultimate effect depended upon their action or assistance; and the more complex the machine is, the more likely is this obscurity to arise. Then, as to the second thing supposed—namely, that there were parts which might be spared, without prejudice to the movement of the watch, and that we had proved this by experiment—these superfluous parts, even if we were completely assured that they were such, would not vacate the reasoning which we had instituted concerning other parts. The indication of contrivance remained, with respect to them, nearly as it was before.

IV. Nor, fourthly, would any man in his senses think the existence of the watch, with its various machinery, accounted for, by being told that it was one out of possible combinations of material forms; that whatever he had found in the place where he found the watch, must have contained some internal configuration or other; and that this configuration might be the structure now exhibited—namely, of the works of a watch, as well as a different structure.

V. Nor, fifthly, would it yield his inquiry more satisfaction to be answered that there existed in things a principle of order, which had disposed the parts of the watch into their present form and situation. He never knew a watch made by the principle of order; nor can he even form to himself an idea of what is meant by a principle of order, distinct from the intelligence of the watchmaker.

VI. Sixthly, he would be surprised to hear that the mechanism of the watch was no proof of contrivance, only a motive to induce the mind to think so.

VII. And not less surprised to be informed that the watch in his hand was nothing more than the result of the laws of *metallic* nature. It is a perversion of language to assign any law as the efficient, operative cause of anything. A law presupposes an agent; this is only the mode according to which an agent proceeds: it implies a power, for it is the order according to which that power acts. Without this agent, without this power, which are both distinct from itself, the *law* does nothing, is nothing. The expression, 'the law of metallic nature,' may sound strange and harsh to a philosophic ear; but it seems quite as justifiable as some others which are more familiar to him, such as, 'the law of vegetable nature,' 'the law of animal nature,' or indeed as 'the

law of nature' in general, when assigned as the cause of phenomena, in exclusion of agency and power, or when it is substituted into the place of these.

VIII. Neither, lastly, would our observer be driven out of his conclusion, or from his confidence in its truth, by being told that he knew nothing at all about the matter. He knows enough for his argument: he knows the utility of the end; he knows the subserviency and adaptation of the means to the end. These points being known, his ignorance of other points, his doubts concerning other points, affect not the certainty of his reasoning. The consciousness of knowing little, need not beget a distrust of that which he does know.

CHAPTER II.

STATE OF THE ARGUMENT CONTINUED.

Suppose, in the next place, that the person who found the watch should, after some time, discover that, in addition to all the properties which he had hitherto observed in it, it possessed the unexpected property of producing, in the course of its movement, another watch like itself (the thing is conceivable); that it contained within it a mechanism, a system of parts, a mould, for instance, or a complex adjustment of lathes, files, and other tools, evidently and separately calculated for this purpose; let us inquire what effect ought such a discovery to have upon his former conclusion.

I. The first effect would be to increase his admiration of the contrivance, and his conviction of the consummate skill of the contriver. Whether he regarded the object of the contrivance, the distinct apparatus, the intricate, yet in many parts intelligible, mechanism by which it was carried on, he would perceive in this new observation nothing but an additional reason for doing what he had already done—for referring the construction of the watch to design, and to supreme art. If that construction *without* this property, or, which is the same thing, before this property had been noticed, proved intention and art to have been employed about it; still more strong would the proof appear when he came to the knowledge of this further property, the crown and perfection of all the rest.

II. He would reflect that though the watch before him were, *in some sense*, the maker of the watch which was fabricated in the course of its movements, yet it was in a very different sense from that in which a carpenter, for instance, is the maker of a chair—

the author of its contrivance, the cause of the relation of its parts to their use. With respect to these, the first watch was no cause at all to the second; in no such sense as this was it the author of the constitution and order either of the parts which the new watch contained, or of the parts by the aid and instrumentality of which it was produced. We might possibly say, but with great latitude of expression, that a stream of water ground corn; but no latitude of expression would allow us to say, no stretch of conjecture could lead us to think, that the stream of water built the mill, though it were too ancient for us to know who the builder was. What the stream of water does in the affair is neither more nor less than this: by the application of an unintelligent impulse to a mechanism previously arranged, arranged independently of it, and arranged by intelligence, an effect is produced—namely, the corn is ground. But the effect results from the arrangement. The force of the stream cannot be said to be the cause or author of the effect, still less of the arrangement. Understanding and plan in the formation of the mill were not the less necessary, for any share which the water has in grinding the corn; yet is this share the same as that which the watch would have contributed to the production of the new watch, upon the supposition assumed in the last section. Therefore,

III. Though it be now no longer probable that the individual watch which our observer had found was made immediately by the hand of an artificer, yet doth not this alteration in anywise affect the inference, that an artificer had been originally employed and concerned in the production. The argument from design remains as it was. Marks of design and contrivance are no more accounted for now than they were before. In the same thing, we may ask for the cause of different properties. We may ask for the cause of the colour of a body, of its hardness, of its heat; and these causes may be all different. We are now asking for the cause of that subserviency to a use, that relation to an end, which we have remarked in the watch before us. No answer is given to this question by telling us that a preceding watch produced it. There cannot be design, without a designer; contrivance, without a contriver; order, without choice; arrangement, without anything capable of arranging; subserviency and relation to a purpose, without that which could intend a purpose; means suitable to an end, and executing their office, in accomplishing that end, without the end ever having been contemplated, or the means accommodated to it. Arrangement, disposition of parts, subserviency of means to an end, relation of instruments to a use, imply the presence of intelligence and mind. No one, therefore, can rationally believe that the insensible, inanimate watch, from which the watch before us issued, was the proper cause of the mechanism we so much admire in it—could be truly said to have

constructed the instrument, disposed its parts, assigned their office, determined their order, action, and mutual dependency, combined their several motions into one result, and that also a result connected with the utilities of other beings. All these properties, therefore, are as much unaccounted for as they were before.

IV. Nor is anything gained by running the difficulty farther back—that is, by supposing the watch before us to have been produced from another watch, that from a former, and so on indefinitely. Our going back ever so far, brings us no nearer to the least degree of satisfaction upon the subject. Contrivance is still unaccounted for. We still want a contriver. A designing mind is neither supplied by this supposition, nor dispensed with. If the difficulty were diminished the farther we went back, by going back indefinitely we might exhaust it. And this is the only case to which this sort of reasoning applies. Where there is a tendency, or, as we increase the number of terms, a continual approach towards a limit, *there*, by supposing the number of terms to be what is called infinite, we may conceive the limit to be attained; but where there is no such tendency, or approach, nothing is effected by lengthening the series. There is no difference as to the point in question (whatever there may be as to many points), between one series and another—between a series which is finite and a series which is infinite. A chain composed of an infinite number of links can no more support itself than a chain composed of a finite number of links. And of this we are assured (though we never *can* have tried the experiment), because, by increasing the number of links from ten, for instance, to a hundred, from a hundred to a thousand, &c. we make not the smallest approach, we observe not the smallest tendency, towards self-support. There is no difference in this respect (yet there may be a great difference in several respects) between a chain of a greater or less length, between one chain and another, between one that is finite and one that is infinite. This very much resembles the case before us. The machine which we are inspecting demonstrates, by its construction, contrivance and design. Contrivance must have had a contriver, design a designer, whether the machine immediately proceeded from another machine or not. That circumstance alters not the case. That other machine may, in like manner, have proceeded from a former machine; nor does that alter the case; contrivance must have had a contriver. That former one from one preceding it; no alteration still; a contriver is still necessary. No tendency is perceived, no approach towards a diminution of this necessity. It is the same with any and every succession of these machines; a succession of ten, of a hundred, of a thousand; with one series as with another; a series which is finite, as with a series which is infinite.

In whatever other respects they may differ, in this they do not. In all equally, contrivance and design are unaccounted for.

The question is not simply, How came the first watch into existence?—which question, it may be pretended, is done away by supposing the series of watches thus produced from one another to have been infinite, and consequently to have had no such *first*, for which it was necessary to provide a cause. This perhaps would have been nearly the state of the question, if nothing had been before us but an unorganised, unmechanised substance, without mark or indication of contrivance. It might be difficult to show that such substance could not have existed from eternity, either in succession (if it were possible, which I think it is not, for unorganised bodies to spring from one another), or by individual perpetuity. But that is not the question now. To suppose it to be so, is to suppose that it made no difference whether we had found a watch or a stone. As it is, the metaphysics of that question have no place; for in the watch which we are examining are seen contrivance, design; an end, a purpose; means for the end, adaptation to the purpose. And the question which irresistibly presses upon our thoughts is, Whence this contrivance and design? The thing required is the intending mind, the adapting hand, the intelligence by which that hand was directed. This question, this demand, is not shaken off by increasing a number or succession of substances destitute of these properties; nor the more, by increasing that number to infinity. If it be said that, upon the supposition of one watch being produced from another in the course of that other's movements, and by means of the mechanism within it, we have a cause for the watch in my hand—namely, the watch from which it proceeded—I deny, that for the design, the contrivance, the suitableness of means to an end, the adaptation of instruments to a use (all which we discover in the watch), we have any cause whatever. It is in vain, therefore, to assign a series of such causes, or to allege that a series may be carried back to infinity; for I do not admit that we have yet any cause at all for the phenomena, still less any series of causes either finite or infinite. Here is contrivance, but no contriver; proofs of design, but no designer.

V. Our observer would further also reflect, that the maker of the watch before him was, in truth and reality, the maker of every watch produced from it; there being no difference (except that the latter manifests a more exquisite skill) between the making of another watch with his own hands, by the mediation of files, lathes, chisels, &c. and the disposing, fixing, and inserting of these instruments, or of others equivalent to them, in the body of the watch already made, in such a manner as to form a new watch in the course of the movements which he had given to the old one. It is only working by one set of tools instead of another.

The conclusion which the *first* examination of the watch—of its works, construction, and movement—suggested, was, that it must have had, for the cause and author of that construction, an artificer who understood its mechanism and designed its use. This conclusion is invincible. A *second* examination presents us with a new discovery. The watch is found, in the course of its movement, to produce another watch similar to itself; and not only so, but we perceive in it a system or organisation separately calculated for that purpose. What effect would this discovery have, or ought it to have, upon our former inference? What, as hath already been said, but to increase beyond measure our admiration of the skill which had been employed in the formation of such a machine? Or shall it, instead of this, all at once turn us round to an opposite conclusion—namely, that no art or skill whatever has been concerned in the business, although all other evidences of art and skill remain as they were, and this last and supreme piece of art be now added to the rest? Can this be maintained without absurdity? Yet this is atheism.*

* [Any attempt at additional illustration would only have tended to injure the unity and completeness of the argument stated in the two preceding chapters. It has therefore been permitted to remain precisely as it proceeded from the pen of our author, of whose acute reasoning powers it will be an enduring memorial. Exceptions have been taken more than once against it, it is true, on the ground of illogical reasoning, though with very little justice, as it appears to us. In order to give the reader some idea of the general character of these exceptions, we shall examine one of them, which bears at least a weighty and imposing front. 'The leading argument of Paley,' says an able writer in the Quarterly Review, 'involves a *petitio principii* (or begging of the question). When he says "there cannot be design without a designer, contrivance without a contriver," he takes for granted that which he should prove. The atheist affirms that in the series of events which we observe in nature, there is neither design nor contrivance; and this affirmation cannot be disproved by the contrary affirmation of the theist, that design or contrivance exist. It is self-evident that there cannot be contrivance without a contriver; design without a designer. But the question at issue between the atheist and the theist is this—Is there contrivance, is there design?'

Throughout the two first chapters, in which this imputed begging of the question occurs, Paley, as the reader must have observed, never once alludes to the phenomena of the universe, either as exhibiting design or the reverse. The subject with which he there deals is the *watch*, and this he views in every possible light, to prove from its structure and mechanism the existence in it of design and contrivance. Having finished his proof, he then proceeds with, what his critic acknowledges to be, the just inference, that contrivance implies a contriver, design a designer. Is there anything resembling a *petitio principii* here? The premises—that is to say, the existence of contrivance in the *watch* (for to it alone the passage refers)—are first laid down, and the inference of the existence of a contriver is then drawn. But it may be said that the argument relative to the watch is merely typical of the great purpose of the work. This is undeniable, yet it gives no colour to the charge in question of illogical reasoning. In the simile of the watch he presents a miniature sketch of his grand object: he shows in the watch the presence of design, and infers the existence of a designer; and he then devotes his whole work to the purpose of proving that design is apparent in the system of the universe, in a far greater degree than it is exhibited in the watch or any work of art; consequently, that a great Designing Intelligence exists. From this examination of one of the chief objections against our author's arguments, the reader may judge of the flimsy nature of others.]

CHAPTER III.

APPLICATION OF THE ARGUMENT.

This is atheism: for every indication of contrivance, every manifestation of design, which existed in the watch, exists in the works of nature; with the difference, on the side of nature, of being greater and more, and that in a degree which exceeds all computation. I mean that the contrivances of nature surpass the contrivances of art in the complexity, subtlety, and curiosity of the mechanism; and still more, if possible, do they go beyond them in number and variety; yet, in a multitude of cases, are not less evidently mechanical, not less evidently contrivances, not less evidently accommodated to their end, or suited to their office, than are the most perfect productions of human ingenuity.

[The evidences of design in the structure of the eye are so striking, that it can never fail to be selected as one of the strongest proofs which the animal frame presents of the workmanship of an all-wise Creator. Observe, in the first place, the secure and commanding position in the human body which the organ holds, and which enables it, from a vantage-ground, as it were, to survey the external world, and fulfil all the purposes of vision. In no other position could it have possessed the same utility. Had it been placed in the back of the head, for example, the feet would have been without a guide, and the usefulness of the hands would have been fatally impaired. Similar disadvantages would have attended every situation it could have been placed in, excepting that which it holds. And yet, had chance been the creative power, or any other agency than a wise and provident one, it is impossible to comprehend why the position of the eye should have been that which alone is adapted to its objects.

If we examine next its several parts, we shall find that in one and all of them there is the same wonderful adjustment to their purpose, and to one another. Its spherical form is that which permits of the greatest freedom of motion, and enables it to receive most readily the impressions of external objects. Membranes—thick and impervious to rays of light in some places, and in others, where the light requires to penetrate, delicate and transparent—protect it from injury, and preserve it in shape. The transparent portion of the eye's coverings bears only a small proportion to the impervious parts, and is, in truth, merely a small opening, analogous to that of a camera obscura, which is the true character of the eye.

The proper membranes of the eye are three in number—the

sclerotic, the cornea, and the choroid coats. The sclerotic, or outer covering, is of strong texture, and envelops the whole ball, excepting the cornea in front. The cornea is the transparent circular membrane bounded by the white of the eye, through which is seen the coloured part, termed the iris and the pupil. The choroid coat lines the interior of the sclerotic membrane, from the back part of the ball as far forward as the iris, which is a circular ring, hanging vertically into the aqueous humour, and perforated in the centre by a small hole, termed the pupil. The iris has a contractile power, by which the pupil is enlarged or diminished in size; a provision, as will afterwards be explained, of the greatest utility in accommodating the intensity of light to the sensibility of the retina. Inside of the choroid coat is the *pigmentum nigrum*, a thin stratum of dark-coloured matter, which has the duty of absorbing irregular rays of light, entering the eye from numerous reflecting points, and which might otherwise obstruct distinct vision.

These membranes enclose the humours or lenses of the eye, which are three in number—the aqueous, the crystalline, and the vitreous. The aqueous humour is the anterior one, and is divided by the pendent iris into two chambers, having the pupil as a communication. Behind the second aqueous chamber lies the crystalline lens, a double convex body, bedded posteriorly in the third or vitreous humour. The aqueous and crystalline humours are of small size compared with the vitreous, which constitutes three-fourths of the whole substance of the ball. For a purpose essential to vision, which will be more fully noticed afterwards, the humours of the eye differ from one another in consistence: the aqueous, as its name implies, being thin as water, the crystalline of much denser consistence, and the vitreous resembling a jelly.

Behind and around the vitreous humour, and inside of the black pigment, is expanded the retina, the object for which all the rest of the apparatus is constructed. By a passage in the back part of the orbit, the optic nerve issues from the brain, penetrates the coverings of the eye, and is spread out in the form of a thin, delicate membrane, termed the retina, prepared to receive the impressions of external objects, and to convey them to the seat of perception—the brain.

These impressions are received by the retina in the following manner:—The humours of the eye are composed of denser media than the atmospheric air, and, in accordance with a law of optics, a ray of light passing into the eye is bent from its rectilineal course, or, in optical language, refracted. If the anterior surface of the eye were a plane, the rays of light entering the aqueous humour would be refracted, but the refraction, it is evident, would be all in one parallel direction, without the slightest approach to

a focal concentration. The matter, however, is more wisely ordered. By the convexity of the cornea, and the aqueous humour within it, the rays are made to converge towards a common centre. This centre or focus is, however, a distant one, which is an inconvenience requiring another provision to remedy it. This is the subjecting of the rays to a passage through a double convex lens, which, it will be remembered, is the form of the crystalline humour. After penetrating the aqueous humour, the converging rays pass through the pupil, and enter the lens, which being of a denser consistence, and of the requisite form for the purpose, brings them, with the aid of the vitreous humour, to a focus. When brought to a focus on the retina, the rays of light place there an impression of the object or objects from which they are reflected into the eye, and this impression the nerve conveys to the brain.

Muscles are attached to the ball of the eye, which enable it to move easily, and to bring any object into the axis of vision, without the inconvenient shifting of the head and body which would otherwise be necessary. Four of these muscles are termed *straight*, and two of them *oblique*, from the directions in which their respective contractions incline the eyeball. They are small cords of banded fibres, arising in the osseous bottom of the orbit, and inserted into the sclerotic covering. One of the oblique muscles is remarkable for the simple and beautiful mechanism by which it performs its action. After passing forward from its origin in the bone, its tendon passes through a small cartilaginous hole in the roof of the orbit, and turns back to be inserted into the sclerotic membrane. By this pulley-like construction, as distinctly mechanical as any ever used for the application of force, the muscle is made to act in a direction exactly the reverse of that of its fibres.

Many nice adjustments of the eye to the purposes of perfect vision, and to the laws which regulate the transmission of light, have not yet been noticed; but these will fall to be explained naturally in the course of the application of the argument, which, after this cursory description of the eye, may be better understood.]

I know no better method of introducing so large a subject than that of comparing a single thing with a single thing; an eye, for example, with a telescope. As far as the examination of the instrument goes, there is precisely the same proof that the eye was made for vision, as there is that the telescope was made for assisting it. They are made upon the same principles; both being adjusted to the laws by which the transmission and refraction of rays of light are regulated. I speak not of the origin of the laws themselves; but such laws being fixed, the construction in both cases is adapted to them. For instance, these laws require, in

order to produce the same effect, that the rays of light, in passing from water into the eye, should be refracted by a more convex surface than when it passes out of air into the eye. Accordingly, we find that the eye of a fish, in that part of it called the crystalline lens, is much rounder than the eye of terrestrial animals. What plainer manifestation of design can there be than this difference? What could a mathematical instrument-maker have done more to show his knowledge of his principle, his application of that knowledge, his suiting of his means to his end; I will not say to display the compass or excellence of his skill and art, for in these all comparison is indecorous, but to testify counsel, choice, consideration, purpose?

To some it may appear a difference sufficient to destroy all similitude between the eye and the telescope—that the one is a perceiving organ, the other an unperceiving instrument. The fact is, that they are both instruments. And as to the mechanism, at least as to mechanism being employed, and even as to the kind of it, this circumstance varies not the analogy at all. For observe what the constitution of the eye is. It is necessary, in order to produce distinct vision, that an image or picture of the object be formed at the bottom of the eye. Whence this necessity arises, or how the picture is connected with the sensation, or contributes to it, it may be difficult, nay, we will confess, if you please, impossible for us to search out. But the present question is not concerned in the inquiry. It may be true that in this and in other instances we trace mechanical contrivance a certain way; and that then we come to something which is not mechanical, or which is inscrutable. But this affects not the certainty of our investigation, as far as we have gone. The difference between an animal and an automatic statue consists in this—that in the animal we trace the mechanism to a certain point, and then we are stopped; either the mechanism becoming too subtile for our discernment, or something else beside the known laws of mechanism taking place: whereas in the automaton, for the comparatively few motions of which it is capable, we trace the mechanism throughout. But up to the limit, the reasoning is as clear and certain in the one case as in the other. In the example before us, it is a matter of certainty, because it is a matter which experience and observation demonstrate, that the formation of an image at the bottom of the eye is necessary to perfect vision. The image itself can be shown.* Whatever affects the distinct-

* [That such a picture is formed on the retina, may be easily proved by removing from the fresh eye of an ox all the posterior coverings, leaving only the thin and delicate retina. If it be then placed, with the anterior part outwards, in an aperture in the window-shutter of a darkened room, a small but perfect image of the external scene will be seen depicted on the retina. This image is found to be always *inverted*, a circumstance of which a very satisfactory explanation has been given. If the retina were the precise point at which the con-

ness of the image, affects the distinctness of the vision. The formation, then, of such an image being necessary (no matter how) to the sense of sight, and to the exercise of that sense, the apparatus by which it is formed is constructed and put together not only with infinitely more art, but upon the self-same principles of art as in the telescope or the camera obscura. The perception arising from the image may be laid out of the question; for the production of the image, these are instruments of the same kind. The end is the same; the means are the same. The purpose in both is alike; the contrivance for accomplishing that purpose is in both alike. The lenses of the telescope, and the humours of the eye, bear a complete resemblance to one another in their figure, their position, and in their power over the rays of light—to wit, in bringing each pencil to a point at the right distance from the lens; namely, in the eye, at the exact place where the membrane is spread to receive it. How is it possible, under circumstances of such close affinity, and under the operation of equal evidence, to exclude contrivance from the one, yet to acknowledge the proof of contrivance having been employed, as the plainest and clearest of all propositions, in the other?

The resemblance between the two cases is still more accurate, and obtains in more points than we have yet represented, or than we are, on the first view of the subject, aware of. In dioptric telescopes there is an imperfection of this nature. Pencils of light, in passing through glass lenses, are separated into different colours, thereby tinging the object, especially the edges of it, as if it were viewed through a prism.* To correct this inconvenience had been long a desideratum in the art. At last it came into the mind of a sagacious optician to inquire how this matter was managed in the eye, in which there was exactly the same difficulty to contend with as in the telescope. His observation taught

course of the rays of light takes place, there would be no reason for this inversion of the image; but if we suppose the retina to be but one line or hairbreadth posterior to the focal point, a cause suggests itself at once; because, in passing the focus, the rays of light cross each other; those which were superior on entering the eye become the inferior, and *vice versa;* consequently an image conveyed by these rays would, at any point after their crossing, necessarily be turned upside down. Since the converging rays of light then meet in the crystalline lens, their focal point, it is obvious that the inversion alluded to must of necessity take place. The reason why an impression of that inversion is not communicated to the mind, as one might anticipate, has been the subject of much discussion, but none of the explanations yet tendered can be said to be satisfactory.]

* [This defect in lenses has been termed, in optical language, the chromatic aberration, from *chroma*, a Greek word signifying colour. It is owing to the different refrangible powers of the seven coloured rays of which white light is composed; and every simple lens, it is evident, must be more or less affected by this defect. It is remedied in the eye, as the text points out, by the exquisite adjustment of lenses of different refracting powers; so that, for the variation in consistence and form of the three humours, we now behold a distinct and wonderful purpose.]

him that in the eye the evil was cured by combining lenses composed of different substances—that is, of substances which possessed different refracting powers. Our artist borrowed thence his hint, and produced a correction of the defect by imitating, in glasses made from different materials, the effects of the different humours through which the rays of light pass before they reach the bottom of the eye. Could this be in the eye without purpose, which suggested to the optician the only effectual means of attaining that purpose?

But further, there are other points, not so much perhaps of strict resemblance between the two, as of superiority of the eye over the telescope; yet of a superiority which, being founded in the laws that regulate both, may furnish topics of fair and just comparison. Two things were wanted to the eye, which were not wanted (at least in the same degree) to the telescope: and these were, the adaptation of the organ, first, to different degrees of light; and secondly, to the vast diversity of distance at which objects are viewed by the naked eye—namely, from a few inches to as many miles. These difficulties present not themselves to the maker of the telescope. He wants all the light he can get; and he never directs his instrument to objects near at hand. In the eye, both these cases were to be provided for; and for the purpose of providing for them, a subtile and appropriate mechanism is introduced:—

I. In order to exclude excess of light, when it is excessive, and to render objects visible under obscurer degrees of it, when no more can be had, the hole or aperture in the eye through which the light enters is so formed as to contract or dilate itself for the purpose of admitting a greater or less number of rays at the same time. The chamber of the eye is a camera obscura, which, when the light is too small, can enlarge its opening; when too strong, can again contract it; and that without any other assistance than that of its own exquisite machinery. It is further, also, in the human subject, to be observed, that this hole in the eye, which we call the pupil, under all its different dimensions, retains its exact circular shape. This is a structure extremely artificial. Let an artist only try to execute the same; he will find that his threads and strings must be disposed with great consideration and contrivance, to make a circle which shall continually change its diameter, yet preserve its form. This is done in the eye by an application of fibres—that is, of strings, similar in their position and action to what an artist would and must employ if he had the same piece of workmanship to perform.

II. The second difficulty which has been stated was the suiting of the same organ to the perception of objects that lie near at hand—within a few inches, we will suppose, of the eye—and of objects which are placed at a considerable distance from it—that,

for example, of as many furlongs (I speak in both cases of the distance at which distinct vision can be exercised). Now this, according to the principles of optics—that is, according to the laws by which the transmission of light is regulated (and these laws are fixed)—could not be done without the organ itself undergoing an alteration, and receiving an adjustment that might correspond with the exigency of the case; that is to say, with the different inclination to one another under which the rays of light reached it. Rays issuing from points placed at a small distance from the eye, and which consequently must enter the eye in a spreading or diverging order, cannot, by the same optical instrument in the same state, be brought to a point—that is, be made to form an image, in the same place with rays proceeding from objects situated at a much greater distance, and which rays arrive at the eye in directions nearly (and physically speaking) parallel. It requires a rounder lens to do it. The point of concourse behind the lens must fall critically upon the retina, or the vision is confused; yet, other things remaining the same, this point, by the immutable properties of light, is carried farther back when the rays proceed from a near object than when they are sent from one that is remote. A person who was using an optical instrument, would manage this matter by changing, as the occasion required, his lens or his telescope, or by adjusting the distance of his glasses with his hand or his screw; but how is it to be managed in the eye? What the alteration was, or in what part of the eye it took place, or by what means it was effected (for if the known laws which govern the refraction of light be maintained, some alteration in the state of the organ there must be), had long formed a subject of inquiry and conjecture. The change, though sufficient for the purpose, is so minute, as to elude ordinary observation. Some very late discoveries, deduced from a laborious and most accurate inspection of the structure and operation of the organ, seem at length to have ascertained the mechanical alteration which the parts of the eye undergo. It is found that, by the action of certain muscles, called the straight muscles, and which action is the most advantageous that could be imagined for the purpose—it is found, I say, that whenever the eye is directed to a near object, three changes are produced in it at the same time, all severally contributing to the adjustment required. The cornea, or outermost coat of the eye, is rendered more round and prominent; the crystalline lens underneath is pushed forward; and the axis of vision, as the depth of the eye is called, is elongated.*

* [It is now understood that little or no alteration takes place in the convexity of the cornea, but that the crystalline lens is rendered more spherical, and so increased in refracting power. Dr Young, whose investigations on the subject are those on which most reliance is placed, imagines that the distance between the lens and the retina may be increased as the text mentions. In

These changes in the eye vary its power over the rays of light in such a manner and degree as to produce exactly the effect which is wanted—namely, the formation of an image *upon the retina*, whether the rays come to the eye in a state of divergency, which is the case when the object is near to the eye, or come parallel to one another, which is the case when the object is placed at a distance. Can anything be more decisive of contrivance than this? The most secret laws of optics must have been known to the author of a structure endowed with such a capacity of change. It is as though an optician, when he had a nearer object to view, should *rectify* his instrument by putting in another glass, at the same time drawing out also his tube to a different length.

[In constructing telescopes of great power, the inequality in refraction of rays of light from spherical surfaces has caused great difficulties, because the middle rays of a parallel pencil of rays converge to a more distant focus than those remote from the centre. In an instrument so small as the human eye, this evil cannot exist in any great degree; yet were it left unprovided against, indistinctness of vision to a certain extent would be the consequence. By making the lens to consist of concentric layers, which are densest at the centre, a greater refracting power is given to that part, and the difficulty is simply, yet perfectly overcome, in a way which it is almost impossible for human art to imitate.]

Observe a new-born child first lifting up its eyelids. What does the opening of the curtain discover? The anterior part of two pellucid globes, which, when they come to be examined, are found to be constructed upon strict optical principles—the self-same principles upon which we ourselves construct optical instruments. We find them perfect for the purpose of forming an image by refraction; composed of parts executing different offices; one part having fulfilled its office upon the pencil of light, delivering it over to the action of another part; that to a third, and so onward; the progressive action depending for its success upon the nicest and minutest adjustment of the parts concerned; yet these parts so in fact adjusted, as to produce, not by a simple action or effect, but by a combination of actions and effects, the result which is ultimately wanted. And forasmuch as this organ would have to operate under different circumstances, with strong degrees of light and with weak degrees, upon near objects and upon remote ones, and these differences demanded, according to the laws by which the transmission of light is regulated, a corresponding diversity of structure—that the aperture, for example, through which the light passes, should be larger or less, the lenses

whichever of these ways the alteration in the refracting power is chiefly accomplished, the utility of the provision is the same, and the argument in the text is equally applicable to all.]

rounder or flatter, or that their distance from the tablet upon which the picture is delineated should be shortened or lengthened; this, I say, being the case, and the difficulty to which the eye was to be adapted, we find its several parts capable of being occasionally changed, and a most artificial apparatus provided to produce that change. This is far beyond the common regulator of a watch, which requires the touch of a foreign hand to set it; but it is not altogether unlike Harrison's contrivance for making a watch regulate itself, by inserting within it a machinery, which, by the artful use of the different expansion of metals, preserves the equability of the motion under all the various temperatures of heat and cold in which the instrument may happen to be placed. The ingenuity of this last contrivance has been justly praised. Shall, therefore, a structure which differs from it chiefly by surpassing it, be accounted no contrivance at all?—or, if it be a contrivance, that it is without a contriver?

But this, though much, is not the whole: by different species of animals the faculty we are describing is possessed in degrees suited to the different range of vision which their mode of life and of procuring their food requires. *Birds*, for instance, in general procure their food by means of their beak; and the distance between the eye and the point of the beak being small, it becomes necessary that they should have the power of seeing very near objects distinctly. On the other hand, from being often elevated much above the ground, living in air, and moving through it with great velocity, they require, for their safety, as well as for assisting them in descrying their prey, a power of seeing at a great distance—a power of which, in birds of rapine, surprising examples are given. The fact accordingly is, that two peculiarities are found in the eyes of birds, both tending to *facilitate* the change upon which the adjustment of the eye to different distances depends. The one is a bony, yet, in most species, a flexible rim or hoop, surrounding the broadest part of the eye; which, confining the action of the muscles to that part, increases the effect of their lateral pressure upon the orb, by which pressure its axis is elongated for the purpose of looking at very near objects. The other is an additional muscle, called the *marsupium*, to draw, on occasion, the crystalline lens *back*, and to fit the same eye for the viewing of very distant objects. By these means the eyes of birds can pass from one extreme to another of their scale of adjustment, with more ease and readiness than the eyes of other animals.*

* [Since our author's time, it has been discovered that the osseous ring alluded to in the text is composed of nearly twenty layers or plates of bone, which overlap one another, like slates on a house-roof; a structure much better adapted than a single bone to resist fracture and to defend the eye. In the construction of the bird's eye, purposes of the most opposite kind are answered by contrivances equally beautiful and simple. Some of these are pointed out distinctly and

The eyes of *fishes* also, compared with those of terrestrial animals, exhibit certain distinctions of structure adapted to their state and element. We have already observed upon the figure of the crystalline lens compensating by its roundness the density of the medium through which their light passes; to which we have to add, that the eyes of fish, in their natural and indolent state, appear to be adjusted to near objects, in this respect differing from the human eye, as well as those of quadrupeds and birds. The ordinary shape of the fish's eye being in a much higher degree convex than that of land-animals, a corresponding difference attends its muscular conformation—namely, that it is throughout calculated for *flattening* the eye. The *iris* also in the eyes of fish does not admit of contraction. This is a great difference, of which the probable reason is, that the diminished light in water is never too strong for the retina. In the *eel*, which has to work its head through sand and gravel, the roughest and harshest substances, there is placed before the eye, and at some distance from it, a transparent, horny, convex case or covering, which, without obstructing the sight, defends the organ. To such an animal, could anything be more wanted, or more useful?

[Were a skilful optician to consider *a priori* what form of the pupil would be best suited to the wants of those animals which procure their sustenance confined to the surface of the ground, and which necessarily require a wide extent of horizontal vision, he would at once determine that an elliptical pupil, with the transverse diameter at right angles to the nose, would be the most appropriate and useful. And so do we find it in the lower class of quadrupeds. It was mentioned formerly, that a portion of the back part of the eye was dark-coloured, for the purpose of absorbing the over-abundance of light that might be thrown into the eye. In some animals, the same quarter of the eye is found to be white and glistening. What habits should the creatures have whose

correctly by our author, while, on other points, later investigations have not confirmed his statements. The *marsupium*, to which he assigns the character of a muscle, is entirely membranous, and appears to have no contractile power whatever. The task of altering the position of the crystalline lens cannot therefore be attributed to the marsupium; and, in truth, no definite purpose has yet been discovered for this membrane. When the eye of the bird is to be adapted to near objects, the muscles of the ball press the circle of bony plates against it on all sides, and thus move the aqueous humours forward, increasing the convexity of the cornea, while at the same time the crystalline lens is forced into a more spherical shape. The refracting power is thus greatly increased, and the bird, in its swiftest career, is enabled to dart on the minutest insect with unfailing aim. When the pressure of the bony ring is withdrawn, the eye becomes flattened, the lens resumes its form, and the power of seeing objects at a distance becomes as remarkable as the opposite faculty had been. In addition to the necessity for varying refracting powers, to suit different distances, the great variations of density in the medium in which birds move would alone require some provision of the same kind. The eagle in his lofty eyry receives light through a much rarer medium than he does when tearing his prey on the low-lying plains.]

eyes present this deviation from the common structure? They are the night-prowlers, those who seek their food in the dark, the ferrets and the owls, to whom the faintest ray of light is useful.]

Thus, in comparing the eyes of different kinds of animals, we see, in their resemblances and distinctions, one general plan laid down, and that plan varied with the varying exigencies to which it is to be applied.

There is one property, however, common, I believe, to all eyes, at least to all which have been examined;* namely, that the optic nerve enters the bottom of the eye, not in the centre or middle, but a little on one side—not in the point where the axis of the eye meets the retina, but between that point and the nose. The difference which this makes is, that no part of an object is unperceived by both eyes at the same time.

In considering vision as achieved by the means of an image formed at the bottom of the eye, we can never reflect without wonder upon the smallness, yet correctness, of the picture, the subtility of the touch, the fineness of the lines. A landscape of five or six square leagues is brought into a space of half an inch diameter; yet the multitude of objects which it contains are all preserved—are all discriminated in their magnitudes, positions, figures, colours. The prospect from Hampstead Hill is compressed into the compass of a sixpence, yet circumstantially represented. A stage-coach, travelling at its ordinary speed for half an hour, passes, in the eye, only over one-twelfth of an inch, yet is this change of place in the image distinctly perceived throughout its whole progress; for it is only by means of that perception that the motion of the coach itself is made sensible to the eye. If anything can abate our admiration of the smallness of the visual tablet compared with the extent of vision, it is a reflection which the view of nature leads us every hour to make—namely, that in the hands of the Creator great and little are nothing.

Sturmius held that the examination of the eye was a cure for atheism. Besides that conformity to optical principles which its internal constitution displays, and which alone amounts to a manifestation of intelligence having been exerted in the structure; besides this, which forms, no doubt, the leading character of the organ, there is to be seen, in everything belonging to it and about it, an extraordinary degree of care, an anxiety for its preserva-

* The eye of the seal or sea-calf, I understand, is an exception, Mem. Acad. Paris, 1701, p. 123. [The seal being amphibious, has remarkable provisions for accommodating its eye equally to air and water. The anterior portion of the sclerotic membrane is strong, the middle part thin and weak, while the posterior third again is thick and strong. Between the anterior and posterior segments there pass layers of muscular fibres, which, by their contraction, effect a material change in the depth of the eye, and consequently in its refracting powers. If the sclerotic coat were equally strong and thick throughout its whole extent, as in most animals, this change could not take place.]

tion, due, if we may so speak, to its value and its tenderness. It is lodged in a strong, deep, bony socket, composed by the junction of seven different bones,* hollowed out at their edges. In some few species, as that of the coatimondi,† the orbit is not bony throughout; but whenever this is the case, the upper, which is the deficient part, is supplied by a cartilaginous ligament; a substitution which shows the same care.‡ Within this socket it is imbedded in fat, of all animal substances the best adapted both to its repose and motion. It is sheltered by the eyebrows, an arch of hair, which, like a thatched penthouse, prevents the sweat and moisture of the forehead from running down into it.

But it is still better protected by its *lid*. Of the superficial parts of the animal frame, I know none which, in its office and structure, is more deserving of attention than the eyelid. It defends the eye; it wipes it; it closes it in sleep. Are there, in any work of art whatever, purposes more evident than those which this organ fulfils?—or an apparatus for executing those purposes more intelligible, more appropriate, or more mechanical? If it be overlooked by the observer of nature, it can only be because it is obvious and familiar. This is a tendency to be guarded against. We pass by the plainest instances, whilst we are exploring those which are rare and curious; by which conduct of the understanding we sometimes neglect the strongest observations, being taken up with others which, though more recondite and scientific, are, as solid arguments, entitled to much less consideration.

In order to keep the eye moist and clean (which qualities are necessary to its brightness and its use), a wash is constantly supplied by a secretion for the purpose; and the superfluous brine is conveyed to the nose through a perforation in the bone as large as a goose quill. [The lachrymal glands, which prepare the tears, are lodged in a hollow near the outer and upper angle of the orbit, and their secretion is spread over the eye by that rapid shutting and reopening of the lids which goes on continually, and, in general, without either our will or our consciousness. In the very closing of the eyelids we find a beautiful example of adjustment; the shutting commences at the outer angle of the lids, and continues regularly inwards, thus wafting the tears gently and equally from the point where they are secreted, over the surface of the ball, and at the same time propelling them onwards to the excretory canal in the inner corner of the orbit. To facilitate this passage, the brim of the lids is slightly bevelled, so

* Heister, sect. 89. † Mem. R. Ac. Paris, p. 117.

‡ [In some of the larger predatory animals, the orbit is ligamentous on the outer side. This gives to the temporal muscle, which lies over the ligament, the power of compressing the orbit and forcing the eye to protrude, so that the range of vision of the animal is increased when its muscles are strung in the *heat of* pursuit.]

that when they are brought together, a duct is formed between them—a provision, it is evident, which must be particularly useful during the season of sleep.] When once the fluid has entered the nose, it spreads itself upon the inside of the nostril, and is evaporated by the current of warm air which, in the course of respiration, is continually passing over it. Can any pipe or outlet for carrying off the waste liquor from a dye-house or a distillery be more mechanical than this is? It is easily perceived that the eye must want moisture, but could the want of the eye generate the gland which produces the tear, or bore the hole by which it is discharged—a hole through a bone?

[The mechanism for cleaning and protecting the eye, and for giving ease and freedom to its motions, might now, one would think, be complete; but still there is a further provision, of a nature not less curious and perfect than those we have noticed. From mysterious sympathy with the emotions of the mind, and from other exciting causes, the tears are apt to be secreted in irregular quantities, and consequently to overflow the eyelids. This is the result where the emotion or irritation is violent; but where the secretion is not much greater than usual, the tears are prevented from crossing the brink of the eyelids by small glands placed there for the purpose, which secrete an oily fluid. With oil, according to a well-known chemical law, no liquid of an aqueous character will mix; and thus is a barrier raised up against the inconvenient passage of the tears.]

It is observable that this provision [lachrymal apparatus] is not found in fish—the element in which they live supplying a constant lotion to the eye. [The aqueous humour also, which exists more or less in the eyes of all land animals, is almost entirely wanting in the whole fish tribe; for the very obvious reason, that its presence would add no refracting power to eyes which receive light through a medium of nearly equal density. The small quantity of aqueous humour which is found in the eyes of some orders of fishes, appears to be merely one of those rudimental similarities of structure which pervade the whole chain of animated beings. In the eyes of those reptiles which live partly on land, we find the aqueous chambers restored. The whole structure of the organs of sight in this class holds an intermediate place between the eyes of land and water tribes. In what light can we view this, but as a designed and benevolent adaptation of structure to wants and purposes?]

It were, however, injustice to dismiss the eye as a piece of mechanism, without noticing that most exquisite of all contrivances, the *nictitating membrane*, which is found in the eyes of birds and of many quadrupeds. Its use is to sweep the eye, which it does in an instant, to spread over it the lachrymal humour; to defend it also from sudden injuries; yet not totally, when drawn upon the

pupil, to shut out the light. The commodiousness with which it lies folded up in the upper corner of the eye, ready for use and action, and the quickness with which it executes its purpose, are properties known and obvious to every observer: but what is equally admirable, though not quite so obvious, is the combination of two kinds of substance, muscular and elastic, and of two different kinds of action, by which the motion of this membrane is performed. It is not, as in ordinary cases, by the action of two antagonist muscles, one pulling forward, and the other backward, that a reciprocal change is effected; but it is thus: The membrane itself is an elastic substance, capable of being drawn out by force like a piece of elastic gum, and by its own elasticity returning, when the force is removed, to its former position. Such being its nature, in order to fit it for its office, it is connected by a tendon or thread with a muscle in the back part of the eye; this tendon or thread, though strong, is so fine, as not to obstruct the sight even when it passes across it; and the muscle itself, being placed in the *back* part of the eye, derives from its situation the advantage not only of being secure, but of being out of the way, which it would hardly have been in any position that could be assigned to it in the anterior part of the orb, where its function lies. When the muscle behind the eye contracts, the membrane, by means of the communicating thread, is instantly drawn over the fore part of it. When the muscular contraction (which is a positive, and, most probably, a voluntary effort) ceases to be exerted, the elasticity alone of the membrane brings it back again to its position.* Does not this, if anything can do it, bespeak an artist master of his work, acquainted with his materials? 'Of a thousand other things,' says the French academicians, 'we perceive not the contrivance, because we understand them only by the effects, of which we know not the causes: but we here treat of a machine, all the parts whereof are visible; and which need only be looked upon to discover the reasons of its motion and action.'†

In the configuration of the muscle which, though placed behind the eye, draws the nictitating membrane over the eye, there is what the authors just now quoted deservedly call a marvellous mechanism. I suppose this structure to be found in other animals; but in the memoirs from which this account is taken, it is anatomically demonstrated only in the cassowary. The muscle is *passed through a loop formed by another muscle*, and is there in-

* Phil. Trans. 1796.—[When engaged in sweeping the tears over the eye, it in all probability acts involuntarily, seeing that the analogous structure in the human eye—the eyelid—performs the same duty without our consciousness. The *membrana nictitans* has been discovered, since our author's time, to exist more or less in the visual organs of the whole feathered race.]

† Memoirs for a Natural History of Animals, by the Royal Academy of Sciences at Paris, done into English by order of the Royal Society, 1701, page 249.

flected, as if it were round a pulley. This is a peculiarity; and observe the advantage of it. A single muscle with a straight tendon, which is the common muscular form, would have been sufficient, if it had had power to draw far enough. But the contraction necessary to draw the membrane over the whole eye required a longer muscle than could lie straight at the bottom of the eye. Therefore, in order to have a greater length in a less compass, the chord of the main muscle makes an angle. This, so far, answers the end; but, still farther, it makes an angle, not round a fixed pivot, but round a loop formed by another muscle; which second muscle, whenever it contracts, of course twitches the first muscle at the point of inflection, and thereby assists the action designed by both.

One question may possibly have dwelt in the reader's mind during the perusal of these observations—namely, Why should not the Deity have given to the animal the faculty of vision *at once?* Why this circuitous perception; the ministry of so many means; an element provided for the purpose; reflected from opaque substances, refracted through transparent ones; and both according to precise laws; then, a complex organ, an intricate and artificial apparatus, in order, by the operation of this element, and in conformity with the restrictions of these laws, to produce an image upon a membrane communicating with the brain? Wherefore all this? Why make the difficulty in order to surmount it? If to perceive objects by some other mode than that of touch, or objects which lay out of the reach of that sense, were the thing proposed, could not a simple volition of the Creator have communicated the capacity? Why resort to contrivance where power is omnipotent? Contrivance, by its very definition and nature, is the refuge of imperfection. To have recourse to expedients implies difficulty, impediment, restraint, defect of power. This question belongs to the other senses as well as to sight; to the general functions of animal life—as nutrition, secretion, respiration; to the economy of vegetables; and indeed to almost all the operations of nature. The question therefore is of very wide extent; and amongst other answers which may be given to it, beside reasons of which probably we are ignorant, one answer is this: It is only by the display of contrivance that the existence, the agency, the wisdom of the Deity *could* be testified to his rational creatures. This is the scale by which we ascend to all the knowledge of our Creator which we possess, so far as it depends upon the phenomena or the works of nature. Take away this, and you take away from us every subject of observation and ground of reasoning; I mean as our rational faculties are formed at present. Whatever is done, God could have done without the intervention of instruments or means: but it is

in the construction of instruments, in the choice and adaptation of means, that a Creative Intelligence is seen. It is this which constitutes the order and beauty of the universe. God therefore has been pleased to prescribe limits to his own power, and to work his ends within those limits. The general laws of matter have perhaps the nature of these limits: its inertia, its reaction; the laws which govern the communication of motion, the refraction and reflection of light, the constitution of fluids non-elastic and elastic, the transmission of sound through the latter; the laws of magnetism, of electricity, and probably others yet undiscovered. These are general laws; and when a particular purpose is to be effected, it is not by making a new law, nor by the suspension of the old ones, nor by making them wind, and bend, and yield to the occasion (for nature with great steadiness adheres to and supports them); but it is, as we have seen in the eye, by the interposition of an apparatus corresponding with these laws, and suited to the exigency which results from them, that the purpose is at length attained. As we have said, therefore, God prescribes limits to his power, that he may let in the exercise, and thereby exhibit demonstrations of his wisdom. For then—that is, such laws and limitations being laid down—it is as though one being should have fixed certain rules, and, if we may so speak, provided certain materials; and afterwards have committed to another being, out of these materials, and in subordination to these rules, the task of drawing forth a creation: a supposition which evidently leaves room, and induces indeed a necessity for contrivance. Nay, there may be many such agents, and many ranks of these. We do not advance this as a doctrine either of philosophy or of religion; but we say that the subject may safely be represented under this view, because the Deity, acting himself by general laws, will have the same consequences upon our reasoning as if he had prescribed these laws to another. It has been said that the problem of creation was, 'attraction and matter being given, to make a world out of them;' and, as above explained, this statement perhaps does not convey a false idea.

We have made choice of the eye as an instance upon which to rest the argument of this chapter. Some single example was to be proposed; and the eye offered itself under the advantage of admitting of a strict comparison with optical instruments. The ear, it is probable, is no less artificially and mechanically adapted to its office than the eye. But we know less about it; we do not so well understand the action, the use, or the mutual dependency of its internal parts. Its general form, however, both external and internal, is sufficient to show that it is an instrument adapted to the reception of *sound;* that is to say, already knowing that sound consists in pulses of the air, we perceive, in the structure

of the ear, a suitableness to receive impressions from this species of action, and to propagate the impressions to the brain. For of what does this structure consist? An external ear (the *concha*), calculated, like an ear-trumpet, to catch and collect the pulses of which we have spoken; in large quadrupeds, turning to the sound, and possessing a configuration, as well as motion, evidently fitted for the office; of a tube which leads into the head, lying at the root of this outward ear, the folds and sinuses therefore tending and conducting the air towards it; of a thin membrane, like the pelt of a drum, stretched across this passage upon a bony rim; of a chain of movable and infinitely curious bones, forming a communication, and the only communication that can be observed between the membrane last mentioned and the interior channels and recesses of the skull; of cavities, similar in shape and form to wind instruments of music, being spiral or portions of circles; of the eustachian tube, like the hole in a drum, to let the air pass freely into and out of the barrel of the ear, as the covering membrane vibrates, or as the temperature may be altered; the whole labyrinth hewn out of a rock—that is, wrought into the substance of the hardest bone of the body. This assemblage of connected parts constitutes together an apparatus, plainly enough relative to the transmission of sound, or of the impulses received from sound, and only to be lamented in not being better understood.

[One of the most remarkable points in this structure is the existence of closed bags of water, floating loose in the spiral or semicircular canals. They are termed the membranous labyrinth, to distinguish them from the osseous one in which they are found; and though their office is not known with certainty, yet the resemblance they bear to a structure of known use in the lower animals throws some light on the subject. In the ears of many of the fish and reptile tribes, similar membranous sacs are found, containing cretaceous balls in the fluid within. The effect of this contrivance in conveying strong undulations may be proved by enclosing a marble in a bladder full of water. On the slightest shaking of the bladder, motion is communicated to the marble, which, reacting on the bladder, gives a smart shock to the hand. That this is the purpose of the structure in fishes, &c. cannot be questioned, though the absence of any body in the sacs in the human ear renders their purpose doubtful. From analogies like this, however, we are taught never to condemn any structure as useless of which we cannot immediately see the object.]

The communication within, formed by the small bones of the ear, is, to look upon, more like what we are accustomed to call machinery, than anything I am acquainted with in animal bodies. It seems evidently designed to continue towards the sensorium the tremulous motions which are excited in the membrane of the

tympanum, or what is better known by the name of the 'drum of the ear.' The compages of bones consists of four, which are so disposed, and so hinge upon one another, as that if the membrane, the drum of the ear, vibrate, all the four are put in motion together; and, by the result of their action, work the base of that which is the last in the series, upon an aperture which it closes, and upon which it plays, and which aperture opens into the tortuous canals that lead to the brain. This last bone of the four is called the *stapes*. The office of the drum of the ear is to spread out an extended surface, capable of receiving the impressions of sound, and of being put by them into a state of vibration. The office of the stapes is to repeat these vibrations. It is a repeating frigate, stationed more within the line. From which account of its action may be understood how the sensation of sound will be excited by anything which communicates a vibratory motion to the stapes, though not, as in all ordinary cases, through the intervention of the *membrana tympani*. This is done by solid bodies applied to the bones of the skull, as by a metal bar, holden at one end between the teeth, and touching at the other end a tremulous body. It likewise appears to be done, in a considerable degree, by the air itself, even when this membrane, the drum of the ear, is greatly damaged. Either in the natural or preternatural state of the organ, the use of the chain of bones is to propagate the impulse in a direction towards the brain, and to propagate it with the advantage of a lever; which advantage consists in increasing the force and strength of the vibration, and at the same time diminishing the space through which it oscillates: both of which changes may augment or facilitate the still deeper action of the auditory nerves.

The benefit of the eustachian tube to the organ may be made out upon known pneumatic principles. Behind the drum of the ear is a second cavity, or barrel, called the tympanum. The eustachian tube is a slender pipe, but sufficient for the passage of air, leading from this cavity into the back part of the mouth. Now, it would not have done to have had a vacuum in this cavity; for in that case the pressure of the atmosphere from without would have burst the membrane which covered it. Nor would it have done to have filled the cavity with lymph or any other secretion, which would necessarily have obstructed both the vibration of the membrane and the play of the small bones. Nor, lastly, would it have done to have occupied the space with confined air, because the expansion of that air by heat, or its contraction by cold, would have distended or relaxed the covering membrane in a degree inconsistent with the purpose which it was assigned to execute. The only remaining expedient, and that for which the eustachian tube serves, is to open to this cavity a communication with the external air. In one word, it

exactly answers the purpose of the hole in a drum. [We also hear, to a slight extent, by means of the eustachian tube; which is the reason why we open our mouths frequently in endeavouring to catch faint sounds.]

The *membrana tympani* itself likewise deserves all the examination which can be made of it. It is not found in the ears of fish; which furnishes an additional proof of what indeed is indicated by everything about it, that it is appropriated to the action of air, or of an elastic medium.* It bears an obvious resemblance to the pelt or head of a drum, from which it takes its name. It resembles also a drum-head in this principal property, that its use depends upon its tension. *Tension* is the state essential to it. Now we know that, in a drum, the pelt is carried over a hoop, and braced, as occasion requires, by means of strings attached to its circumference. In the membrane of the ear, the same purpose is provided for, more simply, but not less mechanically nor less successfully, by a different expedient—namely, by the end of a bone (the handle of the malleus) pressing upon its centre. It is only in very large animals that the texture of this membrane can be discerned. In the 'Philosophical Transactions' for the year 1800 (vol. i.), Mr Everard Home (since created knight) has given some curious observations upon the ear, and the drum of the ear of an *elephant*. He discovered in it what he calls a radiated muscle—that is, straight muscular fibres, passing along the membrane from the circumference to the centre, from the bony rim which surrounds it towards the handle of the malleus, to which the central part is attached. This muscle he supposes to be designed to bring the membrane into unison with different sounds; but then he also discovered that this muscle itself cannot act unless the membrane be drawn to a stretch, and kept in a due state of tightness, by what may be called a foreign force—namely, the action of the muscles of the malleus. Supposing his explanation of the use of the parts to be just, our author is well founded in the reflection which he makes upon it, 'that this mode of adapting the ear to different sounds is one of the most beautiful applications of muscles in the body; *the mechanism is so simple, and the variety of effects so great.*'

[The necessarily fine and sensitive character of the membranous drum of the ear would render it liable to injury from the entrance of insects or foreign bodies, were there no protecting contrivance interposed. In the formation of the parts, we find this defensive contrivance to a certain extent; the passage of the external ear being of considerable depth, and its orifice being in

* [It is now quite understood that the particles of water are elastic, though, from their mobility, this property is not easily recognisable; and that, so far from being unfavourable to the transmission of sound, water, according to the most accurate calculations, conveys it with five times the velocity of air.]

a great measure covered by the projection of one of the lobes of the concha. Small particles flying in the air would be warded off by this barrier, but insects, it is clear, would easily surmount it. Against them, therefore, something more was required; and we find this further defence in the *wax*, the bitter taste of which turns them back on the very threshold of the passage. Those only who have felt the agony caused by the presence of an insect in the ear can recognise fully the beauty and utility of this minute but important provision. A friend, into whose ear a flea had once found its way, describes the sensation as dreadful, and compares the noise made by the restless intruder to the rumbling of a cart. Our proverbial saying, which likens an impatient and troubled person to one with a 'flea in his ear,' was never thoroughly understood and appreciated by him till that occasion.

In most of the true fish tribes the external passage to the ear is entirely wanting; and indeed, from the rapid transmission and forcible undulations of sound in water, no such contrivance as a trumpet-like concha, or delicate tympanum, is necessary to give the animal a perception of sounds. None of the fishes, however, appear to be devoid altogether of the organ of hearing. In most of them, the ear consists of a vestibule and spiral canals, with a bag filled with water, and containing concretions for a purpose already noticed. In the amphibia, the external ear begins to appear, with such precautions against the admission of water as qualifies the animal to live in both elements. The hippopotamus has a membranous valve attached to the organ of hearing, and the seal has a long winding passage from the external ear to the tympanum.

In most land animals we may observe the same adaptation of the external ear to the habits of the individual species. In timid and feeble animals, for example, we find the ear long, movable, and thrown backwards, to give the animal warning against the approach of danger from a quarter whence it is most likely to come unexpectedly; while in beasts of prey, the ear is thrown forwards, to catch the footstep of the victim from afar. The hare and the tiger are respectively examples in point.]

In another volume of the 'Transactions' before referred to, and of the same year, two most curious cases are related of persons who retained the sense of hearing, not in a perfect, but in a very considerable degree, notwithstanding the almost total loss of the membrane we have been describing. In one of these cases, the use here assigned to that membrane, of modifying the impressions of sound by change of tension, was attempted to be supplied by straining the muscles of the outward ear. 'The external ear,' we are told, 'had acquired a distinct motion upward and backward, which was observable whenever the patient listened to anything which he did not distinctly hear: when he was addressed in a

whisper, the ear was seen immediately to move; when the tone of voice was louder, it then remained altogether motionless.'

It appears probable, from both these cases, that a collateral, if not principal, use of the membrane is to cover and protect the barrel of the ear which lies behind it. Both the patients suffered from cold: one 'a great increase of deafness from catching cold;' the other 'very considerable pain from exposure to a stream of cold air.' Bad effects, therefore, followed from this cavity being left open to the external air; yet, had the Author of nature shut it up by any other cover than what was capable, by its texture, of receiving vibrations from sound, and, by its connection with the interior parts, of transmitting those vibrations to the brain, the use of the organ, so far as we can judge, must have been entirely obstructed.

CHAPTER IV.

OF THE SUCCESSION OF PLANTS AND ANIMALS.

The *generation* of the animal no more accounts for the contrivance of the eye or ear, than, upon the supposition stated in a preceding chapter, the production of a watch by the motion and mechanism of a former watch, would account for the skill and intention evidenced in the watch so produced—than it would account for the disposition of the wheels, the catching of their teeth, the relation of the several parts of the works to one another, and to their common end—for the suitableness of their forms and places to their offices, for their connection, their operation, and the useful result of that operation. I do insist most strenuously upon the correctness of this comparison; that it holds as to every mode of specific propagation; and that whatever was true of the watch, under the hypothesis above-mentioned, is true of plants and animals.

I. To begin with the fructification of plants. Can it be doubted but that the seed contains a particular organisation? Whether a latent plantule with the means of temporary nutrition, or whatever else it be, it encloses an organisation suited to the germination of a new plant. Has the plant which produced the seed anything more to do with that organisation, than the watch would have had to do with the structure of the watch which was produced in the course of its mechanical movement? I mean—has it anything at all to do with the *contrivance?* The maker and contriver of one watch, when he inserted within it a mechanism suited to the production of another watch, was in truth the maker

and contriver of that other watch. All the properties of the new watch were to be referred to his agency: the design manifested in it, to his intention; the art, to him as the artist; the collocation of each part, to his placing; the action, effect, and use, to his counsel, intelligence, and workmanship. In producing it by the intervention of a former watch, he was only working by one set of tools instead of another. So it is with the plant, and the seed produced by it. Can any distinction be assigned between the two cases—between the producing watch and the producing plant—both passive, unconscious substances; both, by the organisation which was given to them, producing their like, without understanding or design; both, that is, instruments?

II. From plants we may proceed to oviparous animals; from seeds to eggs. Now, I say that the bird has the same concern in the formation of the egg which she lays, as the plant has in that of the seed which it drops; and no other, nor greater. The internal constitution of the egg is as much a secret to the hen as if the hen were inanimate. Her will cannot alter it or change a single feather of the chick. She can neither foresee nor determine of which sex her brood shall be, or how many of either; yet the thing produced shall be, from the first, very different in its make, according to the sex which it bears. So far, therefore, from adapting the means, she is not beforehand apprised of the effect. If there be concealed within that smooth shell a provision and a preparation for the production and nourishment of a new animal, they are not of her providing or preparing: if there be contrivance, it is none of hers. Although, therefore, there be the difference of life* and perceptivity between the animal and the plant, it is a difference which enters not into the account. It is a foreign circumstance. It is a difference of properties not employed. The animal function and the vegetable function are alike destitute of any design which can operate upon the form of the thing produced. The plant has no design in producing the seed, no comprehension of the nature or use of what it produces; the bird, with respect to its egg, is not above the plant with respect to its seed. Neither the one nor the other bears that sort of relation to what proceeds from them which a joiner does to the chair which he makes. Now, a cause which bears *this* relation to the effect is what we want, in order to account for the suitableness of means to an end, the fitness and fitting of one thing to another; and this cause the parent plant or animal does not supply.

* [The word *life* must be understood here as implying sensation and the power of voluntary motion; the two properties which, in connection with 'perceptivity,' as the percipient faculties are denominated in the text, distinguish animal beings from the members of the vegetable kingdom. This explanation seems necessary, because, in its common acceptation, the term life is now applied as well to vegetable as to animal existence.]

It is further observable concerning the propagation of plants and animals, that the apparatus employed exhibits no resemblance to the thing produced; in this respect holding an analogy with instruments and tools of art. The filaments, anthers, and stigmata of flowers bear no more resemblance to the young plant, or even to the seed, which is formed by their intervention, than a chisel or a plane does to a table or chair. What, then, are the filaments, anthers, and stigmata of plants, but instruments strictly so called?

III. We may advance from animals which bring forth eggs, to animals which bring forth their young alive—and of this latter class, from the lowest to the highest, from irrational to rational life, from brutes to the human species—without perceiving, as we proceed, any alteration whatever in the terms of the comparison. The rational animal does not produce its offspring with more certainty or success than the irrational animal; a man than a quadruped, a quadruped than a bird; nor (for we may follow the gradation through its whole scale) a bird than a plant; nor a plant than a watch, a piece of dead mechanism, would do, upon the supposition which has already so often been repeated. Rationality, therefore, has nothing to do in the business. If an account must be given of the contrivance which we observe; if it be demanded, whence arose either the contrivance by which the young animal is produced, or the contrivance manifested in the young animal itself, it is not from the reason of the parent that any such account can be drawn. He is the cause of his offspring, in the same sense as that in which a gardener is the cause of the tulip which grows upon his parterre, and in no other. We admire the flower; we examine the plant; we perceive the conduciveness of many of its parts to their end and office; we observe a provision for its nourishment, growth, protection, and fecundity; but we never think of the gardener in all this. We attribute nothing of this to his agency; yet it may still be true that without the gardener we should not have had the tulip: just so it is with the succession of animals even of the highest order. For the contrivance discovered in the structure of the thing produced, we want a contriver. The parent is not that contriver. His consciousness decides that question. He is in total ignorance why that which is produced took its present form rather than any other. It is for him only to be astonished by the effect. We can no more look, therefore, to the intelligence of the parent animal for what we are in search of—a cause of relation and of subserviency of parts to their use, which relation and subserviency we see in the procreated body—than we can refer the internal conformation of an acorn to the intelligence of the oak from which it dropped, or the structure of the watch to the intelligence of the watch which produced it; there being no difference, as far as argument is

concerned, between an intelligence which is not exerted, and an intelligence which does not *exist*.*

CHAPTER V.

APPLICATION OF THE ARGUMENT CONTINUED.

Every observation which was made in our first chapter concerning the watch, may be repeated with strict propriety concerning the eye, concerning animals, concerning plants, concerning, indeed, all the organised parts of the works of nature. As,

I. When we are inquiring simply after the *existence* of an intelligent Creator, imperfection, inaccuracy, liability to disorder, occasional irregularities, may subsist in a considerable degree, without inducing any doubt into the question; just as a watch may frequently go wrong, seldom perhaps exactly right, may be faulty in some parts, defective in some, without the smallest ground of suspicion from thence arising that it was not a watch, not made, or not made for the purpose ascribed to it. When faults are pointed out, and when a question is started concerning the skill of the artist, or dexterity with which the work is executed, then, indeed, in order to defend these qualities from accusation, we must be able either to expose some intractableness and imperfection in the materials, or point out some invincible difficulty in the execution, into which imperfection and difficulty the matter of complaint may be resolved; or, if we cannot do this, we must adduce such specimens of consummate art and contrivance, proceeding from the same hand, as may convince the inquirer of the existence in the case before him, of impediments

* [Objections have been started against Paley's introduction of the watch in a reproductive character, as jarring too strongly against common sense. Let those who advance this objection weigh well the position in which the author was placed. To have omitted, in his endeavour to demonstrate design in nature, all mention of the most wonderful phenomenon accompanying the existence of an animated being, whether animal or vegetable—namely, the power of continuing the species—would have been nothing less than to have thrown away one of the corner-stones of his cause. This no one, we presume, will be inclined to deny. At the same time, according to his general plan, he could turn this phenomenon to account only by comparing it with something of a similar nature resulting from human design; and where was he to find a machine, made by the hands of man, capable of reproducing an image of itself? No such thing existed. Animal and vegetable bodies, in which alone such a power resided, were the very things he wished to find a semblance of; therefore, for the sake of his argument, he was under the necessity of affixing such a suppositious character to the watch, a production of human art and design which suited his purpose so admirably in all other respects. In this one point all machines were alike deficient as objects of comparison.]

like those which we have mentioned, although, what from the nature of the case is very likely to happen, they be unknown and unperceived by him. This we must do, in order to vindicate the artist's skill, or at least the perfection of it; as we must also judge of his intention, and of the provisions employed in fulfilling that intention, not from an instance in which they fail, but from the great plurality of instances in which they succeed. But, after all, these are different questions from the question of the artist's existence; or, which is the same, whether the thing before us be a work of art or not; and the questions ought always to be kept separate in the mind. So likewise it is in the works of nature. Irregularities and imperfections are of little or no weight in the consideration, when that consideration relates simply to the existence of a Creator. When the argument respects his attributes, they are of weight; but are then to be taken in conjunction (the attention is not to rest upon them, but they are to be taken in conjunction) with the unexceptionable evidences which we possess of skill, power, and benevolence displayed in other instances; which evidences may, in strength, number, and variety, be such, and may so overpower apparent blemishes, as to induce us, upon the most reasonable ground, to believe that these last ought to be referred to some cause, though we be ignorant of it, other than defect of knowledge or of benevolence in the Author.

II. There may be also parts of plants and animals, as there were supposed to be of the watch, of which, in some instances, the operation, in others, the use, is unknown. These form different cases; for the operation may be unknown, yet the use be certain. Thus it is with the lungs of animals. It does not, I think, appear that we are acquainted with the action of the air upon the blood, or in what manner that action is communicated by the lungs; yet we find that a very short suspension of their office destroys the life of the animal. In this case, therefore, we may be said to know the use, nay, we experience the necessity, of the organ, though we be ignorant of its operation. Nearly the same thing may be observed of what is called the lymphatic system. We suffer grievous inconveniences from its disorder, without being informed of the office which it sustains in the economy of our bodies. There may possibly, also, be some few examples of the second class, in which not only the operation is unknown, but in which experiments may seem to prove that the part is not necessary; or may leave a doubt how far it is even useful to the plant or animal in which it is found. This is said to be the case with the spleen, which has been extracted from dogs, without any sensible injury to their vital functions.* In-

* [The lungs, the lymphatic system, and the spleen, are brought forward in this place by our author as instances in which our knowledge is in some mea-

stances of the former kind—namely, in which we cannot explain the operation—may be numerous; for they will be so in proportion to our ignorance. They will be more or fewer to different persons, and in different stages of science. Every improvement of knowledge diminishes their number. There is hardly perhaps a year passes that does not, in the works of nature, bring some operation, or some mode of operation, to light, which was before undiscovered—probably unsuspected. Instances of the second kind—namely, where the part appears to be totally useless—I believe to be extremely rare; compared with the number of those of which the use is evident, they are beneath any assignable proportion; and perhaps have never been submitted to a trial and examination sufficiently accurate, long enough continued, or often enough repeated. No accounts which I have seen are satisfactory. The mutilated animal may live and grow fat (as was the case of the dog deprived of its spleen), yet may be defective in some other of its functions; which, whether they can all, or in what degree of vigour and perfection, be performed, or how long preserved, without the extirpated organ, does not seem to be ascertained by experiment. But to this case, even were it fully made out, may be applied the consideration which we suggested concerning the watch—namely, that these superfluous parts do not negative the reasoning which we instituted concerning those parts which are useful, and of which we know the use: the indication of contrivance, with respect to them, remains as it was before.

III. One atheistic way of replying to our observations upon the works of nature, and to the proofs of a Deity which we think that we perceive in them, is to tell us that all which we see must

sure deficient. Much light has been thrown on the respiratory organs and function since Paley wrote, and in a subsequent part of the work, where they are treated of at greater length, this additional information will be fully presented to the reader. The spleen also has been the subject of many recent inquiries, which will fall also to be noticed in their proper place. As the lymphatic system of vessels, however, are nowhere made the subject of consideration in the succeeding chapters of the work, we think it better to bestow a brief notice on them here, than to introduce the question anew at any future point.

The body being incessantly subject to waste and renovation, an absorbent apparatus becomes necessary, in order to convey the useless materials into the general mass of circulating fluids, whence they may be removed from the body by the usual excretory channels. This absorbent action appears to be, in part, performed by the veins, but a specific system of vessels has been provided to assist in and perfect the operation. These are the lymphatic vessels, which are found in almost every quarter of the frame. They are exceedingly small in size, though, towards the point where they throw their contents into the larger veins, they acquire considerable bulk. As they are found in none of the invertebrated animals, we may conclude them to be, like many other provisions, a refinement in organisation, bestowed on the higher orders of the animated creation. Of all the explanations of the lymphatic system, this seems the most rational and satisfactory, though its truth, it must be confessed, is only partially capable of demonstration.]

necessarily have had some form, and that it might as well be its present form as any other. Let us now apply this answer to the eye, as we did before to the watch. Something or other must have occupied that place in the animal's head; must have filled up, we will say, that socket; we will say also that it must have been of that sort of substance which we call animal substance, as flesh, bone, membrane, cartilage, &c. But that it should have been an *eye*, knowing as we do what an eye comprehends—namely, that it should have consisted, first, of a series of transparent lenses (very different, by the by, even in their substance, from the opaque materials of which the rest of the body is, in general at least, composed, and with which the whole of its surface, this single portion of it excepted, is covered): secondly, of a black cloth or canvas (the only membrane of the body which is black) spread out behind these lenses, so as to receive the image formed by pencils of light transmitted through them; and placed at the precise geometrical distance at which, and at which alone, a distinct image could be formed—namely, at the concourse of the refracted rays: thirdly, of a large nerve communicating between this membrane and the brain; without which the action of light upon the membrane, however modified by the organ, would be lost to the purposes of sensation: that this fortunate conformation of parts should have been the lot, not of one individual out of many thousand individuals, like the great prize in a lottery, or like some singularity in nature, but the happy chance of a whole species; nor of one species out of many thousand species with which we are acquainted, but of by far the greatest number of all that exist; and that under varieties, not casual or capricious, but bearing marks of being suited to their respective exigencies—that all this should have taken place, merely because something must have occupied those points in every animal's forehead; or that all this should be thought to be accounted for by the short answer, 'that whatever was there, must have had some form or other,' is too absurd to be made more so by any argumentation. We are not contented with this answer; we find no satisfaction in it; by way of accounting for appearances of organisation far short of those of the eye, such as we observe in fossil shells, petrified bones, or other substances which bear the vestiges of animal or vegetable recrements, but which, either in respect of utility, or of the situation in which they are discovered, may seem accidental enough. It is no way of accounting even for these things to say that the stone, for instance, which is shown to us (supposing the question to be concerning a petrification), must have contained some internal conformation or other. Nor does it mend the answer to add, with respect to the singularity of the conformation, that, after the event, it is no longer to be computed what the chances were against it. This is always to be computed when the

question is, whether a useful or imitative conformation be the produce of chance or not: I desire no greater certainty in reasoning than that by which chance is excluded from the present disposition of the natural world. Universal experience is against it. What does chance ever do for us? In the human body, for instance, chance—that is, the operation of causes without design—may produce a wen, a wart, a mole, a pimple, but never an eye. Amongst inanimate substances, a clod, a pebble, a liquid drop might be; but never was a watch, a telescope, an organised body of any kind, answering a valuable purpose by a complicated mechanism, the effect of chance.* In no assignable instance hath such a thing existed without intention somewhere.

IV. There is another answer which has the same effect as the resolving of things into chance; which answer would persuade us to believe that the eye, the animal to which it belongs, every other animal, every plant, indeed every organised body which we

[* Our author has unquestionably lapsed here, from his desire to argue plainly and candidly, into admissions altogether at variance with sound philosophy. Neither in the production or composition of wen, wart, pimple, clod, pebble, or liquid drop, do we recognise the doings of chance, or the 'operation of causes without design.' Let us take the *clod*, for example, and examine how far the doctrine of chance (in the sense here assigned to the word) is borne out by it.

The best answer, we believe, to the inquiry, 'Where is the proof of design in the clod?' would be to confine the inquirer to a residence for a time on a bare and insulated rock. The nursing clod, which elaborates food for man and beast, would then be viewed in its true light. The admirable adaptation to each other, existing between the clod and the *seed*, and which enables the latter, in all its immense variety of species and forms, to multiply so as to sustain the animal creation and clothe the earth with a living garment of beauty and usefulness, would then be seen in its true colours, when the inhabitant of the rock, though supplied with seeds innumerable, could not raise from one of them, on his naked cliff, a single morsel of food. Is there no design visible in the endowment of the clod with this nourishing principle, which produces so wonderful and useful an effect on the seed; and are we to attribute it to the 'operation of causes without design,' that the whole surface of our globe is strewed with this material, without which, as far as we can judge, it would have been uninhabitable?

It is by turning in this manner from grains and handfuls to a view of the same substances in the mass, that we can refute such examples of the possible results of chance as the text presents. The reason for the existence of an individual pimple may not be apparent, but every medical man is well aware of the conservative effects of eruptions generally.

It is not, however, to the individual instances which our author has chosen to admit of the operations of chance, or causes without design, that we object. Our objection lies against the admission of such a principle in any case whatever. The great laws which we see in hourly operation in nature, externally and internally, in the fields and in our frames—these are acknowledged by us to work out continually great effects, the utility of which we feel, and the design of which we are consequently more ready to admit. Where, in the operation of the same laws, no design can be recognised, it is in our limited ability to trace out the causes that the deficiency lies. To speak of chance as the source, or incipient link of a chain of events, is simply an acknowledgment that at that point our knowledge ceases. That chance, which is the very *absence of a cause*, should be the substantive agent which sets in motion the laws of nature in any case, whether to originate a clod or a pimple, is a proposition altogether unintelligible.]

see, are only so many out of the possible varieties and combinations of being which the lapse of infinite ages has brought into existence; that the present world is the relict of that variety; millions of other bodily forms and other species having perished, being by the defect of their constitution incapable of preservation, or of continuance by generation. Now there is no foundation whatever for this conjecture in anything which we observe in the works of nature; no such experiments are going on at present; no such energy operates as that which is here supposed, and which should be constantly pushing into existence new varieties of beings. Nor are there any appearances to support an opinion that every possible combination of vegetable or animal structure has formerly been tried. Multitudes of conformations, both of vegetables and animals, may be conceived capable of existence and succession, which yet do not exist. Perhaps almost as many forms of plants might have been found in the fields, as figures of plants can be delineated upon paper. A countless variety of animals might have existed which do not exist. Upon the supposition here stated, we should see unicorns and mermaids, sylphs and centaurs—the fancies of painters, and the fables of poets—realised by examples. Or, if it be alleged that these may transgress the limits of possible life and propagation, we might at least have nations of human beings without nails upon their fingers, with more or fewer fingers and toes than ten; some with one eye, others with one ear, with one nostril, or without the sense of smelling at all. All these, and a thousand other imaginable varieties, might live and propagate. We may modify any one species many different ways, all consistent with life, and with the actions necessary to preservation, although affording different degrees of conveniency and enjoyment to the animal. And if we carry these modifications through the different species which are known to subsist, their number would be incalculable. No reason can be given why, if these deperdits ever existed, they have now disappeared. Yet if all possible existences have been tried, they must have formed part of the catalogue.

But, moreover, the division of organised substances into animals and vegetables, and the distribution and sub-distribution of each into genera and species, which distribution is not an arbitrary act of the mind, but founded in the order which prevails in external nature, appear to me to contradict the supposition of the present world being the remains of an indefinite variety of existences—of a variety which rejects all plan. The hypothesis teaches that every possible variety of being hath, at one time or other, found its way into existence (by what cause, or in what manner, is not said), and that those which were badly formed, perished; but how or why those which survived should be cast, as we see that plants and animals are cast, into regular classes, the hypo-

thesis does not explain; or rather the hypothesis is inconsistent with this phenomenon.

[Though the systematic classification of plants and animals is a matter of frequent discussion and change among naturalists, yet the distribution of living beings into classes, families, genera, &c. is obviously founded on natural distinctions, the imperfect perception of which is the sole cause of our imperfect arrangements. Such a distinction being admitted, there is no fact more clearly established by geology, than that numerous races have lived and passed away, being succeeded by others, to which they often bear such a faint analogy of form and structure, that the naturalist can scarcely assign them to any existing family. But so far from this succession of widely-differing races indicating anything like a chance-medley of self-creations, it proves, in the most striking manner, the forethought, skill, and design of one Great Artificer. Plants and animals are not created, but merely regulated in their kind and distribution by external conditions; and as in the great progress of things the Creator saw fit to impress new conditions on the globe, so did previous races die out, and so were new ones introduced, adapted in all their being to the altered conditions. The deperdits of nature were no less perfect in their organisation, not less successful in their functions, than their successors; nor, reasoning from the past, dare we assume that whatever may succeed in the progress of the universe will be less perfect, or less harmoniously adapted to existing conditions.]

The hypothesis, indeed, is hardly deserving of the consideration which we have given to it. What should we think of a man who, because we had never ourselves seen watches, telescopes, stocking-mills, steam-engines, &c. made, knew not how they were made, or could prove by testimony when they were made, or by whom—would have us believe that these machines, instead of deriving their curious structures from the thought and design of their inventors and contrivers, in truth derive them from no other origin than this—namely, that a mass of metals and other materials having run, when melted, into all possible figures, and combined themselves in all possible forms, and shapes, and proportions, these things which we see are what were left from the accident, as best worth preserving; and as such are become the remaining stock of a magazine, which, at one time or other, has by this means contained every mechanism, useful and useless, convenient and inconvenient, into which such like materials could be thrown? I cannot distinguish the hypothesis as applied to the works of nature, from this solution which no one would accept, as applied to a collection of machines.

V. To the marks of contrivance discoverable in animal bodies, and to the argument deduced from them, in proof of design and of a designing Creator, this turn is sometimes attempted to be

given—namely, that the parts were not intended for the use, but that the use arose out of the parts. This distinction is intelligible. A cabinet-maker rubs his mahogany with fish-skin; yet it would be too much to assert that the skin of the dog-fish was made rough and granulated on purpose for the polishing of wood and the use of cabinet-makers. Therefore the distinction is intelligible. But I think that there is very little place for it in the works of nature. When roundly and generally affirmed of them, as it hath sometimes been, it amounts to such another stretch of assertion as it would be to say that all the implements of the cabinet-maker's workshop, as well as his fish-skin, were substances accidentally configurated, which he had picked up and converted to his use; that his adzes, saws, planes, and gimlets were not made, as we suppose, to hew, cut, smooth, shape out, or bore wood with, but that these things being made, no matter with what design, or whether with any, the cabinet-maker perceived that they were applicable to his purpose, and turned them to account.

But again. So far as this solution is attempted to be applied to those parts of animals the action of which does not depend upon the will of the animal, it is fraught with still more evident absurdity. Is it possible to believe that the eye was formed without any regard to vision; that it was the animal itself which found out that, though formed with no such intention, it would serve to see with; and that the use of the eye, as an organ of sight, resulted from this discovery, and the animal's application of it? The same question may be asked of the ear; the same of all the senses. None of the senses fundamentally depend upon the election of the animal; consequently neither upon his sagacity nor his experience. It is the impression which objects make upon them that constitutes their use. Under that impression he is passive. He may bring objects to the sense, or within its reach; he may select these objects; but over the impression itself he has no power, or very little; and that properly is the sense.

Secondly, there are many parts of animal bodies which seem to depend upon the will of the animal in a greater degree than the senses do, and yet with respect to which this solution is equally unsatisfactory. If we apply the solution to the human body, for instance, it forms itself into questions upon which no reasonable mind can doubt; such as—whether the teeth were made expressly for the mastication of food, the feet for walking, the hands for holding? or whether, these things being as they are, being in fact in the animal's possession, his own ingenuity taught him that they were convertible to these purposes, though no such purposes were contemplated in their formation?

All that there is of the appearance of reason in this way of considering the subject is, that in some cases the organisation

seems to determine the habits of the animal, and its choice to a particular mode of life; which, in a certain sense, may be called 'the use arising out of the part.' Now, to all the instances in which there is any place for this suggestion, it may be replied that the organisation determines the animal to habits beneficial and salutary to itself; and that this effect would not be seen so regularly to follow, if the several organisations did not bear a concerted and contrived relation to the substance by which the animal was surrounded. They would, otherwise, be capacities without objects; powers without employment. The web-foot determines, you say, the duck to swim; but what would that avail, if there were no water to swim in? The strong hooked bill and sharp talons of one species of bird determine it to prey upon animals; the soft straight bill and weak claws of another species determine it to pick up seeds; but neither determination could take effect in providing for the sustenance of the birds, if animal bodies and vegetable seeds did not lie within their reach. The peculiar conformation of the bill, tongue, and claws of the woodpecker determines that bird to search for his food amongst the insects lodged behind the bark or in the wood of decayed trees; but what would this profit him if there were no trees, no decayed trees, no insects lodged under their bark or in their trunk? The proboscis with which the bee is furnished determines him to seek for honey; but what would that signify if flowers supplied none? Faculties thrown down upon animals at random, and without reference to the objects amidst which they are placed, would not produce to them the services and benefits which we see; and if there be that reference, then there is intention.

[And, moreover, granting that, in the course of time, the necessities of the animal's position could regulate and organise its peculiar conformation, how in the meantime did the species exist while the requisite change was being effected? At the theorist's own computation, a long series of generations must have lived with imperfect provisions for existence; but we may justly express our wonder how they lived at all. How did the progenitors of the giraffe, placed among lofty trees, without any other herbage around, procure their food from the leaves before the neck grew to the requisite length? Examples of this kind might be multiplied indefinitely; for *every* species of animals, according to this supposition, must have had, for many generations, cravings and propensities which their bodies fitted them neither to indulge nor enjoy. Besides all this, is it rational to infer from the very fact that adaptation exists everywhere in the organic world, that the total want of adaptation produced the universal harmony?]

Lastly, the solution fails entirely when applied to plants. The parts of plants answer their uses without any concurrence from the will or choice of the plant.

VI. Others have chosen to refer everything to a *principle of order* in nature. A principle of order is the word; but what is meant by a principle of order, as different from an intelligent Creator, has not been explained either by definition or example; and, without such explanation, it should seem to be a mere substitution of words for reasons, names for causes. Order itself is only the adaptation of means to an end; a principle of order, therefore, can only signify the mind and intention which so adapts them. Or, were it capable of being explained in any other sense, is there any experience, any analogy, to sustain it? Was a watch ever produced by a principle of order? And why might not a watch be so produced as well as an eye?

Furthermore, a principle of order, acting blindly, and without choice, is negatived by the observation that order is not universal, which it would be if it issued from a constant and necessary principle; nor indiscriminate, which it would be if it issued from an unintelligent principle. Where order is wanted, there we find it; where order is not wanted—that is, where, if it prevailed, it would be useless—there we do not find it. In the structure of the eye (for we adhere to our example), in the figure and position of its several parts, the most exact order is maintained. In the forms of rocks and mountains, in the lines which bound the coasts of continents and islands, in the shape of bays and promontories, no order whatever is perceived, because it would have been superfluous.* No useful purpose would have arisen from moulding rocks and mountains into regular solids, bounding the channel of the ocean by geometrical curves; or from the map of the world resembling a table of diagrams in Euclid's Elements or Simpson's Conic Sections.

VII. Lastly, the confidence which we place in our observations upon the works of nature, in the marks which we discover of contrivance, choice, and design, and in our reasoning upon the proofs afforded us, ought not to be shaken, as it is sometimes at-

* [In the chapter on Geology—a science scarcely in existence in our author's time, and to which, on that account, a separate and additional section has been assigned—the reader will learn, from the striking and even sublime investigations of modern science, how admirably the irregularities of the earth's surface, alluded to in the text, are conducive to the welfare and existence of all the multitude of sentient beings which inhabit it. Order would not only have been, as our author expresses it, 'superfluous'—it would have been fatal to the possible existence of the whole organic creation. All the apparently wild irregularity and disorder which the surface of the globe presents—its bowels in one place, as it were, projected into the clouds, and in another laid bare in deepest chasms—liquids and solids disposed in a chaos of confusion, and acting and reacting on each other in a continuous and incessant succession of changes—all this disorder has been benevolently ordained for the enjoyment of the infinite varieties of terrestrial vitality.

The reader will find this subject fully elucidated in the section on Geology, to which allusion has been made. Our object at the present moment has been simply to give additional force to the argument in the text.]

tempted to be done, by bringing forward to our view our own ignorance, or rather the general imperfection of our knowledge of nature. Nor, in many cases, ought this consideration to affect us, even when it respects some parts of the subject immediately under our notice. True fortitude of understanding consists in not suffering what we know to be disturbed by what we do not know. If we perceive a useful end, and means adapted to that end, we perceive enough for our conclusion. If these things be clear, no matter what is obscure. The argument is finished. For instance, if the utility of vision to the animal which enjoys it, and the adaptation of the *eye* to this office, be evident and certain (and I can mention nothing which is more so), ought it to prejudice the inference which we draw from these premises, that we cannot explain the use of the spleen? Nay, more, if there be parts of the eye—namely, the cornea, the crystalline, the retina—in their substance, figure, and position, manifestly suited to the formation of an image by the refraction of rays of light, at least as manifestly as the glasses and tubes of a dioptric telescope are suited to that purpose, it concerns not the proof which these afford of design, and of a designer, that there may perhaps be other parts, certain muscles for instance, or nerves in the same eye, of the agency or effect of which we can give no account; any more than we should be inclined to doubt, or ought to doubt, about the construction of a telescope—namely, for what purpose it was constructed, or whether it were constructed at all, because there belonged to it certain screws and pins, the use or action of which we did not comprehend. I take it to be a general way of infusing doubts and scruples into the mind, to recall to its own ignorance its own imbecility: to tell us that upon these subjects we know little; that little imperfectly; or rather, that we know nothing properly about the matter. These suggestions so fall in with our consciousness, as sometimes to produce a general distrust of our faculties and our conclusions. But this is an unfounded jealousy. The uncertainty of one thing does not necessarily affect the certainty of another thing. Our ignorance of many points need not suspend our assurance of a few. Before we yield, in any particular instance, to the scepticism which this sort of insinuation would induce, we ought accurately to ascertain whether our ignorance or doubt concern those precise points upon which our conclusion rests. Other points are nothing. Our ignorance of other points may be of no consequence to these, though they be points, in various respects, of great importance. A just reasoner removes from his consideration not only what he knows, but what he does not know, touching matters not strictly connected with his argument—that is, not forming the very steps of his deduction; beyond these, his knowledge and his ignorance are alike relative.

CHAPTER VI.

THE ARGUMENT CUMULATIVE.

Were there no example in the world of contrivance, except that of the *eye*, it would alone be sufficient to support the conclusion which we draw from it, as to the necessity of an intelligent Creator. It could never be got rid of; because it could not be accounted for by any other supposition, which did not contradict all the principles we possess of knowledge; the principles, according to which things do, as often as they can be brought to the test of experience, turn out to be true or false. Its coats and humours, constructed, as the lenses of a telescope are constructed, for the refraction of rays of light to a point, which forms the proper action of the organ; the provision in its muscular tendons for turning its pupil to the object, similar to that which is given to the telescope by screws, and upon which power of direction in the eye the exercise of its office as an optical instrument depends; the further provision for its defence, for its constant lubricity and moisture, which we see in its socket and its lids, in its gland for the secretion of the matter of tears, its outlet or communication with the nose for carrying off the liquid after the eye is washed with it—these provisions compose altogether an apparatus, a system of parts, a preparation of means, so manifest in their design, so exquisite in their contrivance, so successful in their issue, so precious, and so infinitely beneficial in their use, as, in my opinion, to bear down all doubt that can be raised upon the subject. And what I wish, under the title of the present chapter, to observe is, that if other parts of nature were inaccessible to our inquiries, or even if other parts of nature presented nothing to our examination but disorder and confusion, the validity of this example would remain the same. If there were but one watch in the world, it would not be less certain that it had a maker. If we had never in our lives seen any but one single kind of hydraulic machine, yet, if of that one kind we understood the mechanism and use, we should be as perfectly assured that it proceeded from the hand, and thought, and skill of a workman, as if we visited a museum of the arts, and saw collected there twenty different kinds of machines for drawing water, or a thousand different kinds for other purposes. Of this point each machine is a proof, independently of all the rest. So it is with the evidences of a Divine agency. The proof is not a conclusion which lies at the end of a chain of reasoning, of which chain each instance of contrivance is only a link, and of which, if one link fail, the whole

falls; but it is an argument separately supplied by every separate example. An error in stating an example affects only that example. The argument is cumulative, in the fullest sense of that term. The eye proves it without the ear; the ear without the eye. The proof in each example is complete; for when the design of the part, and the conduciveness of its structure to that design, is shown, the mind may set itself at rest; no future consideration can detract anything from the force of the example.

CHAPTER VII.

OF THE MECHANICAL AND IMMECHANICAL PARTS AND FUNCTIONS OF ANIMALS AND VEGETABLES.

It is not that *every* part of an animal or vegetable has not proceeded from a contriving mind; or that every part is not constructed with a view to its proper end and purpose, according to the laws belonging to and governing the substance or the action made use of in that part; or that each part is not so constructed as to effectuate its purpose whilst it operates according to these laws; but it is because these laws themselves are not in all cases equally understood; or, what amounts to nearly the same thing, are not equally exemplified in more simple processes and more simple machines, that we lay down the distinction here proposed between the mechanical parts and other parts of animals and vegetables.

For instance, the principle of muscular motion—namely, upon what cause the swelling of the belly of the muscle, and consequent contraction of its tendons, either by an act of the will, or by involuntary irritation, depends—is wholly unknown to us. The substance employed—whether it be fluid, gaseous, elastic, electrical, or none of these, or nothing resembling these—is also unknown to us: of course the laws belonging to that substance, and which regulate its action, are unknown to us. We see nothing similar to this contraction in any machine which we can make, or any process which we can execute. So far (it is confessed) we are in ignorance, but no farther. This power and principle, from whatever cause it proceeds, being assumed, the collocation of the fibres to receive the principle, the disposition of the muscles for the use and application of the power, is mechanical, and is as intelligible as the adjustment of the wires and strings by which a puppet is moved. We see, therefore, as far as respects the subject before us, what is not mechanical in the animal frame, and what is. The nervous influence (for we are often obliged to give

names to things which we know little about)—I say the nervous influence, by which the belly or middle of the muscle is swelled, is not mechanical. The utility of the effect we perceive; the means, or the preparation of means, by which it is produced, we do not. But obscurity as to the origin of muscular motion brings no doubtfulness into our observations upon the sequel of the process. Which observations relate—1st, To the constitution of the muscle; in consequence of which constitution, the swelling of the belly or middle part is necessarily and mechanically followed by a contraction of the tendons: 2dly, To the number and variety of the muscles, and the corresponding number and variety of useful powers which they supply to the animal; which is astonishingly great: 3dly, To the judicious (if we may be permitted to use that term in speaking of the Author or of the works of nature), to the wise and well-contrived disposition of each muscle for its specific purpose; for moving the joint this way, and that way, and the other way; for pulling and drawing the part to which it is attached in a determinate and particular direction; which is a mechanical operation, exemplified in a multitude of instances. To mention only one: The tendon of the trochlear muscle of the eye, to the end that it may draw in the line required, is passed through a cartilaginous ring, at which it is reverted, exactly in the same manner as a rope in a ship is carried over a block or round a stay, in order to make it pull in the direction which is wanted. All this, as we have said, is mechanical; and is as accessible to inspection, as capable of being ascertained, as the mechanism of the automaton in the Strand. Suppose the automaton to be put in motion by a magnet (which is probable), it will supply us with a comparison very apt for our present purpose. Of the magnetic effluvium we know perhaps as little as we do of the nervous fluid.* But magnetic attraction being assumed (it signifies

* [Wherever a point or subject, mentioned by our author as being in his time obscure, still remains not fully understood, we shall avoid as much as possible burdening the work with the speculations and inquiries which the interval may have produced, since they have unfolded no definite truths. The subject of the nervous principle or energy, however, is one so interesting, that we may be pardoned for making some remarks upon it, were it merely to show that modern science, in its all-grasping range, has not shrunk from this difficult point, but has brought to light, on the contrary, many striking facts regarding it. That no decisive understanding has been attained to on the nervous principle, does not, as Paley clearly demonstrates, weaken the force of those truths which have been ascertained regarding the mechanical arrangements on which it operates.

That muscular contraction, and consequently every motion of the frame, is dependent on the nervous principle, is demonstrated by nature daily in cases of paralysis, and may easily be shown by the experiment of dividing the nerves distributed to any set of muscles in the frame of a living animal. It is remarkable that the electric fluid possesses the same power of exciting muscular contraction. This has been now long known, and has given rise to opinions, by no means devoid of probability, that the electric fluid and the nervous principle are identical. In some instances, where experiments have been made on the dead human body, the muscular contractions, the motions and contortions, have borne so fearful a resemblance to the motions of the living frame, that the spec-

nothing from what cause it proceeds), we can trace, or there can be pointed out to us, with perfect clearness and certainty, the mechanism—namely, the steel bars, the wheels, the joints, the wires—by which the motion so much admired is communicated to the fingers of the image; and to make any obscurity, or difficulty, or controversy in the doctrine of magnetism, an objection to our knowledge or our certainty concerning the contrivance, or the marks of contrivance, displayed in the automaton, would be exactly the same thing as it is to make our ignorance (which we acknowledge) of the cause of nervous agency, or even of the substance and structure of the nerves themselves, a ground of question or suspicion as to the reasoning which we institute concerning the mechanical part of our frame. That an animal is a machine, is a proposition neither correctly true nor wholly false. The distinction which we have been discussing will serve to show how far the comparison which this expression implies holds, and wherein it fails. And whether the distinction be thought of importance or not, it is certainly of importance to remember that there is neither truth nor justice in endeavouring to bring a cloud over our understandings, or a distrust into our reasonings upon this subject, by suggesting that we know nothing of voluntary motion, of irritability, of the principle of life, of sensation, of animal heat, upon all which the animal functions depend; for our ignorance of these parts of the animal frame concerns not at all our knowledge of the mechanical parts of the same frame. I contend, therefore, that there is mechanism in animals; that this mechanism is as properly such, as it is in machines made by art; that this mechanism is intelligible and certain; that it is not the

tators have been forcibly impressed with the belief that electricity is the vital principle itself. Indeed the principle residing in the nervous system appears to be but another term for expressing what we understand by the principle of life. Vitality, it ought to be remembered, is never to be confounded with the mind or soul.

Besides possessing the same power of inducing muscular contraction, the electric fluid has other properties, analogous to those of the nervous energy. The gastric nerves, for example, convey the specific power of digestion to the stomach. Let these be divided at any one point, and the organ loses the power of acting on food. But if a current of electricity be transmitted to the stomach which has thus been deprived of its nervous communication with the brain, the power of digestion is at once restored. This may easily be demonstrated by actual experiment on living animals.

Many other points of resemblance between the nervous and the electric principles have been discovered. Those mentioned, however, are sufficient to show that in all probability the obscurity which, as our author correctly observes, enveloped this subject in his day, is in progress of being dispelled by the clear light of science and truth.

The reference in the text to the operations of magnetism, as affording a striking parallel to those of the nervous energy, is rendered more striking, when we consider that between magnetism and electricity points of resemblance exist similar to those which have been observed between electricity and the nervous principle, and that thus the whole three, which were once regarded distinct bodies, are now in all probability mere modifications of one great and all-pervading essence.]

less so because it often begins or terminates with something which is not mechanical; that whenever it is intelligible and certain, it demonstrates intention and contrivance, as well in the works of nature as in those of art; and that it is the best demonstration which either can afford.

But whilst I contend for these propositions, I do not exclude myself from asserting that there may be, and that there are, other cases in which, although we cannot exhibit mechanism, or prove, indeed, that mechanism is employed, we want not sufficient evidence to conduct us to the same conclusion.

There is what may be called the *chemical* part of our frame; of which, by reason of the imperfection of our chemistry, we can attain to no distinct knowledge; I mean not to a knowledge, either in degree or kind, similar to that which we possess of the mechanical part of our frame. It does not, therefore, afford the same species of argument as that which mechanism affords; and yet it may afford an argument in a high degree satisfactory. The *gastric juice*, or the liquor which digests the food in the stomachs of animals, is of this class. Of all menstrua, it is the most active, the most universal. In the human stomach, for instance, consider what a variety of strange substances, and how widely different from one another, it in a few hours reduces to a uniform pulp milk or mucilage. It seizes upon everything, it dissolves the texture of almost everything that comes in its way. The flesh of perhaps all animals; the seeds and fruits of the greatest number of plants; the roots, and stalks, and leaves of many, hard and tough as they are, yield to its powerful pervasion. The change wrought by it is different from any chemical solution which we can produce, or with which we are acquainted, in this respect as well as many others, that in our chemistry, particular menstrua act only upon particular substances. Consider, moreover, that this fluid, stronger in its operation than a caustic alkali or mineral acid, than red precipitate or aquafortis itself, is nevertheless as mild, and bland, and inoffensive to the touch or taste, as saliva or gum-water, which it much resembles. Consider, I say, these several properties of the digestive organ, and of the juice with which it is supplied, or rather with which it is made to supply itself, and you will confess it to be entitled to a name which it has sometimes received—that of 'the chemical wonder of animal nature.'

Still we are ignorant of the composition of this fluid, and of the mode of its action; by which is meant we are not capable, as we are in the mechanical part of our frame, of collating it with the operations of art. And this I call the imperfection of our chemistry; for should the time ever arrive, which is not perhaps to be despaired of, when we can compound ingredients so as to form a solvent which will act in the manner in which the gastric juice

acts, we may be able to ascertain the chemical principles upon which its efficacy depends, as well as from what part, and by what concoction, in the human body, these principles are generated and derived.

In the meantime, ought that which is in truth the defect of our chemistry, to hinder us from acquiescing in the inference, which a production of nature, by its place, its properties, its action, its surprising efficacy, its invaluable use, authorises us to draw in respect of a creative design?

Another most subtile and curious function of animal bodies is *secretion*. This function is semi-chemical and semi-mechanical; exceedingly important and diversified in its effects, but obscure in its process and in its apparatus. The importance of the secretory organs is but too well attested by the diseases which an excessive, a deficient, or a vitiated secretion is almost sure of producing. A single secretion being wrong, is enough to make life miserable, or sometimes to destroy it. Nor is the variety less than the importance. From one and the same blood (I speak of the human body) about twenty different fluids are separated; in their sensible properties, in taste, smell, colour, and consistency, the most unlike one another that is possible—thick, thin, salt, bitter, sweet: and if from our own we pass to other species of animals, we find amongst their secretions not only the most various, but the most opposite properties; the most nutritious aliment, the deadliest poison; the sweetest perfumes, the most fetid odours. Of these, the greater part—as the gastric juice, the saliva, the bile, the slippery mucilage which lubricates the joints, the tears which moisten the eye, the wax which defends the ear—are, after they are secreted, made use of in the animal economy; are evidently subservient, and are actually contributing, to the utilities of the animal itself. Other fluids seem to be separated only to be rejected. That this also is necessary (though why it was originally necessary we cannot tell), is shown by the consequence of the separation being long suspended; which consequence is disease and death. Akin to secretion, if not the same thing, is assimilation, by which one and the same blood is converted into bone, muscular flesh, nerves, membranes, tendons—things as different as the wood and iron, canvas and cordage, of which a ship with its furniture is composed. We have no operation of art wherewith exactly to compare all this, for no other reason perhaps than that all operations of art are exceeded by it. No chemical election, no chemical analysis or resolution of a substance into its constituent parts, no mechanical sifting or division, that we are acquainted with, in perfection or variety come up to animal secretion. Nevertheless, the apparatus and process are obscure, not to say absolutely concealed from our inquiries. In a few, and only a few instances, we can discern a little of the constitution of

a gland. In the kidneys of large animals we can trace the emulgent artery dividing itself into an infinite number of branches; their extremities everywhere communicating with little round bodies, in the substance of which bodies the secret of the machinery seems to reside, for there the change is made. We can discern pipes laid from these round bodies towards the pelvis, which is a basin within the solid of the kidney. We can discern these pipes joining and collecting together into larger pipes; and, when so collected, ending in innumerable papillæ, through which the secreted fluid is continually oozing into its receptacle. This is all we know of the mechanism of a gland, even in the case in which it seems most capable of being investigated. Yet to pronounce that we know nothing of animal secretion, or nothing satisfactorily, and with that concise remark to dismiss the article from our argument, would be to dispose of the subject very hastily and very irrationally. For the purpose which we want, that of evincing intention, we know a great deal. And what we know is this: We see the blood carried by a pipe, conduit, or duct, *to* the gland. We see an organised apparatus, be its construction or action what it will, which we call that gland. We see the blood, or part of the blood, after it has passed through and undergone the action of the gland, coming *from* it by an emulgent vein or artery—that is, by another pipe or conduit. And we see also at the same time a new and specific fluid issuing from the same gland by its excretory duct—that is, by a third pipe or conduit; which new fluid is in some cases discharged out of the body, in more cases retained within it, and there executing some important and intelligent office. Now, supposing or admitting that we know nothing of the proper internal constitution of a gland, or of the mode of its acting upon the blood, then our situation is precisely like that of an unmechanical looker-on, who stands by a stocking-loom, a corn-mill, a carding-machine, or a thrashing-machine at work, the fabric and mechanism of which, as well as all that passes within, is hidden from his sight by the outside case; or, if seen, would be too complicated for his uninformed, uninstructed understanding to comprehend. And what is that situation? This spectator, ignorant as he is, sees at one end a material enter the machine—as unground grain the mill, raw cotton the carding-machine, sheaves of unthrashed corn the thrashing-machine; and when he casts his eye to the other end of the apparatus, he sees the material issuing from it in a new state; and, what is more, in a state manifestly adapted to future uses; the grain in meal fit for the making of bread, the wool in rovings ready for spinning into threads, the sheaf in corn dressed for the mill. Is it necessary that this man, in order to be convinced that design, that intention, that contrivance has been employed about the machine, should be allowed to pull it to

pieces; should be enabled to examine the parts separately; explore their action upon one another, or their operation, whether simultaneous or successive, upon the material which is presented to them? He may long to do this to gratify his curiosity; he may desire to do it to improve his theoretic knowledge; or he may have a more substantial reason for requesting it, if he happen, instead of a common visitor, to be a millwright by profession, or a person sometimes called in to repair such-like machines when out of order; but for the purpose of ascertaining the existence of counsel and design in the formation of the machine, he wants no such intromission or privity. What he sees is sufficient. The effect upon the material, the change produced in it, the utility of that change for future applications, abundantly testify, be the concealed part of the machine or of its construction what it will, the hand and agency of a contriver.

If any confirmation were wanting to the evidence which the animal secretions afford of design, it may be derived, as has been already hinted, from their variety, and from their appropriation to their place and use. They all come from the same blood; they are all drawn off by glands; yet the produce is very different, and the difference exactly adapted to the work which is to be done, or the end to be answered. No account can be given of this without resorting to appointment. Why, for instance, is the saliva, which is diffused over the seat of taste, insipid, whilst so many others of the secretions, the urine, the sweat, and the tears, are salt? Why does the gland within the ear secrete a viscid substance, which defends that passage; the gland in the upper angle of the eye, a thin brine, which washes the ball? Why is the synovia of the joints mucilaginous; the bile bitter, stimulating, and soapy? Why does the juice which flows into the stomach contain powers which make that bowel the great laboratory, as it is by its situation the recipient, of the materials of future nutrition? These are all fair questions; and no answer can be given to them, but what calls in intelligence and intention.

My object in the present chapter has been to teach three things: first, that it is a mistake to suppose that, in reasoning from the appearances of nature, the imperfection of our knowledge proportionably affects the certainty of our conclusion; for in many cases it does not affect it at all; secondly, that the different parts of the animal frame may be classed and distributed, according to the degree of exactness with which we can compare them with works of art; thirdly, that the *mechanical* parts of our frame, or those in which this comparison is most complete, although constituting probably the coarsest portions of nature's workmanship, are the most proper to be alleged as proofs and specimens of design.

CHAPTER VIII.

OF MECHANICAL ARRANGEMENT IN THE HUMAN FRAME.

We proceed, therefore, to propose certain examples taken out of this class; making choice of such as, amongst those which have come to our knowledge, appear to be the most striking and the best understood; but obliged, perhaps, to postpone both these recommendations to a third—that of the example being capable of explanation without plates, or figures, or technical language.

OF THE BONES.

I. I challenge any man to produce in the joints and pivots of the most complicated or the most flexible machine that was ever contrived, a construction more artificial, or more evidently artificial, than that which is seen in the vertebræ [or spinal bones] of the *human neck*. Two things were to be done. The head was to have the power of bending forward and backward, as in the act of nodding, stooping, looking upward or downward; and at the same time of turning itself round upon the body to a certain extent, the quadrant, we will say, or rather perhaps a hundred and twenty degrees of a circle. For these two purposes, two distinct contrivances are employed: first, the head rests immediately upon the uppermost of the vertebræ, and is united to it by a *hinge*-joint; upon which joint the head plays freely forward and backward, as far either way as is necessary, or as the ligaments allow; which was the first thing required. But then the rotatory motion is unprovided for; therefore, secondly, to make the head capable of this, a further mechanism is introduced; not between the head and the uppermost bone of the neck, where the hinge is, but between that bone and the bone next underneath it. It is a mechanism resembling a *tenon and mortice*. This second or uppermost bone but one, has what anatomists call a process—namely, a projection, somewhat similar in size and shape to a tooth; which tooth, entering a corresponding hole or socket in the bone above it, forms a pivot or axle, upon which that upper bone, together with the head which it supports, turns freely in a circle, and as far in the circle as the attached muscles permit the head to turn. Thus are both motions perfect without interfering with each other. When we nod the head, we use the hinge-joint, which lies between the head and the first bone of the neck. When we turn the head round, we use the tenon and mortice, which runs between the first bone of the neck and the second. We see the same contrivance and the same principle employed in the frame

or mounting of a telescope. It is occasionally requisite that the object-end of the instrument be moved up and down, as well as horizontally or equatorially. For the vertical motion, there is a hinge upon which the telescope plays; for the horizontal or equatorial motion, an axis upon which the telescope and the hinge turn round together. And this is exactly the mechanism which is applied to the motion of the head; nor will any one here doubt of the existence of counsel and design, except it be by that debility of mind which can trust to its own reasonings in nothing.*

We may add, that it was on another account also expedient that the motion of the head backward and forward should be performed upon the upper surface of the first vertebra; for if the first vertebra itself had bent forward, it would have brought the spinal marrow, at the very beginning of its course, upon the point of the tooth.

II. Another mechanical contrivance, not unlike the last in its object, but different and original in its means, is seen in what anatomists call the *fore-arm;* that is, in the arm between the elbow and the wrist. Here, for the perfect use of the limb, two motions are wanted: a motion at the elbow backward and forward, which is called a reciprocal motion; and a rotatory motion, by which the palm of the hand, as occasion requires, may be turned upward. How is this managed? The fore-arm, it is well known, consists of two bones, lying alongside each other, but touching only towards the ends. One, and only one, of these bones is joined to the cubit, or upper part of the arm, at the elbow; the other alone to the hand at the wrist. The first, by means, at the elbow, of a hinge-joint (which allows only of motion in the same plane), swings backward and forward, carrying along with it the other bone and the whole fore-arm. In the meantime, as often as there is occasion to turn the palm upward, that other

* [In the chapter following this, the author observes, in allusion to the human body, 'How many things must go right for us to be an hour at ease! how many more for us to be vigorous and active!' The truth of this is strikingly corroborated by the mechanism existing between the first and second vertebræ for the rotation of the head. An accident which occurred some years since, will best explain our meaning. A street porter, while engaged in carrying a heavy load upon his head and shoulders, suddenly dropt down, and died almost instantly. His body was opened in presence of several hospital surgeons, who, to their great surprise, found the brain, the spinal marrow, and heart, the usual sites of disorder in such cases, in a perfectly sound and natural condition. Other regions of the frame were examined without any marks whatever of disease being discovered, much less such appearances as would account for a death so sudden. At last, on inspecting carefully the spinal bones in the neck, the ligament which confines the tooth-like process of the second vertebra within the semicircular niche in the first was found to be ruptured, and the process had fallen in upon the spinal marrow, thus causing undoubtedly the fatal accident. How impressive the thought is, that on the strength of a small ligament, little thicker than a wafer, our existence, hour by hour, for threescore and ten years it may be, depends! And yet the whole animal machine consists of parts not less important to vitality.]

bone to which the hand is attached rolls upon the first, by the help of a groove or hollow near each end of one bone, to which is fitted a corresponding prominence in the other. If both bones had been joined to the cubit or upper arm, at the elbow, or both to the hand at the wrist, the thing could not have been done. The first was to be at liberty at one end, and the second at the other; by which means the two actions may be performed together. The great bone which carries the fore-arm may be swinging upon its hinge at the elbow, at the very time that the lesser bone, which carries the hand, may be turning round it in the grooves. The management also of these grooves, or rather of the tubercles and grooves, is very observable. The two bones are called the *radius* and the *ulna*. Above—that is, towards the elbow—a tubercle of the radius plays into a socket of the ulna; whilst below—that is, towards the wrist—the radius finds the socket, and the ulna the tubercle. A single bone in the fore-arm, with a ball-and-socket joint at the elbow, which admits of motion in all directions, might in some degree have answered the purpose of both moving the arm and turning the hand. But how much better it is accomplished by the present mechanism, any person may convince himself, who puts the ease and quickness with which he can shake his hand at the wrist circularly (moving likewise, if he pleases, his arm at the elbow at the same time), in competition with the comparatively slow and laborious motion with which his arm can be made to turn round at the shoulder by the aid of a ball-and-socket joint.

III. The *spine*, or backbone, is a chain of joints of very wonderful construction. Various, difficult, and almost inconsistent offices were to be executed by the same instrument. It was to be firm, yet flexible (now I know no chain made by art which is both these; for by firmness I mean not only strength, but stability); *firm*, to support the erect position of the body; *flexible*, to allow of the bending of the trunk in all degrees of curvature. It was further, also (which is another and quite a distinct purpose from the rest) to become a pipe or conduit for the safe conveyance from the brain of the most important fluid of the animal frame; that, namely, upon which all voluntary motion depends—the spinal marrow; a substance not only of the first necessity to action, if not to life, but of a nature so delicate and tender, so susceptible, and so impatient of injury, as that any unusual pressure upon it, or any considerable obstruction of its course, is followed by paralysis or death. Now, the spine was not only to furnish the main trunk for the passage of the medullary substance from the brain, but to give out, in the course of its progress, small pipes therefrom, which being afterwards indefinitely subdivided, might, under the names of nerves, distribute this exquisite supply to every part of the body. The same spine was also to serve an-

other use not less wanted than the preceding—namely, to afford a fulcrum, stay, or basis (or, more properly speaking, a series of these), for the insertion of the muscles which are spread over the trunk of the body; in which trunk there are not, as in the limbs, cylindrical bones to which they can be fastened; and likewise, which is a similar use, to furnish a support for the ends of the ribs to rest upon.

Bespeak of a workman a piece of mechanism which shall comprise all these purposes, and let him set about to contrive it; let him try his skill upon it; let him feel the difficulty of accomplishing the task, before he be told how the same thing is effected in the animal frame. Nothing will enable him to judge so well of the wisdom which has been employed; nothing will dispose him to think of it so truly.

First, for the firmness, yet flexibility of the spine, it is composed of a great number of bones (in the human subject, of twenty-four), joined to one another, and compacted by broad bases. The breadth of the bases upon which the parts severally rest, and the closeness of the junction, give to the chain its firmness and stability; the number of parts, and consequent frequency of joints, its flexibility. Which flexibility, we may also observe, varies in different parts of the chain: is least in the back, where strength, more than flexure, is wanted; greater in the loins, which it was necessary should be more supple than the back; and greatest of all in the neck, for the free motion of the head. Then, secondly, in order to afford a passage for the descent of the medullary substance, each of these bones is bored through in the middle, in such a manner as that, when put together, the hole in one bone falls into a line, and corresponds with the holes in the two bones contiguous to it; by which means the perforated pieces, when joined, form an entire, close, uninterrupted channel, at least whilst the spine is upright and at rest. But as a settled posture is inconsistent with its use, a great difficulty still remained, which was to prevent the vertebræ shifting upon one another, so as to break the line of the canal as often as the body moves or twists; or the joints gaping externally whenever the body is bent forward, and the spine thereupon made to take the form of a bow. These dangers, which are mechanical, are mechanically provided against. The vertebræ, by means of their processes and projections, and of the articulations which some of these form with one another at their extremities, are so locked in and confined, as to maintain, in what are called the bodies, or broad surfaces of the bones, the relative position nearly unaltered; and to throw the change and the pressure produced by flexion almost entirely upon the intervening cartilages, the springiness and yielding nature of whose substance admits of all the motion which is necessary to be performed upon them, without any chasm being produced by

a separation of the parts. I say, of all the motion which is necessary; for although we bend our backs to every degree almost of inclination, the motion of each vertebra is very small: such is the advantage we receive from the chain being composed of so many links, the spine of so many bones. Had it consisted of three or four bones only, in bending the body, the spinal marrow must have been bruised at every angle. The reader need not be told that these intervening cartilages are gristles; and he may see them in perfection in a loin of veal. Their form also favours the same intention. They are thicker before than behind; so that, when we stoop forward, the compressible substance of the cartilage, yielding in its thicker and anterior part to the force which squeezes it, brings the surfaces of the adjoining vertebræ nearer to the being parallel with one another than they were before, instead of increasing the inclination of their planes, which must have occasioned a fissure or opening between them. Thirdly, for the medullary canal giving out in its course, and in a convenient order, a supply of nerves to different parts of the body, notches are made in the upper and lower edge of every vertebra, two on each edge, equidistant on each side from the middle line of the back. When the vertebræ are put together, these notches, exactly fitting, form small holes, through which the nerves, at each articulation, issue out in pairs, in order to send their branches to every part of the body, and with an equal bounty to both sides of the body. The fourth purpose assigned to the same instrument, is the insertion of the bases of the muscles, and the support of the ends of the ribs; and for this fourth purpose, especially the former part of it, a figure, specifically suited to the design, and unnecessary for the other purposes, is given to the constituent bones. Whilst they are plain, and round, and smooth towards the front, where any roughness or projection might have wounded the adjacent viscera, they run out behind, and on each side, into long processes, to which processes the muscles necessary to the motions of the trunk are fixed; and fixed with such art, that, whilst the vertebræ supply a basis for the muscles, the muscles help to keep these bones in their position, or by their tendons to tie them together.

That most important, however, and general property—namely, the strength of the compages, and the security against luxation—was to be still more specially consulted; for where so many joints were concerned, and where, in every one, derangement would have been fatal, it became a subject of studious precaution. For this purpose, the vertebræ are articulated; that is, the movable joints between them are formed by means of those projections of their substance which we have mentioned under the name of processes; and these so lock in with and overwrap one another, as to secure the body of the vertebra not only from accidentally

slipping, but even from being pushed out of its place by any violence short of that which would break the bone. I have often remarked and admired this structure in the chine of a hare. In this, as in many instances, a plain observer of the animal economy may spare himself the disgust of being present at human dissections, and yet learn enough for his information and satisfaction, by even examining the bones of the animals which come upon his table. Let him take, for example, into his hands a piece of the clean-picked bone of a hare's back, consisting, we will suppose, of three vertebræ. He will find the middle bone of the three so implicated, by means of its projections or processes, with the bone on each side of it, that no pressure which he can use will force it out of its place between them. It will give way neither forward, nor backward, nor on either side. In whichever direction he pushes, he perceives, in the form, or junction, or overlapping of the bones, an impediment opposed to his attempt—a check and guard against dislocation. In one part of the spine he will find a still further fortifying expedient, in the mode according to which the ribs are annexed to the spine. Each rib rests upon two vertebræ. That is the thing to be remarked, and any one may remark it in carving a neck of mutton. The manner of it is this: The end of the rib is divided by a middle ridge into two surfaces, which surfaces are joined to the bodies of two contiguous vertebræ, the ridge applying itself to the intervening cartilage. Now, this is the very contrivance which is employed in the famous iron-bridge at my door at Bishop-Wearmouth, and for the same purpose of stability—namely, the checks of the bars, which pass between the arches, ride across the joints, by which the pieces composing each arch are united. Each cross-bar rests upon two of these pieces at their place of junction; and by that position resists, at least in one direction, any tendency in either piece to slip out of its place. Thus perfectly, by one means or the other, is the danger of slipping laterally, or of being drawn aside out of the *line* of the back, provided against; and to withstand the bones being pulled asunder longitudinally, or in the direction of that line, a strong membrane runs from one end of the chain to the other, sufficient to resist any force which is ever likely to act in the direction of the back, or parallel to it, and consequently to secure the whole combination in their places. The general result is, that not only the motions of the human body necessary for the ordinary offices of life are performed with safety, but that it is an accident hardly ever heard of, that even the gesticulations of a harlequin distort his spine.

Upon the whole, and as a guide to those who may be inclined to carry the consideration of this subject further, there are three views under which the spine ought to be regarded, and in all which it cannot fail to excite our admiration. These views relate

to its articulations, its ligaments, and its perforation; and to the corresponding advantages which the body derives from it, for action, for strength, and for that which is essential to every part —a secure communication with the brain.

The structure of the spine is not in general different in different animals. In the serpent tribe, however, it is considerably varied, but with a strict reference to the conveniency of the animal. For whereas in quadrupeds the number of vertebræ is from thirty to forty, in the serpent it is nearly one hundred and fifty; whereas in men and quadrupeds the surfaces of the bones are flat, and these flat surfaces laid one against the other, and bound tight by sinews, in the serpent the bones play one within another like a ball-and-socket,* so that they have a free motion upon one another in every direction—that is to say, in men and quadrupeds, firmness is more consulted; in serpents, pliancy. Yet even pliancy is not obtained at the expense of safety. The backbone of a serpent, for coherence and flexibility, is one of the most curious pieces of animal mechanism with which we are acquainted. The chain of a watch (I mean the chain which passes between the spring-barrel and the fusee), which aims at the same properties, is but a bungling piece of workmanship in comparison with that of which we speak.

[There are numerous orders of animals, however, into whose formation a vertebral column does not enter; and this unquestionably is the most strongly-marked division throughout the whole animated creation. In the structure of the various races which possess a spine, the general law may be said to be, that the solid parts are situated interiorly, while the soft parts are ranged around them exteriorly. This law is directly, and almost uniformly, reversed with regard to the classes of animals which belong to the invertebrated division. The firm parts of the animal frame are in these placed externally, and enclose all the softer organs. And thus is the want of an internal framework or skeleton compensated by the existence of hard calcareous coverings, which afford protection in an equal degree, and which enable the creatures possessing them to fill a place in that universe, every corner of which seems to have been destined for the habitation of sentient and enjoying beings, all modified in formation and habits to suit their necessarily infinitely varied circumstances.]

IV. The reciprocal enlargement and contraction of the *chest*, to allow for the play of the lungs, depends upon a simple yet beautiful mechanical contrivance, referable to the structure of the bones which enclose it. The ribs are articulated to the backbone, or rather to its side projections *obliquely*; that is, in their natural

* Der. Phys. Theol. p. 396.

position they bend or slope from the place of articulation downwards. But the basis upon which they rest at this end being fixed, the consequence of the obliquity, or the inclination downwards, is, that when they come to move, whatever pulls the ribs upwards, necessarily, at the same time, draws them out, and that, whilst the ribs are brought to a right angle with the spine behind, the sternum, or part of the chest to which they are attached in front, is thrust forward. The simple action, therefore, of the elevating muscles does the business; whereas, if the ribs had been articulated with the bodies of the vertebræ at right angles, the cavity of the thorax could never have been further enlarged by a change of their position. If each rib had been a rigid bone, articulated at both ends to fixed bases, the whole chest had been immovable. Keill has observed, that the breast-bone, in an easy inspiration, is thrust out one-tenth of an inch; and he calculates that this, added to what is gained to the space within the chest by the flattening or descent of the diaphragm, leaves room for forty-two cubic inches of air to enter at every drawing in of the breath. When there is a necessity for a deeper and more laborious inspiration, the enlargement of the capacity of the chest may be so increased by effort, as that the lungs may be distended with seventy or a hundred such cubic inches.* The thorax, says Schelhammer, forms a kind of bellows, such as never have been, nor probably will be, made by any artificer.

V. The *patella*, or knee-pan, is a curious little bone, in its form and office unlike any other bone of the body. It is circular, the size of a crown piece, pretty thick, a little convex on both sides, and covered with a smooth cartilage. It lies upon the front of the knee; and the powerful tendons by which the leg is brought forward, pass through it (or rather it makes a part of their continuation) from their origin in the thigh to their insertion in the tibia. It protects both the tendon and the joint from any injury which either might suffer by the rubbing of one against the other, or by the pressure of unequal surfaces. It also gives to the tendons a very considerable mechanical advantage, by altering the line of their direction, and by advancing it farther out from the centre of motion; and this upon the principles of the resolution of force, upon which principles all machinery is founded. These are its uses. But what is most observable in it is, that it appears to be supplemental, as it were, to the frame; added, as it should almost seem, afterward; not quite necessary but very convenient. It is separate from the other bones; that is, it is not connected with any other bones by the common mode of union. It is soft, or hardly formed, in infancy; and produced by an ossification, of the inception or progress of which no account can be given from the structure or exercise of the part.

* Anat. p. 229.

VI. The *shoulder-blade* is, in some material respects, a very singular bone—appearing to be made so expressly for its own purpose, and so independently of every other reason. In such quadrupeds as have no collar-bones, which are by far the greater number, the shoulder-blade has no bony communication with the trunk either by a joint or process, or in any other way. It does not grow to, or out of, any other bone of the trunk. It does not apply to any other bone of the trunk (I know not whether this be true of any second bone in the body, except perhaps the *os hyoides*): in strictness, it forms no part of the skeleton. It is bedded in the flesh, attached only to the muscles. It is no other than a foundation bone for the arm, laid in, separate, as it were, and distinct, from the general ossification. The lower limbs connect themselves at the hip with bones which form part of the skeleton; but this connection in the upper limbs being wanting, a basis, whereupon the arm might be articulated, was to be supplied by a detached ossification for the purpose.*

OF THE JOINTS.

I. The above are a few examples of bones made remarkable by their configuration; but to almost all the bones belong *joints*, and in these, still more clearly than in the form or shape of

* [The absence of any attachment between the shoulder-blade and other bones in the frame of certain quadrupeds is a provision of the utmost utility, if not, indeed, indispensably necessary. Let us examine the structure of the horse, for example. The speed of the horse results from the strength of the loins and hinder extremities; by the muscles situated in these parts is the animal propelled in leaping, galloping, and every rapid movement. Now, were the fore-limbs joined to the rest of the body by a powerful bony attachment, they could not withstand the shock from the descent of the whole weight of the frame, thrown forwards as it is at speed. Dislocation or fracture would be the probable consequence; whereas, with the shoulder-blade imbedded in strong muscles which yield and admit of motion to a certain extent, no such result ensues. To give an additional power of resistance to the fore-quarters of the horse against the shock in leaping, the shoulder-blade, from which the bones of the fore-leg depend, and these bones themselves, are not placed in a straight line with each other, but hold relatively a slanting or angular position, so that the force of the shock is diffused, and rendered as slight as possible, by the intervention of the very same mathematical principles which would have been employed in a piece of human mechanism. In the elephant and ox, whose motions are slow, we find the shoulder-blade and the bones of the fore-limb placed in a perpendicular line, one above the other.

The collar-bone, moreover, exists in man, in order that, by its union with the shoulder-blade, the latter bone may be held out from the body in such a manner as to give the arm which depends from it room to swing freely, and to permit of motion in every direction, whether backwards or forwards, lateral or rotatory. In the horse, and many other quadrupeds, the fore-limb requires no such complication of movements, and, besides, has the anterior half of the body to support. In them, therefore, the clavicle is not necessary. In the digging quadrupeds, such as the porcupine, in the climbing animals, such as the squirrel, and in those which strike with the paw, such as the cat and lion, a certain degree of sweeping and lateral motion in the fore-limbs is required; and these creatures, accordingly, are found to possess the collar-bone more or less fully developed.]

the bones themselves, are seen both contrivance and contriving wisdom. Every joint is a curiosity, and is also strictly mechanical. There is the hinge-joint, and the mortice-and-tenon joint; each as manifestly such, and as accurately defined, as any which can be produced out of a cabinet-maker's shop; and one or the other prevails, as either is adapted to the motion which is wanted: for example, a mortice-and-tenon, or ball-and-socket joint, is not required at the knee, the leg standing in need only of a motion backward and forward in the same plane, for which a hinge-joint is sufficient; a mortice-and-tenon, or ball-and-socket joint, is wanted at the hip, that not only the progressive step may be provided for, but the interval between the limbs may be enlarged or contracted at pleasure. Now, observe what would have been the inconveniency—that is, both the superfluity and the defect of articulation, if the case had been inverted—if the ball-and-socket joint had been at the knee, and the hinge-joint at the hip. The thighs must have been kept constantly together, and the legs have been loose and straddling. There would have been no use, that we know of, in being able to turn the calves of the legs before; and there would have been great confinement by restraining the motion of the thighs to one plane. The disadvantage would not have been less if the joints at the hip and the knee had been both of the same sort; both balls-and-sockets, or both hinges: yet why, independently of utility, and of a Creator who consulted that utility, should the same bone (the thigh-bone) be rounded at one end and channelled at the other?

The *hinge-joint* is not formed by a bolt passing through the two parts of the hinge, and thus keeping them in their places; but by a different expedient. A strong, tough, parchment-like membrane, rising from the receiving bones, and inserted all round the received bones a little below their heads, encloses the joint on every side. This membrane ties, confines, and holds the ends of the bones together; keeping the corresponding parts of the joint—that is, the relative convexities and concavities—in close application to each other.

For the *ball-and-socket joint*, beside the membrane already described, there is in some important joints, as an additional security, a short, strong, yet flexible ligament, inserted by one end into the head of the ball, by the other into the bottom of the cup; which ligament keeps the two parts of the joint so firmly in their place, that none of the motions which the limb naturally performs, none of the jerks and twists to which it is ordinarily liable, nothing less, indeed, than the utmost and the most unnatural violence, can pull them asunder. It is hardly imaginable how great a force is necessary, even to stretch, still more to break, this ligament; yet so flexible is it, as to oppose no impediment to the suppleness of the joint. By its situation, also, it is inacces-

sible to injury from sharp edges. As it cannot be ruptured (such is its strength), so it cannot be cut, except by an accident which would sever the limb. If I had been permitted to frame a proof of contrivance, such as might satisfy the most distrustful inquirer, I know not whether I could have chosen an example of mechanism more unequivocal, or more free from objection, than this ligament. Nothing can be more mechanical; nothing, however subservient to the safety, less capable of being generated by the action of the joint. I would particularly solicit the reader's attention to this provision, as it is found in the head of the *thigh-bone;* to its strength, its structure, and its use. It is an instance upon which I lay my hand. One single fact, weighed by a mind in earnest, leaves oftentimes the deepest impression. For the purpose of addressing different understandings and different apprehensions—for the purpose of sentiment, for the purpose of exciting admiration of the Creator's works, we diversify our views, we multiply examples; but for the purpose of strict argument, one clear instance is sufficient; and not only sufficient, but capable perhaps of generating a firmer assurance than what can arise from a divided attention.

The *ginglymus*, or hinge-joint, does not, it is manifest, admit of a ligament of the same kind with that of the ball-and-socket joint, but it is always fortified by the species of ligament of which it does admit. The strong, firm, investing membrane above described accompanies it in every part: and in particular joints, this membrane, which is properly a ligament, is considerably stronger on the sides than either before or behind, in order that the convexities may play true in their concavities, and not be subject to slip sideways, which is the chief danger; for the muscular tendons generally restrain the parts from going farther than they ought to go in the plane of their motion. In the *knee*, which is a joint of this form, and of great importance, there are superadded to the common provisions for the stability of the joint two strong ligaments which cross each other, and cross each other in such a manner as to secure the joint from being displaced in any assignable direction. 'I think,' says Cheselden, 'that the knee cannot be completely dislocated without breaking the *cross* ligaments.'* We can hardly help comparing this with the binding up of a fracture, where the fillet is almost always strapped across, for the sake of giving firmness and strength to the bandage.

Another no less important joint, and that also of the ginglymus sort, is the *ankle;* yet, though important (in order, perhaps, to preserve the symmetry and lightness of the limb), *small*, and on that account more liable to injury. Now this joint is strengthened—that is, is defended from dislocation—by two remarkable

* Ches. Anat. p. 45, ed. 7th.

processes or prolongations of the bones of the leg; which processes form the protuberances that we call the inner and outer ankle. It is part of each bone going down lower than the other part, and thereby overlapping the joint: so that, if the joint be in danger of slipping outward, it is curbed by the inner projection—that is, that of the tibia; if inward, by the outward projection—that is, that of the fibula. Between both, it is locked in its position. I know no account that can be given of this structure, except its utility. Why should the tibia terminate at its lower extremity with a double end, and the fibula the same, but to barricade the joint on both sides by a continuation of part of the thickness of the bone over it? The joint at the *shoulder*, compared with the joint at the *hip*, though both ball-and-socket joints, discovers a difference in their form and proportions well suited to the different offices which the limbs have to execute. The cup or socket at the shoulder is much shallower and flatter than it is at the hip, and is also in part formed of cartilage set round the rim of the cup. The socket into which the head of the thigh-bone is inserted is deeper, and made of more solid materials. This agrees with the duties assigned to each part. The arm is an instrument of motion, principally if not solely. Accordingly, the shallowness of the socket at the shoulder, and the yieldingness of the cartilaginous substance with which its edge is set round, and which, in fact, composes a considerable part of its concavity, are excellently adapted for the allowance of a free motion and a wide range, both of which the arm wants; whereas the lower limb, forming a part of the column of the body—having to support the body as well as to be the means of its locomotion—firmness was to be consulted as well as action. With a capacity for motion, in all directions indeed, as at the shoulder, but not in any direction to the same extent as in the arm, was to be united stability, or resistance to dislocation. Hence the deeper excavation of the socket, and the presence of a less proportion of cartilage upon the edge.

The suppleness and pliability of the joints we every moment experience; and the *firmness* of animal articulation, the property we have hitherto been considering, may be judged of from this single observation, that at any given moment of time, there are millions of animal joints in complete repair and use, for one that is dislocated; and this, notwithstanding the contortions and wrenches to which the limbs of animals are continually subject.

II. The *joints*, or rather the ends of the bones which form them, display also, in their configuration, another use. The nerves, blood-vessels, and tendons, which are necessary to the life, or for the motion of the limbs, must, it is evident, in their way from the trunk of the body to the place of their destination, travel over the movable joints; and it is no less evident that in

this part of their course they will have, from sudden motions and from abrupt changes of curvature, to encounter the danger of compression, attrition, or laceration. To guard fibres so tender against consequences so injurious, their path is in those parts protected with peculiar care, and that by a provision in the figure of the bones themselves. The nerves which supply the *fore-arm*, especially the inferior cubital nerves, are at the elbow conducted by a kind of covered way between the condyls, or rather under the inner exuberances of the bone which composes the upper part of the arm.* At the *knee*, the extremity of the thigh-bone is divided by a sinus or cliff into two heads or protuberances; and these heads on the back part stand out beyond the cylinder of the bone. Through the hollow which lies between the hind-parts of these two heads—that is to say, under the ham, between the ham-strings and within the concave recess of the bone formed by the exuberances on each side; in a word, along a defile; between rocks—pass the great vessels and nerves which go to the leg.† Who led these vessels by a road so defended and secured? In the joint at the *shoulder*, in the edge of the cup which receives the head of the bone, is a *notch*, which is joined or covered at the top with a ligament. Through this hole, thus guarded, the blood-vessels steal to their destination in the arm, instead of mounting over the edge of the concavity.‡

[Another striking example of the provision of a distinct passage for vessels, where they have to pass over a surface of bone sparingly covered with soft parts, is to be observed on the forehead; where an artery, having to pass out from the eye to the forehead, is secured from the danger of traversing the ridge by a small hole (occasionally a niche) in the rim of the socket, adapted for its outlet.]

III. In all joints, the ends of the bones, which work against each other, are tipped with *gristle*. In the ball-and-socket joint, the cup is lined, and the ball capped with it. The smooth surface, the elastic and unfriable nature of cartilage, render it of all substances the most proper for the place and purpose. I should therefore have pointed this out amongst the foremost of the provisions which have been made in the joints for the facilitating of their action, had it not been alleged that cartilage, in truth, is only nascent or imperfect bone; and that the bone in these places is kept soft and imperfect, in consequence of a more complete and rigid ossification being prevented from taking place by the continual motion and rubbing of the surfaces. Which being so, what we represent as a designed advantage, is an unavoidable effect. I am far from being convinced that this is a true account of the fact; or that, if it were so, it answers the argument. To me, the

* Ches. Anat. p. 255, ed. 7th. † Ib. p. 35. ‡ Ib. p. 30.

surmounting of the ends of the bones with gristle looks more like a plating with a different metal, than like the same metal kept in a different state by the action to which it is exposed. At all events, we have a great particular benefit, though arising from a general constitution; but this last not being quite what my argument requires, lest I should seem, by applying the instance, to overrate its value, I have thought it fair to state the question which attends it.*

IV. In some joints, very particularly in the knees, there are loose cartilages or gristles between the bones and within the joint, so that the ends of the bones, instead of working upon one another, work upon the intermediate cartilages. Cheselden has observed,† that the contrivance of a loose ring is practised by mechanics, where the friction of the joints of any of their machines is great; as between the parts of crook-hinges of large gates, or under the head of the male screw of large vices. The cartilages of which we speak have very much of the form of these rings. The comparison, moreover, shows the reason why we find them in the knees rather than in other joints. It is an expedient, we have seen, which a mechanic resorts to only when some strong and heavy work is to be done. So here the thigh-bone has to achieve its motion at the knee, with the whole weight of the body pressing upon it, and often, as in rising from our seat, with the whole weight of the body to lift. It should seem also, from Cheselden's account, that the slipping and sliding of the loose cartilages, though it be probably a small and obscure change, humoured the motion of the end of the thigh-bone, under the particular configuration which was necessary to be given to it for the commodious action of the tendons, and which configuration requires what he calls a variable socket—that is, a concavity, the lines of which assume a different curvature in different inclinations of the bones.

V. We have now done with the configuration: but there is also in the joints, and that common to them all, another exquisite provision, manifestly adapted to their use, and concerning which

* [The argument that cartilage is merely incipient bone, and kept in its soft state by circumstances, is chiefly based upon the fact, that the cartilages of the ribs and of other parts are occasionally found converted to bone. But upon the same principle, the muscular structure should be termed incipient bone, since the muscular mass of the heart, and the coats of arteries, are frequently found in a state of partial ossification. Besides, in the frames of children incapable, from congenital diseases or defects, of performing the usual movements of the body, the cartilages between the bones of the spine present themselves in the usual numbers and distribution. Here, then, we have cartilage, said to be the product of certain circumstances of motion, existing in the absence of these circumstances altogether. In short, the attempt to refer the presence of this structure to the necessity of situation, on account of its very aptitude for the purpose it serves, seems as hopeless as it is when directed, as we have stated it to be, to other things.]

† Ches. Anat. p. 13, ed. 7th.

there can, I think, be no dispute—namely, the regular supply of a *mucilage* more emollient and slippery than oil itself, which is constantly softening and lubricating the parts that rub upon each other, and thereby diminishing the effect of attrition in the highest possible degree. For the continual secretion of this important liniment, and for the feeding of the cavities of the joint with it, glands are fixed near each joint; the excretory ducts of which glands, dripping with their balsamic contents, hang loose like fringes within the cavity of the joints. A late improvement in what are called friction-wheels, which consist of a mechanism so ordered, as to be regularly dropping oil into a box, which encloses the axis, the nave, and certain balls upon which the nave revolves, may be said, in some sort, to represent the contrivance in the animal joint; with this superiority, however, on the part of the joint—namely, that here the oil is not only dropped, but *made*.

In considering the joints, there is nothing perhaps which ought to move our gratitude more than the reflection, *how well they wear*. A limb shall swing upon its hinge, or play in its socket, many hundred times in an hour, for sixty years together, without diminution of its agility; which is a long time for anything to last—for anything so much worked and exercised as the joints are. This durability I should attribute, in part, to the provision which is made for the preventing of wear and tear—first, by the polish of the cartilaginous surfaces; secondly, by the healing lubrication of the mucilage; and in part to that astonishing property of animal constitutions, assimilation, by which, in every portion of the body, let it consist of what it will, substance is restored and waste repaired.

Movable joints, I think, compose the curiosity of bones; but their union, even where no motion is intended or wanted, carries marks of mechanism and of mechanical wisdom. The teeth, especially the front teeth, are one bone fixed in another, like a peg driven into a board. The sutures of the skull are like the edges of two saws clapped together, in such a manner as that the teeth of one enter the intervals of the other. We have sometimes one bone lapping over another, and planed down at the edges; sometimes also the thin lamella of one bone received into a narrow furrow of another. In all which varieties we seem to discover the same design—namely, firmness of juncture, without clumsiness in the seam.*

* [How admirably all these various forms of suture, or jointing, serve their purpose of giving additional protection to the delicate and vital organs within, is shown in cases where the skull has been subjected to violent external injury. In very few instances does a fracture occur in the course of the sutures, and still more rarely does the rupture cross the line of these immovable joints.]

CHAPTER IX.

OF THE MUSCLES.

Muscles, with their tendons, are the instruments by which animal motion is performed. It will be our business to point out instances in which, and properties with respect to which, the disposition of these muscles is as strictly mechanical as that of the wires and strings of a puppet.

I. We may observe what, I believe, is universal, an exact relation between the joint and the muscles which move it. Whatever motion the joint, by its mechanical construction, is capable of performing, that motion the annexed muscles, by their position, are capable of producing. For example, if there be, as at the knee and elbow, a hinge-joint, capable of motion only in the same plane, the leaders, as they are called—that is, the muscular tendons—are placed in directions parallel to the bone, so as, by the contraction or relaxation of the muscles to which they belong, to produce that motion and no other. If these joints were capable of a freer motion, there are no muscles to produce it. Whereas at the shoulder and the hip, where the ball-and-socket joint allows, by its construction, of a rotatory or sweeping motion, tendons are placed in such a position, and pull in such a direction, as to produce the motion of which the joint admits. For instance, the sartorius or tailor's muscle, rising from the spine, running diagonally across the thigh, and taking hold of the inside of the main bone of the leg, a little below the knee, enables us, by its contraction, to throw one leg and thigh over the other; giving effect at the same time to the ball-and-socket joint at the hip and the hinge-joint at the knee. There is, as we have seen, a specific mechanism in the bones for the rotatory motions of the head and hands; there is also in the oblique direction of the muscles belonging to them a specific provision for the putting of this mechanism of the bones into action. And mark the consent of uses. The oblique muscles would have been inefficient without that particular articulation; that particular articulation would have been lost without the oblique muscles. It may be proper, however, to observe, with respect to the *head*, although I think it does not vary the case, that its oblique motions and inclinations are often motions in a *diagonal*, produced by the joint action of muscles lying in straight directions. But whether the pull be single or combined, the articulation is always such as to be capable of obeying the action of the muscles. The oblique muscles attached to the head are likewise so disposed, as to be

capable of steadying the globe as well as of moving it. The head of a new-born infant is often obliged to be filletted up. After death, the head drops and rolls in every direction. So that it is by the equilibre of the muscles, by the aid of a considerable and equipollent muscular force in constant exertion, that the head maintains its erect posture. The muscles here supply what would otherwise be a great defect in the articulation; for the joint in the neck, though admirably adapted to the motion of the head, is insufficient for its support. It is not only by the means of a most curious structure of the bones that a man turns his head, but by virtue of an adjusted muscular power that he even holds it up.

As another example of what we are illustrating—namely, conformity of use between the bones and the muscles—it has been observed of the different vertebræ, that their processes are exactly proportioned to the quantity of motion which the other bones allow of, and which the respective muscles are capable of producing.

II. A muscle acts only by contraction. Its force is exerted in no other way. When the exertion ceases, it relaxes itself—that is, it returns by relaxation to its former state, but without energy. This is the nature of the muscular fibre; and being so, it is evident that the reciprocal *energetic* motion of the limbs, by which we mean motion *with force* in opposite directions, can only be produced by the instrumentality of opposite or antagonist muscles —of flexors and extensors answering to each other. For instance, the *biceps* and *brachiæus internus* muscles placed in the front part of the upper arm, by their contraction, bend the elbow, and with such degree of force as the case requires or the strength admits of. The relaxation of these muscles, after the effort, would merely let the fore-arm drop down. For the *back stroke*, therefore, and that the arm may not only bend at the elbow, but also extend and straighten itself, with force, other muscles, the *longus* and *brevis brachiæus externus* and the *anconæus*, placed on the hinder part of the arms, by their contractile twitch fetch back the fore-arm into a straight line with the cubit, with no less force than that with which it was bent out of it. The same thing obtains in all the limbs, and in every movable part of the body. A finger is not bent and straightened without the *contraction* of two muscles taking place. It is evident, therefore, that the animal functions require that particular disposition of the muscles which we describe by the name of antagonist muscles. And they are accordingly so disposed. Every muscle is provided with an adversary. They act, like two sawyers in a pit, by an opposite pull; and nothing, surely, can more strongly indicate design and attention to an end than their being thus stationed—than this collocation. The nature of the muscular fibre being what it is, the purposes of the animal could be answered by no other. And not

only the capacity for motion, but the aspect and symmetry of the body, is preserved by the muscles being marshalled according to this order; for example, the mouth is holden in the middle of the face, and its angles kept in a state of exact correspondency, by two muscles drawing against and balancing each other. In a hemiplegia, when the muscle on one side is weakened, the muscle on the other side draws the mouth awry.

III. Another property of the muscles, which could only be the result of care, is their being almost universally so disposed as not to obstruct or interfere with one another's action. I know but one instance in which this impediment is perceived. We cannot easily swallow whilst we gape. This, I understand, is owing to the muscles employed in the act of deglutition being so implicated with the muscles of the lower jaw, that whilst these last are contracted, the former cannot act with freedom. The obstruction is in this instance attended with little inconveniency; but it shows what the effect is where it does exist, and what loss of faculty there would be if it were more frequent. Now, when we reflect upon the number of muscles—not fewer than four hundred and forty-six in the human body, known and named*—how contiguous they lie to each other, in layers, as it were, over one another, crossing one another, sometimes imbedded in one another, sometimes perforating one another—an arrangement which leaves to each its liberty and its full play, must necessarily require meditation and counsel.

IV. The following is oftentimes the case with the muscles: their action is wanted, where their situation would be inconvenient; in which case the body of the muscle is placed in some commodious position at a distance, and made to communicate with the point of action by slender strings or wires. If the muscles which move the fingers had been placed in the palm or back of the hand, they would have swelled that part to an awkward and clumsy thickness: the beauty, the proportions of the part, would have been destroyed. They are therefore disposed in the arm, and even up to the elbow; and act by long tendons, strapped down at the wrist, and passing under the ligaments to the fingers, and to the joints of the fingers, which they are severally to move. In like manner, the muscles which move the toes, and many of the joints of the foot, how gracefully are they disposed in the calf of the leg, instead of forming an unwieldy tumefaction in the foot itself! The observation may be repeated of the muscle which draws the nictitating membrane over the eye. Its office is in the front of the eye; but its body is lodged in the back part of the globe, where it lies safe, and where it encumbers nothing.

* Keill's Anatomy, p. 295, ed. 3.

V. The great mechanical variety in the figure of the muscles may be thus stated. It appears to be a fixed law that the contraction of a muscle shall be towards its centre. Therefore the subject for mechanism on each occasion is, so to modify the figure, and adjust the position of the muscle, as to produce the motion required, agreeably with this law. This can only be done by giving to different muscles a diversity of configuration suited to their several offices and to their situation with respect to the work which they have to perform. On which account we find them under a multiplicity of forms and attitudes; sometimes with double, sometimes with treble tendons, sometimes with none: sometimes one tendon to several muscles, at other times one muscle to several tendons. The shape of the organ is susceptible of an incalculable variety, whilst the original property of the muscle, the law and line of its contraction, remains the same, and is simple. Herein the muscular system may be said to bear a perfect resemblance to our works of art. An artist does not alter the native quality of his materials, or their laws of action. He takes these as he finds them. His skill and ingenuity are employed in turning them, such as they are, to his account, by giving to the parts of his machine a form and relation, in which these unalterable properties may operate to the production of the effects intended.

VI. The ejaculations can never too often be repeated—How many things must go right for us to be an hour at ease!—how many more for us to be vigorous and active! Yet vigour and activity are, in a vast plurality of instances, preserved in human bodies, notwithstanding that they depend upon so great a number of instruments of motion, and notwithstanding that the defect or disorder sometimes of a very small instrument—of a single pair, for instance, out of the four hundred and forty-six muscles which are employed—may be attended with grievous inconveniency. There is piety and good sense in the following observation, taken out of the *Religious Philosopher*:—'With much compassion,' says this writer, 'as well as astonishment at the goodness of our loving Creator, have I considered the sad state of a certain gentleman, who, as to the rest, was in pretty good health, but only wanted the use of these *two little muscles* that serve to lift up the eyelids, and so had almost lost the use of his sight, being forced, as long as this defect lasted, to shove up his eyelids every moment with his own hands!' In general, we may remark in how small a degree those who enjoy the perfect use of their organs know the comprehensiveness of the blessing, the variety of their obligation. They perceive a result, but they think little of the multitude of concurrences and rectitudes which go to form it.

Beside these observations, which belong to the muscular organ as such, we may notice some advantages of structure which are

more conspicuous in muscles of a certain class or description than in others. Thus:

I. The variety, quickness, and precision of which muscular motion is capable, are seen, I think, in no part so remarkably as in the *tongue*. It is worth any man's while to watch the agility of his tongue; the wonderful promptitude with which it executes changes of position, and the perfect exactness. Each syllable of articulated sound requires for its utterance a specific action of the tongue, and of the parts adjacent to it. The disposition and configuration of the mouth, appertaining to every letter and word, is not only peculiar, but, if nicely and accurately attended to, perceptible to the sight; insomuch that curious persons have availed themselves of this circumstance to teach the deaf to speak, and to understand what is said by others. In the same person, and after his habit of speaking is formed, one, and only one, position of the parts will produce a given articulate sound correctly. How instantaneously are these positions assumed and dismissed!—how numerous are the permutations, how various, yet how infallible! Arbitrary and antic variety is not the thing we admire; but variety obeying a rule, conducing to an effect, and commensurate with exigencies infinitely diversified. I believe, also, that the anatomy of the tongue corresponds with these observations upon its activity. The muscles of the tongue are so numerous, and so implicated with one another, that they cannot be traced by the nicest dissection; nevertheless (which is a great perfection of the organ), neither the number, nor the complexity, nor what might seem to be the entanglement of its fibres, in anywise impede its motion, or render the determination or success of its efforts uncertain.

I here intreat the reader's permission to step a little out of my way to consider *the parts of the mouth* in some of their other properties. It has been said, and that by an eminent physiologist, that whenever nature attempts to work two or more purposes by one instrument, she does both or all imperfectly. Is this true of the tongue, regarded as an instrument of speech and of taste; or regarded as an instrument of speech, of taste, and of deglutition? So much otherwise, that many persons—that is to say, nine hundred and ninety-nine persons out of a thousand—by the instrumentality of this one organ, talk, and taste, and swallow very well. In fact, the constant warmth and moisture of the tongue, the thinness of the skin, the papillæ upon its surface, qualify this organ for its office of tasting, as much as its inextricable multiplicity of fibres do for the rapid movements which are necessary to speech. Animals which feed upon grass have their tongues covered with a perforated skin, so as to admit the dissolved food to the papillæ underneath, which in the meantime remain defended from the rough action of the unbruised spiculæ.

There are brought together within the cavity of the mouth more distinct uses, and parts executing more distinct offices, than I think can be found lying so near to one another, or within the same compass, in any other portion of the body: namely, teeth of different shape—first, for cutting; secondly, for grinding;* muscles, most artificially disposed for carrying on the compound motion of the lower jaw, half lateral and half vertical, by which the mill is worked; fountains of saliva, springing up in different parts of the cavity for the moistening of the food whilst the mastication is going on; glands, to feed the fountains; a muscular constriction, of a very peculiar kind, in the back part of the cavity, for the guiding of the prepared aliment into its passage towards the stomach, and in many cases for carrying it along that passage; for although we may imagine this to be done simply by the weight of the food itself, it in truth is not so, even in the upright posture of the human neck; and most evidently is not the case with quadrupeds, with a horse, for instance, in which, when pasturing, the food is thrust upward by muscular strength, instead of descending of its own accord.

In the meantime, and within the same cavity, is going on another business, altogether different from what is here described —that of respiration and speech. In addition, therefore, to all that has been mentioned, we have a passage opened, from this cavity to the lungs, for the admission of air, exclusively of every other substance: we have muscles, some in the larynx, and without number in the tongue, for the purpose of modulating that air in its passage, with a variety, a compass, and precision, of which no other musical instrument is capable. And lastly, which in my opinion crowns the whole as a piece of machinery, we have a specific contrivance for dividing the pneumatic part from the mechanical, and for preventing one set of actions interfering with

* [From the order alone in which the teeth are disposed in the mouth, a strong argument in proof of design may be drawn. If the grinding teeth had been arranged in the fore part of the mouth, while the canine and incisors, or cutting teeth, occupied the back-ground, the utility of the whole would have been materially impaired, if not altogether destroyed. Large masses are never placed in a grinding machine; they must, in the first place, be partially divided. In a mouth with the cutting teeth placed posteriorly, this would be impracticable; since large masses could not be inserted between the upper and under rows at their back part, the jaws there being necessarily close to each other. Were it requisite, many other arguments might be adduced to show how much the use of the teeth would be impaired by a reversal of their order.

Throughout the whole animal kingdom, we find the teeth of each creature in striking consonance with its habits, food, and general form. 'Never,' says a distinguished naturalist, 'do we see in nature the cloven hoof of the ox joined with the pointed fang of the lion, nor the sharp talons of the eagle accompanying the flattened beak of the swan.' So strikingly just is this remark, that the philosopher whom we have quoted, from the possession of little more than a tooth of an extinct animal, was enabled to draw conclusions regarding its general form and habits, which were amply confirmed by the discovery, at a later period, of a complete skeleton.]

the other. Where various functions are united, the difficulty is to guard against the inconveniences of a too great complexity. In no apparatus put together by art, and for the purposes of art, do I know such multifarious uses so aptly combined, as in the natural organisation of the human mouth; or where the structure, compared with the uses, is so simple. The mouth, with all these intentions to serve, is a single cavity; is one machine; with its parts neither crowded nor confused, and each unembarrassed by the rest—each at least at liberty in a degree sufficient for the end to be attained. If we cannot eat and sing at the same moment, we can eat one moment, and sing the next: the respiration proceeding freely all the while.

There is one case, however, of this double office, and that of the *earliest* necessity, which the mouth alone could not perform; and that is, carrying on together the two actions of sucking and breathing. Another route, therefore, is opened for the air—namely, through the nose, which lets the breath pass backward and forward, whilst the lips in the act of sucking are necessarily shut close upon the body from which the nutriment is drawn. This is a circumstance which always appeared to me worthy of notice. The nose would have been necessary, although it had not been the organ of smelling. The making it the seat of a sense was superadding a new use to a part already wanted—was taking a wise advantage of an antecedent and a constitutional necessity.

But to return to that which is the proper subject of the present section—the celerity and precision of muscular motion. These qualities may be particularly observed in the execution of many species of instrumental *music*, in which the changes produced by the hand of the musician are exceedingly rapid; are exactly measured, even when most minute; and display, on the part of the muscles, an obedience of action, alike wonderful for its quickness and its correctness.

Or let a person only observe his own hand whilst he is *writing;* the number of muscles which are brought to bear upon the pen; how the joint and adjusted operation of several tendons is concerned in every stroke, yet that five hundred such strokes are drawn in a minute. Not a letter can be turned without more than one, or two, or three tendinous contractions, definite both as to the choice of the tendon and as to the space through which the contraction moves; yet how currently does the work proceed!—and when we look at it, how faithful have the muscles been to their duty, how true to the order which endeavour or habit hath inculcated! For let it be remembered that, whilst a man's handwriting is the same, an exactitude of order is preserved, whether he write well or ill. These two instances, of music and writing, show not only the quickness and precision of muscular action, but the docility.

[Regarding the perfection of the hand, and its manifold powers as an instrument, the ancient philosopher Galen enthusiastically observes, that it is applicable to all arts and occasions, whether of peace or of war. For though the lion may have a more powerful weapon in his fangs and claws, and one suited to his nature, yet the hand of man can construct and grasp a much more effective weapon—the spear or the sword, as well as others, which, unlike the lion's, can be used at a distance. The lion may be swifter of foot, but the hand of man can tame a still swifter animal, mounted on which he can escape from, or pursue, the forest king at pleasure. Were man's hand a weapon as strong as the wild beast's, it would be unable to fabricate for him all the numberless instruments and means which make him master of all around him. If the hand were hard, it would be defective in the leading quality of an organ of prehension, which, in order to hold securely substances of every size, form, and consistence, must be to a certain extent yielding in its nature. To increase the range of its grasping powers, the hand has five divisions, one of which is so placed, that, by an easy movement, it can be brought opposite to, and act in co-operation with, one or all of the other four. Without this, its capacity for prehension would be altogether defective. As it is, let bodies, varying in size from a millstone to a millet seed, be successively grasped with the fingers; and so well does the hand fit them all, that it will seem as if made for holding each individual substance alone. How admirably balanced must be the muscular power which admits, with equal ease, of so many modifications of motion!

The quality of yieldingness, however, might be carried too far, and particularly at the tips of the fingers; for these being fleshy and soft, in order to render the touch finer in feeling for minute objects, they might be forced back and injured in compressing hard bodies. To remedy this, we have the tips backed by nails, which support the yielding flesh. The nails, besides, answer other purposes. They enable the fingers to lay firmer hold of minute objects; they assist in polishing and scraping; and, in short, are effective in every operation of the fingers where nicety of touch and execution are required. That man, says Galen, must be deficient in intellect, or sunk in prejudice, who can withhold his admiration from this masterpiece of skill and contrivance—the human hand.]

II. Regarding the particular configuration of muscles, *sphincter* or circular muscles appear to me admirable pieces of mechanism. It is the muscular power most happily applied; the same quality of the muscular substance, but under a new modification. The circular disposition of the fibres is strictly mechanical; but though the most mechanical, is not the only thing in sphincters which deserves our notice. The regulated degree of contractile force

with which they are endowed, sufficient for retention, yet vincible when requisite, together with their ordinary state of actual contraction, by means of which their dependence upon the will is not constant, but occasional, gives to them a constitution of which the conveniency is inestimable. This, their semi-voluntary character, is exactly such as suits with the wants and functions of the animal.

III. We may also, upon the subject of muscles, observe, that many of our most important actions are achieved by the combined help of different muscles. Frequently a diagonal motion is produced, by the contraction of tendons pulling in the direction of the sides of the parallelogram. This is the case, as hath been already noticed, with some of the oblique nutations of the head. Sometimes the number of co-operating muscles is very great. Dr Nieuentyt, in the 'Leipsic Transactions,' reckons up a hundred muscles that are employed every time we breathe; yet we take in or let out our breath without reflecting what a work is thereby performed—what an apparatus is laid in of instruments for the service—and how many such contribute their assistance to the effect! Breathing with ease is a blessing of every moment; yet of all others, it is that which we possess with the least consciousness. A man in an asthma is the only man who knows how to estimate it.

IV. Mr Home has observed,* that the most important and the most delicate actions are performed in the body by the smallest muscles: and he mentions, as his examples, the muscles which have been discovered in the iris of the eye and the drum of the ear. The tenuity of these muscles is astonishing. They are microscopic hairs; must be magnified to be visible; yet are they real effective muscles; and not only such, but the grandest and most precious of our faculties—sight and hearing—depend upon their health and action.

V. The muscles act in the limbs with what is called a mechanical disadvantage. The muscle at the shoulder, by which the arm is raised, is fixed nearly in the same manner as the load is fixed upon a steelyard, within a few decimals, we will say, of an inch from the centre upon which the steelyard turns. In this situation, we find that a very heavy draught is no more than sufficient to countervail the force of a small lead plummet, placed upon the long arm of the steelyard, at the distance of perhaps fifteen or twenty inches from the centre, and on the other side of it. And this is the disadvantage which is meant. And an absolute disadvantage, no doubt, it would be, if the object were to spare the force of muscular contraction. But observe how conducive is this constitution to animal conveniency. Mechanism has always in

* Phil. Trans. Part. i. 1800, p. 8.

view one or other of these two purposes; either to move a great weight slowly, and through a small space, or to move a light weight rapidly, through a considerable sweep. For the former of these purposes, a different species of lever, and a different collocation of the muscles, might be better than the present: but for the second, the present structure is the true one. Now so it happens that the second, and not the first, is that which the occasions of animal life principally call for. In what concerns the human body, it is of much more consequence to any man to be able to carry his hand to his head with due expedition, than it would be to have the power of raising from the ground a heavier load (of two or three more hundredweight, we will suppose) than he can lift at present. This last is a faculty which, on some extraordinary occasions, he may desire to possess; but the other is what he wants, and uses every hour or minute. In like manner a husbandman or a gardener will do more execution, by being able to carry his scythe, his rake, or his flail, with a sufficient despatch through a sufficient space, than if, with greater strength, his motions were proportionably more confined and slow. It is the same with a mechanic in the use of his tools. It is the same also with other animals in the use of their limbs. In general, the vivacity of their motions would be ill exchanged for greater force under a clumsier structure.

We have offered our observations upon the structure of muscles in general; we have also noticed certain species of muscles: but there are also *single* muscles, which bear marks of mechanical contrivance, appropriate as well as particular. Out of many instances of this kind we select the following:—

I. Of muscular actions, even of those which are well understood, some of the most curious are incapable of popular explanation; at least without the aid of plates and figures. This is in a great measure the case with a very familiar, but at the same time a very complicated motion—that of the *lower jaw*, and with the muscular structure by which it is produced. One of the muscles concerned may, however, be described in such a manner, as to be, I think, sufficiently comprehended for our present purpose. The problem is to pull the lower jaw *down*. The obvious method should seem to be, to place a straight muscle—namely, to fix a string from the chin to the breast, the contraction of which would open the mouth and produce the motion required at once. But it is evident that the form and liberty of the neck forbid a muscle being laid in such a position; and that, consistently with the preservation of this form, the motion which we want must be effectuated by some muscular mechanism disposed farther back in the jaw. The mechanism adopted is as follows:—A certain muscle, called the *diagastric*, rises on the side of the face, considerably *above* the insertion of the lower jaw, and comes down, being con-

verted in its progress into a round tendon. Now it is manifest that the tendon, whilst it pursues a direction *descending* towards the jaw, must, by its contraction, pull the jaw up instead of down. What, then, was to be done? This, we find, is done. The descending tendon, when it is got low enough, is passed through a loop, or ring, or pulley, in the *os hyoïdes*, and then made to ascend; and having thus changed its line of direction, is inserted into the inner part of the chin: by which device—namely, the turn at the loop—the action of the muscle (which in all muscles is contraction), that before would have pulled the jaw up, now as necessarily draws it down. 'The mouth,' says Heister, 'is opened by means of this trochlea in a most wonderful and elegant manner.'

II. What contrivance can be more mechanical than the following—namely, a slit in one tendon to let another tendon pass through it? This structure is found in the tendons which move the toes and fingers. The long tendon, as it is called, in the foot, which bends the first joint of the toe, passes *through* the short tendon which bends the second joint; which course allows to the sinew more liberty, and a more commodious action, than it would otherwise have been capable of exerting.* There is nothing, I believe, in a silk or cotton mill, in the belts, or straps, or ropes, by which motion is communicated from one part of the machine to another, that is more artificial, or more evidently so, than this *perforation*.

III. The next circumstance which I shall mention under this head of muscular arrangement, is so decisive a mark of intention, that it always appeared to me to supersede in some measure the necessity of seeking for any other observation upon the subject; and that circumstance is, the tendons which pass from the leg to the foot being bound down by a ligament at the ankle. The foot is placed at a considerable angle with the leg. It is manifest, therefore, that flexible strings passing along the interior of the angle, if left to themselves, would, when stretched, start from it. The obvious preventive is to tie them down. And this is done, in fact. Across the instep, or rather just above it, the anatomist finds a strong ligament, *under* which the tendons pass to the foot. The effect of the ligament as a bandage can be made evident to the senses; for if it be cut, the tendons start up. The simplicity, yet the clearness of this contrivance, its exact resemblance to established resources of art, place it amongst the most indubitable manifestations of design with which we are acquainted.

There is also a further use to be made of the present example, and that is, as it precisely contradicts the opinion that the parts of animals may have been all formed by what is called *appe-*

* Ches. Anat. p. 119.

tency—that is, endeavour, perpetuated, and imperceptibly working its effect, through an incalculable series of generations. We have here no endeavour, but the reverse of it; a constant reluctancy and reluctance. The endeavour is all the other way. The pressure of the ligament constrains the tendons; the tendons react upon the pressure of the ligament. It is impossible that the ligament should ever have been generated by the exercise of the tendon, or in the course of that exercise, forasmuch as the force of the tendon perpendicularly resists the fibre which confines it, and is constantly endeavouring not to form, but to rupture and displace, the threads of which the ligament is composed.

Keill has reckoned up in the human body four hundred and forty-six muscles, dissectible and describable; and hath assigned a use to every one of the number. This cannot be all imagination.

Bishop Wilkins hath observed from Galen, that there are at least ten several qualifications to be attended to in each particular muscle; namely, its proper figure; its just magnitude; its fulcrum; its point of action, supposing the figure to be fixed; its collocation, with respect to its two ends, the upper and the lower; the place; the position of the whole muscle; the introduction into it of nerves, arteries, veins. How are things, including so many adjustments, to be made; or, when made, how are they to be put together, without intelligence?

I have sometimes wondered why we are not struck with mechanism in animal bodies as readily and as strongly as we are struck with it, at first sight, in a watch or a mill. One reason of the difference may be, that animal bodies are in a great measure made up of soft, flabby substances, such as muscles and membranes; whereas we have been accustomed to trace mechanism in sharp lines, in the configuration of hard materials, in the moulding, chiselling, and filling into shapes of such articles as metals or wood. There is something, therefore, of habit in the case; but it is sufficiently evident that there can be no proper reason for any distinction of the sort. Mechanism may be displayed in the one kind of substance as well as in the other. [And, in truth, when so displayed, it is of a higher character; for man, in his works of art and mechanical skill, would often employ substances possessed at the same time of softness and firmness, of elasticity and solidity, were he able to mould them to his purpose, and obviate the difficulties which the presence of qualities so opposite interposes. In the animal machine, these obstacles have been as nothing in the hands of the consummate Artist; we find parts endowed, when necessary, with the most heterogeneous properties, or assuming them all in turns. Of this, that portion of the structure—the muscles—which we have been examining presents an apt example. Soft and yielding at one moment, they are at another

rigid and inflexible. The combination of such qualities in a machine is indeed above the reach of man's art: though he can view and admire the principles, the powers he cannot hope to possess or imitate.]

Although the few instances we have selected, even as they stand in our description, are nothing short, perhaps, of logical proofs of design, yet it must not be forgotten that in every part of anatomy description is a poor substitute for inspection. It is well said by an able anatomist,* and said in reference to the very part of the subject which we have been treating of:—'Imperfecta hæc musculorum descriptio, non minùs arida est legentibus, quàm inspectantibus fuerit jucunda eorundem præparatio. Elegantissima enim mechanicês artificia, creberrimè in illis obvia, verbis nonnisi obscurè exprimuntur: carnium autem ductu tendinum colore, insertionum proportione, et trochlearium distributione, oculis exposita, omnem superant admirationem.'†

CHAPTER X.

OF THE VESSELS OF ANIMAL BODIES.

The circulation of the *blood* through the bodies of men and quadrupeds, and the apparatus by which it is carried on, compose a system, and testify a contrivance, perhaps the best understood of any part of the animal frame. The lymphatic system, or the nervous system, may be more subtile and intricate; nay, it is possible that in their structure they may be even more artificial than the sanguiferous; but we do not know so much about them.

The utility of the circulation of the blood I assume as an acknowledged point. One grand purpose is plainly answered by it —the distributing to every part, every extremity, every nook and corner of the body, the nourishment which is received into it by one aperture. What enters at the mouth finds its way to the fingers' ends. A more difficult mechanical problem could hardly, I think, be proposed, than to discover a method of constantly

* Steno, in Blas. Anat. Animal, p. 2, c. iv.

† [*Translation.*—An imperfect description of the muscles like this, must be as dry in the reading as the actual examination of them by dissection is pleasing and satisfactory. Words can but poorly express the admirable mechanical skill observable in the arrangement of the muscles; it is only when the disposition of the fibres, the beauty of the tendons, the proportion of the attachments, and the distribution of the trochleas, are exhibited to the eye, that they call forth that tribute of wonder and admiration to which they are entitled.]

repairing the waste, and of supplying an accession of substance to every part of a complicated machine, at the same time.

This system presents itself under two views—first, the disposition of the blood-vessels—that is, the laying of the pipes; and secondly, the construction of the engine at the centre—namely, the heart, for driving the blood through them.

I. The disposition of the blood-vessels, as far as regards the supply of the body, is like that of the water-pipes in a city—namely, large and main trunks branching off by smaller pipes (and these again by still narrower tubes) in every direction, and towards every part in which the fluid which they convey can be wanted. So far the water-pipes which serve a town may represent the vessels which carry the blood from the heart. But there is another thing necessary to the blood, which is not wanted for the water; and that is, the carrying of it back again to its source. For this office, a reversed system of vessels is prepared, which, uniting at their extremities with the extremities of the first system, collects the divided and subdivided streamlets—first, by capillary ramifications into larger branches; secondly, by these branches into trunks; and thus returns the blood (almost exactly inverting the order in which it went out) to the fountain whence its motion proceeded. All which is evident mechanism.

The body therefore contains two systems of blood-vessels—arteries and veins. Between the constitution of the systems there are also two differences, suited to the functions which the systems have to execute. The blood, in going out, passing always from wider into narrower tubes, and, in coming back, from narrower into wider, it is evident that the impulse and pressure upon the sides of the blood-vessel will be much greater in the one case than in the other. Accordingly, the arteries which carry out the blood are formed of much tougher and stronger coats than the veins which bring it back. That is one difference; the other is still more artificial, or, if I may so speak, indicates still more clearly the care and anxiety of the Artificer. Forasmuch as in the arteries, by reason of the greater force with which the blood is urged along them, a wound or rupture would be more dangerous than in the veins, these vessels are defended from injury not only by their texture, but by their situation; and by every advantage of situation which can be given to them. They are buried in sinuses, or they creep along grooves, made for them in the bones; for instance, the under edge of the ribs is sloped and furrowed solely for the passage of these vessels. Sometimes they proceed in channels, protected by stout parapets on each side; which last description is remarkable in the bones of the fingers, these being hollowed out on the under side like a scoop, and with such a concavity, that the finger may be cut across to the bone without hurting the artery which runs along it. At other times the

arteries pass in canals wrought in the substance, and in the very middle of the substance, of the bone; this takes place in the lower jaw, and is found where there would otherwise be danger of compression by sudden curvature. All this care is wonderful, yet not more than what the importance of the case required. To those who venture their lives in a ship, it has been often said that there is only an inch-board between them and death; but in the body itself, especially in the arterial system, there is, in many parts, only a membrane, a skin, a thread. For which reason, this system lies deep under the integuments; whereas the veins, in which the mischief that ensues from injuring the coats is much less, lie in general above the arteries; come nearer to the surface; are more exposed.

It may be further observed concerning the two systems taken together, that though the arterial, with its trunk, and branches, and small twigs, may be imagined to issue or proceed—in other words, to *grow* from the heart, like a plant from its root, or the fibres of a leaf from its footstalk (which, however, were it so, would be only to resolve one mechanism into another), yet the venous, the returning system, can never be formed in this manner. The arteries might go on shooting out from their extremities—that is, lengthening and subdividing indefinitely; but an inverted system, continually uniting its streams, instead of dividing, and thus carrying back what the other system carried out, could not be referred to the same process.

II. The next thing to be considered is the engine which works this machinery—namely, the *heart*. For our purpose, it is unnecessary to ascertain the principle upon which the heart acts. Whether it be irritation excited by the contact of the blood, by the influx of the nervous fluid, or whatever else be the cause of its motion, it is something which is capable of producing, in a living muscular fibre, reciprocal contraction and relaxation. This is the power we have to work with; and the inquiry is, how this power is applied in the instance before us. There is provided, in the central part of the body, a hollow muscle, invested with spiral fibres, running in both directions, the layers intersecting one another; in some animals, however, appearing to be semicircular rather than spiral. By the contraction of these fibres, the sides of the muscular cavities are necessarily squeezed together, so as to force out from them any fluid which they may at that time contain; by the relaxation of the same fibres, the cavities are in their turn dilated, and of course prepared to admit every fluid which may be poured into them. Into these cavities are inserted the great trunks, both of the arteries which carry out the blood, and of the veins which bring it back. This is a general account of the apparatus; and the simplest idea of its action is, that by each contraction a portion of blood is forced by a syringe

into the arteries, and at each dilatation an equal portion is received from the veins. This produces, at each pulse, a motion and change in the mass of blood to the amount of what the cavity contains, which, in a full-grown human heart, I understand is about an ounce, or two tablespoonfuls. How quickly these changes succeed one another, and by this succession how sufficient they are to support a stream or circulation throughout the system, may be understood by the following computation, abridged from Keill's Anatomy, p. 117, ed. 3d:—'Each ventricle will at least contain one ounce of blood. The heart contracts four thousand times in one hour; from which it follows that there pass through the heart, every hour, four thousand ounces, or three hundred and fifty pounds of blood. Now, the whole mass of blood is said to be about twenty-five pounds; so that a quantity of blood equal to the whole mass of blood passes through the heart fourteen times in one hour—which is about once every four minutes.' Consider what an affair this is when we come to very large animals. The aörta of a whale is larger in the bore than the main pipe of the waterworks at London Bridge; and the water roaring in its passage through that pipe is inferior, in impetus and velocity, to the blood gushing from the whale's heart. Here is Dr Hunter's account of the dissection of a whale:—'The aörta measured a foot diameter. Ten or fifteen gallons of blood are thrown out of the heart at a stroke, with an immense velocity, through a tube of a foot diameter. The whole idea fills the mind with wonder.'*

[The force with which the human heart expels the arterial blood, may be demonstrated by the simple experiment of placing the ham of one leg upon the knee of the other, and attaching a weight to the foot of the superincumbent one. Though placed at the extremity of a lever, a very heavy load will be moved by the pulsations of the artery in the ham; the vessel having a tendency, at every beat, to straighten the bent limb. In ordinary cases, a weight of fifty pounds will prove unable to counteract or suppress the moving power.]

The account which we have here stated, of the injection of blood into the arteries by the contraction, and of the corresponding reception of it from the veins by the dilatation of the cavities of the heart, and of the circulation being thereby maintained through the blood-vessels of the body, is true, but imperfect. The heart performs this office, but it is in conjunction with another of equal curiosity and importance. It was necessary that the blood should be successively brought into contact, or contiguity, or proximity, with the *air*. I do not know that the chemical reason upon which this necessity is founded has been

* Dr Hunter's Account of the Dissection of a Whale (Phil. Trans.).

yet sufficiently explored. It seems to be made appear that the atmosphere which we breathe is a mixture of two kinds of air: one pure and vital; the other, for the purposes of life, effete, foul, and noxious; that when we have drawn in our breath, the blood in the lungs imbibes from the air, thus brought into contiguity with it, a portion of its pure ingredient, and at the same time gives out the effete or corrupt air which it contained, and which is carried away, along with the halitus, every time we expire. At least, by comparing the air which is breathed from the lungs with the air which enters the lungs, it is found to have lost some of its pure part, and to have brought away with it an addition of its impure part. Whether these experiments satisfy the question as to the need which the blood stands in of being visited by continual accesses of air, is not for us to inquire into, nor material to our argument: it is sufficient to know that, in the constitution of most animals, such a necessity exists, and that the air, by some means or other, *must* be introduced into a near communication with the blood.* The lungs of animals are constructed for this

* [Since our author wrote, much additional light has been thrown on the chemical action which takes place between the air and the blood in the lungs. In the structure of the latter organs, we find, says an eminent physiologist, 'a problem in mechanics, of extreme difficulty, solved.' This is, the presentation of an immense surface of contact between the blood and the air, within the inconsiderable space occupied by the lungs. The artifice by which this is accomplished consists in this, that all the minute ramifications of the blood-vessels are surrounded on every side by air-cells and tubes; thus creating a surface of contact, estimated by the best anatomists at ten times the superficial extent of the body, or one hundred and fifty square feet. The thin walls of the blood-vessels present no obstacle to the action of the air on the fluid which they enclose, as may be satisfactorily shown by placing a bladder filled with blood in oxygen gas, when an effect analogous to that which occurs in the living body will ensue.

The most obvious change produced by the air in the lungs is the conversion of the blood from a dark-red to a bright-red colour. Before the chemical action here can be understood, it is necessary for the reader to keep in mind what the condition of the blood is when brought to the lungs. It left the heart charged with nutritious particles, was circulated over the body, gave out to each part its vital food, and returned to the lungs, loaded, in consequence of the removal of other principles, with carbon, which is extremely noxious when in excess, and would soon destroy life. In this deteriorated condition, the blood undergoes a new and distinct circulation through the lungs, where a remedy is provided. The oxygen of the inspired atmospheric air combines with the superabundant and hurtful carbon, forming carbonic acid gas, which is removed by expiration. The fact is ascertained by the examination of air before and after its passage through the lungs. The following table is from Magendie's Physiology:—

20 inches of inspired air consist of		20 inches of expired air consist of	
Water,	00·75	Water,	01·5
Carbonic acid,	00·20	Carbonic acid,	3·4
Oxygen,	21·	Oxygen,	17·6
Nitrogen,	79·	Nitrogen,	79·
	100·95		101·5

(The addition here, upon the whole, arises from the humid vapour constantly evaporating from the lungs, and is of no consequence to the present question.) The important fact is, that carbonic acid is formed at the expense of the atmo-

purpose. They consist of blood-vessels and air-vessels, lying close to each other; and whenever there is a branch of the trachea or windpipe, there is a branch accompanying it of the vein and artery, and the air-vessel is always in the middle between the blood-vessels.* The internal surface of these vessels, upon which the application of the air to the blood depends, would, if collected and expanded, be in a man equal to a superficies of fifteen feet square. Now, in order to give the blood in its course the benefit of this organisation (and this is the part of the subject with which we are chiefly concerned), the following operation takes place: As soon as the blood is received by the heart from the veins of the body, and *before* that it is sent out again into its arteries, it is carried, by the force of the contraction of the heart, and by means of a separate and supplementary artery, to the lungs, and made to enter the vessels of the lungs; from which, after it has undergone the action, whatever it be, of that viscus, it is brought back by a large vein once more to the heart, in order, when thus concocted and prepared, to be thence distributed anew into the system. This assigns to the heart a double office. The pulmonary [or respiratory] circulation is a system within a system; and one action of the heart is the origin of both.

For this complicated function four cavities become necessary, and four are accordingly provided: two, called ventricles, which *send out* the blood—namely, one into the lungs, in the first instance; the other into the mass [of the body], after it has returned from the lungs: two others also, called auricles, which *receive* the blood from the veins—to wit, one, as it comes immediately from the body; the other, as the same blood comes a second time after its circulation through the lungs. So that there are two receiving cavities and two forcing cavities. The structure of the heart has reference to the lungs, for without the lungs one of each would have been sufficient. The translation of the blood in the heart itself is after this manner:—The receiving cavities respectively

spheric oxygen, the loss of the latter in the previous tables being exactly balanced by the acid gained. Here, then, do we find the deadly refuse of the system removed by the transmission of the blood through the lungs; an object of itself sufficiently great and necessary to account for the whole respiratory apparatus. The blood, restored to its florid hue, and again capable of fulfilling its purpose, is sent back from the lungs to the heart, to be anew propelled through the body.

But the respiratory circulation is attended with other results, which, if science hath rightly concluded regarding them, give us an example of ingenuity of design that cannot be equalled. In the formation of carbonic acid, heat is evolved; and it is highly probable that this very formation of acid, which goes on continually in the body, is the chief source of *animal heat*. If this inference be correct, how shall we sufficiently admire that wisdom and skill which, in constructing a piece of mechanism, can make the very process of removing refuse the means of working out a great and indispensable end—can by one simple chemical law at once expel a deadly poison, and maintain the warmth indispensable to life!

The subserviency of the respiratory circulation to the purpose of nutrition is explained in the text at another place.]

* Keill's Anatomy, p. 121.

communicate with the forcing cavities, and, by their contraction, unload the received blood into them. The forcing cavities, when it is their turn to contract, compel the same blood into the mouths of the arteries.

The account here given will not convey to a reader ignorant of anatomy anything like an accurate notion of the form, action, or use of the parts (nor can any short and popular account do this); but it is abundantly sufficient to testify contrivance; and, although imperfect, being true as far as it goes, may be relied upon for the only purpose for which we offer it—the purpose of this conclusion.

'The wisdom of the Creator,' saith Hamburgher, 'is in nothing seen more gloriously than in the heart.' And how well doth it execute its office! An anatomist, who understood the structure of the heart, might say beforehand that it would play; but he would expect, I think, from the complexity of its mechanism, and the delicacy of many of its parts, that it should always be liable to derangement, or that it would soon work itself out. Yet shall this wonderful machine go, night and day, for eighty years together, at the rate of a hundred thousand strokes every twenty-four hours, having at every stroke a great resistance to overcome; and shall continue this action for this length of time without disorder and without weariness!

But further; from the account which has been given of the mechanism of the heart, it is evident that it must require the interposition of *valves;* that the success, indeed, of its action must depend upon these; for when any one of its cavities contracts, the necessary tendency of the force will be to drive the enclosed blood not only into the mouth of the artery where it ought to go, but also back again into the mouth of the vein from which it flowed. In like manner, when by the relaxation of the fibres the same cavity is dilated, the blood would not only run into it from the vein, which was the course intended, but back from the artery, through which it ought to be moving forward. The way of preventing a reflux of the fluid in both these cases is to fix valves, which, like flood-gates, may open a way to the stream in one direction, and shut up the passage against it in another. The heart, constituted as it is, can no more work without valves than a pump can. When the piston descends in a pump, if it were not for the stoppage by the valve beneath, the motion would only thrust down the water which it had before drawn up. A similar consequence would frustrate the action of the heart. Valves, therefore, properly disposed—that is, properly with respect to the course of the blood which it is necessary to promote—are essential to the contrivance. *And valves so disposed are accordingly provided.* A valve is placed in the communication between each auricle and its ventricle, lest when the ventricle contracts, part of the blood *should get* back again into the auricle, instead of the whole enter-

it ought to do, the mouth of the artery. A valve is also
at the mouth of each of the great arteries which take the
from the heart; leaving the passage free so long as the
holds its proper course forward; closing it whenever the
in consequence of the relaxation of the ventricle, would
t to flow back. There is some variety in the construction
e valves, though all the valves of the body act nearly upon
ne principle, and are destined to the same use. In general,
nsist of a thin membrane, lying close to the side of the
and consequently allowing an open passage whilst the
runs one way, but thrust out from the side by the fluid
behind it, and opposing the passage of the blood when it
flow the other way. Where more than one membrane is
red, the different membranes only compose one valve. Their
ction fulfils the office of a valve; for instance, over the en-
of the right auricle of the heart into the right ventricle,
f these skins or membranes are fixed, of a triangular figure,
ses of the triangles fastened to the flesh; the sides and
ts loose; but, though loose, connected by threads of a deter-
length, with certain small fleshy prominences adjoining.
ffect of this construction is, that when the ventricle con-
the blood endeavouring to escape in all directions, and
st other directions, pressing upwards, gets *between* these
ranes and the sides of the passage; and thereby forces
up into such a position as that, together, they constitute,
raised, a hollow cone (the strings before spoken of hindering
rom proceeding or separating further); which cone, entirely
ring the passage, prevents the return of the blood into the
. A shorter account of the matter may be this: So long
blood proceeds in its proper course, the membranes which
se the valve are pressed close to the side of the vessel, and
on no impediment to the circulation; when the blood would
itate, they are raised from the side of the vessel, and, meet-
the middle of its cavity, shut up the channel. Can any one
of contrivance here? or is it possible to shut our eyes
t the proof of it?

valve, also, is not more curious in its structure than it is
ant in its office. Upon the play of the valve, even upon
portioned length of the strings or fibres which check the
of the membranes, depends, as it should seem, nothing less
he life itself of the animal. We may here likewise repeat,
ve before observed concerning some of the ligaments of the
that they could not be formed by any action of the parts
lves. There are cases in which, although good uses appear
e from the shape or configuration of a part, yet that shape
figuration itself may seem to be produced by the action of
rt, or by the action or pressure of adjoining parts. Thus the

bend, and the internal smooth concavity of the ribs, may be attributed to the equal pressure of the soft bowels; the particular shape of some bones and joints to the traction of the annexed muscles, or to the position of contiguous muscles.* But valves could not be so formed. Action and pressure are all against them. The blood, in its proper course, has no tendency to produce such things; and in its improper or reflected current, has a tendency to prevent their production. Whilst we see, therefore, the use and necessity of this machinery, we can look to no other account of its origin or formation than the intending mind of a Creator. Nor can we without admiration reflect that such thin membranes, such weak and tender instruments, as these valves are, should be able to hold out for seventy or eighty years.

[Reasoning upon the principle that where the circulation is most languid, valves are there most required, we might expect to find them in abundance in the veins. And such is indeed the case: they are very numerous in the veins, not at their mouths, as in the arteries, but stationed here and there along the whole course of the vessels. Venous valves all open, of course, towards the heart. They are in greatest plenty in those veins which hold a superficial situation in the body, and which are most exposed to unequal pressure. In all this we observe a fitness which cannot but weigh strongly in favour of the argument for foresight and design.]

Here also we cannot consider but with gratitude how happy it is that our vital motions are *involuntary!* We should have enough to do if we had to keep our hearts beating and our stomachs at work. Did these things depend, we will not say upon our effort, but upon our bidding, our care, or our attention, they would leave us leisure for nothing else. We must have been continually upon the watch, and continually in fear; nor would this constitution have allowed of sleep.

* [Regarding the spines or ridges that are found on many of the bones, considerable misconception has hitherto prevailed. These spines have been generally, as in the text, ascribed to the traction or to the friction of the muscles: and where such causes evidently could not have operated, anatomists have been content to view them as things accidental and purposeless. Sir Charles Bell, however, in a late work, has clearly shown these spines or ridges to be a strengthening of the bones in the direction in which force bears on them during the motions of the frame—a splicing, as it were, at points peculiarly exposed to straining. When placed in this their true light, these bony elevations become important objects in osteology; and though we must, with the text, still regard them as produced by the action of the adjoining parts, no general argument against design can be drawn from this, seeing that many parts, such as valves, exist in direct opposition to the action of the surrounding forces. The discovery of the true use of these ridges may serve to teach us two things: firstly, that the most minute and least-regarded portion of the animal frame has its purpose, however long man may be in finding it out; and secondly, these spines ought to lead us, not to exclaim sneeringly that 'use makes the part,' but to admire that skill which implanted in the frame a power of self-fortifying and self-preserving, such as the parts which we have been explaining evince.]

It might perhaps be expected that an organ so precious, of such central and primary importance as the heart is, should be defended by *a case*. The fact is, that a membranous purse or bag, made of strong, tough materials, is provided for it; holding the heart within its cavity; sitting loosely and easily about it; guarding its substance, without confining its motion; and containing likewise a spoonful or two of water, just sufficient to keep the surface of the heart in a state of suppleness and moisture. How should such a loose covering be generated by the action of the heart? Does not the enclosing of it in a sack, answering no other purpose but that enclosure, show the care that has been taken of its preservation?

One use of the circulation of the blood probably (amongst other uses) is, to distribute nourishment to the different parts of the body. How minute and multiplied the ramifications of the blood-vessels for that purpose are, and how thickly spread, over at least the superficies of the body, is proved by the single observation, that we cannot prick the point of a pin into the flesh without drawing blood—that is, without finding a blood-vessel! Nor, internally, is their diffusion less universal. Blood-vessels run along the surface of membranes, pervade the substance of muscles, penetrate the bones. Even into every tooth we trace, through a small hole in the root, an artery to feed the bone, as well as a vein to bring back the spare blood from it; both which, with the addition of an accompanying nerve, form a thread only a little thicker than a horse-hair.

Wherefore, when the nourishment taken in at the mouth has once reached and mixed itself with the blood, every part of the body is in the way of being supplied with it. And this introduces another grand topic—namely, the manner in which the aliment gets into the *blood;* which is a subject distinct from the preceding, and brings us to the consideration of another entire system of vessels.

III. For this necessary part of the animal economy, an apparatus is provided, in a great measure capable of being what anatomists call demonstrated—that is, shown in the dead body, and a line or course of conveyance which we can pursue by our examinations.

First, The food descends by a wide passage into the intestines, undergoing two great preparations on its way; one, in the mouth by mastication and moisture (can it be doubted with what design the teeth were placed in the road to the stomach, or that there was choice in fixing them in this situation?) the other, by digestion in the stomach itself. Of this last surprising dissolution I say nothing; because it is chemistry, and I am endeavouring to display mechanism. The figure and position of the stomach (I speak all along with a reference to the human organ) are calculated for

detaining the food long enough for the action of its digestive juice. It has the shape of the pouch of a bagpipe; lies across the body; and the pylorus, or passage by which the food leaves it, is somewhat higher in the body than the cardia, or orifice by which it enters; so that it is by the contraction of the muscular coat of the stomach that the contents, after having undergone the application of the gastric menstruum, are gradually pressed out. In dogs and cats, this action of the coats of the stomach has been displayed to the eye. It is a slow and gentle undulation, propagated from one orifice of the stomach to the other. For the same reason that I omitted, for the present, offering any observation upon the digestive fluid, I shall say nothing concerning the bile or the pancreatic juice, further than to observe upon the mechanism—namely, that from the glands in which these secretions are elaborated, pipes are laid into the first of the intestines, through which pipes the product of each gland flows into that bowel, and is there mixed with the aliment, as soon almost as it passes the stomach; adding also as a remark, how grievously this same bile offends the stomach itself, yet cherishes the vessel that lies next to it.

Secondly, We have now the aliment in the intestines converted into pulp; and, though lately consisting of ten different viands, reduced to nearly a uniform substance, and to a state fitted for yielding its essence, which is called chyle, but which is milk, or more nearly resembling milk than any other liquor with which it can be compared. For the straining off of this fluid from the digested aliment in the course of its long progress through the body, myriads of capillary tubes—that is, pipes as small as hairs—open their orifices into the cavity of every part of the intestines. These tubes, which are so fine and slender as not to be visible unless when distended with chyle, soon unite into larger branches. The pipes formed by this union terminate in glands, from which other pipes of a still larger diameter arise, carrying the chyle from all parts into a common reservoir or *receptacle*. This receptacle is a bag of size enough to hold about two tablespoonfuls; and from this vessel a duct or main-pipe proceeds, climbing up the back part of the chest, and afterwards creeping along the gullet till it reach the neck. Here it meets the river; here it discharges itself into a large vein, which soon conveys the chyle, now flowing along with the old blood, to the heart. This whole route can be exhibited to the eye; nothing is left to be supplied by imagination or conjecture. Now, besides the subserviency of this structure, collectively considered, to a manifest and necessary purpose, we may remark two or three separate particulars in it, which show not only the contrivance, but the perfection of it. We may remark, first, the length of the intestines, which in the human subject is six times that of the body. Simply

for a passage, these voluminous bowels, this prolixity of gut, seems in nowise necessary; but in order to allow time and space for the successive extraction of the chyle from the digested aliment—namely, that the chyle which escapes the lacteals of one part of the guts may be taken up by those of some other part—the length of the canal is of evident use and conduciveness. Secondly, we must also remark their peristaltic motion; which is made up of contractions, following one another like waves upon the surface of a fluid, and not unlike what we observe in the body of an earth-worm crawling along the ground; and which is effected by the joint action of longitudinal and of spiral, or rather perhaps of a great number of separate semicircular fibres. This curious action pushes forward the grosser part of the aliment, at the same time that the more subtile parts, which we call chyle, are, by a series of gentle compressions, squeezed into the narrow orifices of the lacteal veins. Thirdly, it was necessary that these tubes, which we denominate lacteals, or their mouths at least, should be made as narrow as possible, in order to deny admission into the blood to any particle which is of size enough to make a lodgment afterwards in the small arteries, and thereby to obstruct the circulation: And it was also necessary that this extreme tenuity should be compensated by multitude; for a large quantity of chyle (in ordinary constitutions not less, it has been computed, than two or three quarts in a day) is, by some means or other, to be passed through them. Accordingly, we find the number of the lacteals exceeding all powers of computation; and their pipes so fine and slender, as not to be visible, unless filled, to the naked eye; and their orifices, which open into the intestines, so small, as not to be discernible even by the best microscope. Fourthly, the main-pipe, which carries the chyle from the reservoir to the blood—namely, the thoracic duct—being fixed in an almost upright position, and wanting that advantage of propulsion which the arteries possess, is furnished with a succession of valves to check the ascending fluid, when once it has passed them, from falling back. These valves look upward, so as to leave the ascent free, but to prevent the return of the chyle, if, for want of sufficient force to push it on, its weight should at any time cause it to descend. Fifthly, the chyle enters the blood in an odd place, but perhaps the most commodious place possible—namely, at a large vein in the neck, so situated with respect to the circulation, as speedily to bring the mixture to the heart [which it does immediately before the blood undergoes its transmission through the lungs]. And this seems to be a circumstance of great moment; for had the chyle entered the blood at an artery, or at a distant vein, the fluid, composed of the old and the new materials, must have performed a considerable part of the circulation before it received that churning in the lungs, which is probably

necessary for the intimate and perfect union of the old blood with the recent chyle. Who could have dreamt of a communication between the cavity of the intestines and the left great vein of the *neck?* Who could have suspected that this communication should be the medium through which all nourishment is derived to the body? or this the place where, by a side inlet, the important junction is formed between the blood and the material which feeds it?

We postponed the consideration of *digestion*, lest it should interrupt us in tracing the course of the food to the blood; but in treating of the alimentary system, so principal a part of the process cannot be omitted.

Of the gastric juice, the immediate agent by which that change which food undergoes in our stomachs is effected, we shall take our account from the numerous, careful, and varied experiments of the Abbé Spallanzani.

1. It is not a simple diluent, but a real solvent. A quarter of an ounce of beef had scarcely touched the stomach of a crow when the solution began.

2. It has not the nature of saliva; it has not the nature of bile; but is distinct from both. By experiments out of the body, it appears that neither of these secretions acts upon alimentary substances in the same manner as the gastric juice acts.

3. Digestion is not *putrefaction;* for the digesting fluid resists putrefaction most pertinaciously; nay, not only checks its further progress, but restores putrid substances.

4. It is not a *fermentative* process; for the solution begins at the surface, and proceeds towards the centre, contrary to the order in which fermentation acts and spreads.

5. It is not the *digestion of heat;* for the cold maw of a cod or sturgeon will dissolve the shells of crabs or lobsters, harder than the sides of the stomachs which contains them.*

In a word, animal digestion carries about it the marks of being a power and a process completely unique; distinct from every

* [Heat, it has been perfectly ascertained, is an indispensable auxiliary in the digestive process in the human body. In an experiment made with gastric juice taken from the stomach of a healthy man, in whose side a permanent opening had been formed in consequence of an accident, it was found that while one ounce of the juice, placed in a phial with a piece of beef, and kept at a temperature of ninety-nine degrees, dissolved the meat in six hours, another ounce, placed with a similar accompaniment in a phial, and kept at a temperature of thirty-four degrees, made in twenty-four hours little or no impression whatever on the flesh. From this and other experiments, it appears that heat is an essential adjunct to digestion. At the same time, the text is correct in the observation, that no agent with which chemistry has made us acquainted approaches in the slightest degree, in character and powers, to the gastric juice. Under no circumstances could any other known solvent convert all alimentary matter to one homogeneous substance, chyle, which alone can support life. This is a power altogether peculiar, and by means of it, with the aid of heat and motion, is digestion accomplished.]

other, at least from every chemical process with which we are acquainted. And the most wonderful thing about it is its appropriation—its subserviency to the particular economy of each animal. The gastric juice of an owl, falcon, or kite, will not touch grain; no, not even to finish the macerated and half-digested pulse which is left in the crops of the sparrows that the bird devours. In poultry, the trituration of the gizzard, and the gastric juice, conspire in the work of digestion. The gastric juice will not dissolve the grain whilst it is whole. Entire grains of barley, enclosed in tubes or spherules, are not affected by it; but if the same grain be by any means broken or ground, the gastric juice immediately lays hold of it. Here then is wanted, and here we find, a combination of mechanism and chemistry. For the preparatory grinding, the gizzard lends its mill. And as all mill-work should be strong, its structure is so, beyond that of any other muscle belonging to the animal. The internal coat also, or lining of the gizzard, is, for the same purpose, hard and cartilaginous. But forasmuch as this is not the sort of animal substance suited for the reception of glands, or for secretion, the gastric juice in this family is not supplied, as in membranous stomachs, by the stomach itself, but by the gullet, in which the feeding glands are placed, and from which it trickles down into the stomach.

In sheep, the gastric fluid has no effect in digesting plants, *unless they have been previously masticated.* It only produces a slight maceration; nearly such as common water would produce, in a degree of heat somewhat exceeding the medium temperature of the atmosphere. But provided that the plant has been reduced to pieces by chewing, the gastric juice then proceeds with it—first, by softening its substance; next, by destroying its natural consistency; and lastly, by dissolving it so completely, as not even to spare the toughest and most stringy parts, such as the nerves of the leaves.

So far our accurate and indefatigable abbé. Dr Stevens of Edinburgh, in 1777, found, by experiments tried with perforated balls, that the gastric juice of the sheep and the ox speedily dissolved vegetables, but made no impression upon beef, mutton, and other animal bodies. Dr Hunter discovered a property of this fluid of a most curious kind—namely, that in the stomachs of animals which feed upon flesh, irresistibly as this fluid acts upon animal substances, it is only upon the *dead* substance that it operates at all. The *living* fibre suffers no injury from lying in contact with it. Worms and insects are found alive in the stomachs of such animals. The coats of the human stomach, in a healthy state, are insensible to its presence; yet in cases of sudden death (wherein the gastric juice, not having been weakened by disease, retains its activity), it has been known to eat a hole through the

bowel which contains it.* How nice is this discrimination of action, yet how necessary!

[According to observations made on the stomach of a living healthy man—in the case already mentioned, where a gunshot wound had left a permanent opening through which the stomach could be partially everted, and its contents at any time extracted for examination—the gastric juice in the human body is a clear, transparent, and odourless fluid, containing active chemical principles: and is, in short, a true chemical solvent. Mastication and admixture with the saliva softens the food and prepares it for digestion: but without the agency of the gastric juice, no solution would take place. It has therefore been wisely ordered that a sign should be given when the stomach is prepared with the indispensable fluid. This sign is hunger, which is simply a peculiar sensation caused by the distension of the vessels, lying on the surface of the stomach, which secrete the gastric juice. These vessels do not pour out the juice until excited by the presence of some body in the digestive organ: and when that excitement takes place, and the juice is poured out by the vessels, the feeling of hunger is appeased. That the distension of the juice-secreting vessels is the immediate cause of the feeling, is put beyond a doubt by the fact, that any substance—sawdust, for example—has the effect, when received into the stomach, of quelling the appetite, by causing the outpouring of the gastric juice. Now, certainly, were the sensation of hunger caused by the general wants of the system, the feeling could never be allayed by a substance which gratifies none of these wants.

This has a beautiful purpose. The gastric juice is the regulator which guides and effects the supply of food to the frame. Its powers as a solvent are great, yet they have definite limits; it can only dissolve a fixed amount of food: and when more aliment is presented for its action than it can dissolve, indigestion ensues. Now, the wants of the body are not immediately satisfied after food is taken into the alimentary organ; the process of digestion always occupies some time, and with some kinds of nutriment a long time. Hence, were the general wants of the system the cause of the sensation of hunger, that sensation would be totally incapable of directing the proper amount of food to be taken. The gastric juice, being secreted in irregular quantities, according to the state of the frame, would at one time be presented with much more aliment than it could dissolve, and at another, it may be, with too little. In either case, the error would be injurious; and in the former case particularly, disturbance of the stomach and continual indigestion, with all its myriad train of evils, would be the inevitable consequence. The feeling of hunger, therefore,

* Phil. Trans. vol. lxii. p. 447.

we may repeat, has been, for a wise purpose, made dependent on the presence of the gastric juice, for the time being, in the stomach. Were we to be oftener guided in our food-taking by the presence and *duration* of appetite—or, in other words, were we to apportion our food to the amount of gastric juice prepared for its solution—we should obey nature, and avoid many ills.

A moment's thought will suffice to convince us of the utility of, if not the necessity for, such a feeling as hunger. It warns us that our bodies stand in need of new food and refreshment, and, by its gentle but irresistible impulse, compels us to take in time that nourishment, which we might otherwise neglect until we grew so faint and weak, as to be incapable of fulfilling the duties and labours indispensable to life. And this warning, too, is given, as we have seen, at the precise moment when the frame is capable of deriving benefit from the food. How wonderful and benevolent is this constitution of things, where the Orderer of all has set up so many finger-posts to guide and impel us, almost in spite of ourselves, in the way that is good for us!]

But to return to our hydraulics.

IV. The gall-bladder is a very remarkable contrivance. It is the reservoir of a canal. It does not form the channel itself—that is, the direct communication between the liver and the intestine, which is by another passage—namely, the *ductus hepaticus*, continued under the name of the *ductus communis;* but it lies adjacent to this channel, joining it by a duct of its own, the *ductus cysticus;* by which structure it is enabled, as occasions may require, to add its contents to, and increase the flow of bile into the duodenum. And the position of the gall-bladder is such as to apply this structure to the best advantage. In its natural situation it touches the exterior surface of the stomach, and consequently is compressed by the distension of that vessel: the effect of which compression is, to force out from the bag, and send into the duodenum, an extraordinary quantity of bile, to meet the extraordinary demand which the repletion of the stomach by food is about to occasion.* Cheselden describes† the gall-bladder as seated against the duodenum, and thereby liable to have its fluid pressed out by the passage of the aliment through that cavity; which likewise will have the effect of causing it to be received into the intestine at a right time and in a due proportion.

There may be other purposes answered by this contrivance; and it is probable that there are. The contents of the gall-bladder are not exactly of the same kind as what passes from the liver through the direct passage.‡ It is possible that the gall may be changed, and for some purposes meliorated, by keeping.

* Keill's Anat. p. 64. † Anat. p. 164. ‡ Keill (from Malpighius), p. 63.

The entrance of the gall-duct into the duodenum furnishes another observation. Whenever either smaller tubes are inserted into larger tubes, or tubes into vessels and cavities, such receiving-tubes, vessels, or cavities, being subject to muscular constriction, we always find a contrivance to prevent *regurgitation*. In some cases valves are used; in other cases, amongst which is that now before us, a different expedient is resorted to, which may be thus described: The gall-duct enters the duodenum obliquely; after it has pierced the first coat, it runs near two fingers' breadth *between* the coats, before it opens into the cavity of the intestine.* The same contrivance is used in another part, where there is exactly the same occasion for it—namely, in the insertion of the ureters in the bladder. These enter the bladder near its neck, running obliquely for the space of an inch between its coats.† It is in both cases sufficiently evident that this structure has a necessary mechanical tendency to resist regurgitation: for whatever force acts in such a direction as to urge the fluid back into the orifices of the tubes, must at the same time stretch the coats of the vessels, and thereby compress that part of the tube which is included between them.

V. Amongst the *vessels* of the human body, the pipe which conveys the saliva from the place where it is made, to the place where it is wanted, deserves to be reckoned amongst the most intelligible pieces of mechanism with which we are acquainted. The saliva, we all know, is used in the mouth; but much of it is produced on the outside of the cheek, by the parotid gland, which lies between the ear and the angle of the lower jaw. In order to carry the secreted juice to its destination, there is laid from the gland on the outside a pipe about the thickness of a wheat straw, and about three fingers' breadth in length; which, after riding over the masseter muscle, bores for itself a hole through the very middle of the cheek; enters by that hole, which is a complete perforation of the buccinator muscle, into the mouth, and there discharges its fluid very copiously.

[In the circumstance of these glands and their ducts being lodged in contact with those muscles which are thrown into active motion in the process of eating, we discover a useful purpose; seeing that the glands are excited by the muscular motion around them to activity, at the very moment when a free flow of saliva is most necessary. It may be observed, as an additional instance of fitness, that the carnivorous animals, which do not masticate their food, have salivary glands of very small size; whereas in the ruminant animals, which require to masticate their nutriment thoroughly, these glands are of great size.]

VI. Another exquisite structure, differing, indeed, from the four

* Keill's Anat. p. 62. † Ches. Anat. p. 260.

preceding instances, in that it does not relate to the conveyance of fluids, but still belonging, like these, to the class of pipes or conduits of the body, is seen in the *larynx*. We all know that there go down the throat two pipes—one leading to the stomach, the other to the lungs; the one being the passage for the food, the other for the breath and voice. We know also that both these passages open into the bottom of the mouth: the gullet, necessarily, for the conveyance of food; and the windpipe, for speech and the modulation of sound, not much less so. Therefore the difficulty was, the passages being so contiguous, to prevent the food, especially the liquids which we swallow into the stomach, from entering the windpipe—that is, the road to the lungs; the consequence of which error, when it does happen, is perceived by the convulsive throes that are instantly produced. This business, which is very nice, is managed in this manner:—The gullet (the passage for food) opens into the mouth like the cone or upper part of a funnel, the capacity of which forms indeed the bottom of the mouth. Into the side of this funnel, at the part which lies the lowest, enters the windpipe, by a chink or slit, with a lid or flap, like a little tongue, accurately fitted to the orifice. The solids or liquids which we swallow, pass over this lid or flap as they descend by the funnel into the gullet. Both the weight of the food, and the action of the muscles concerned in swallowing, contribute to keep the lid close down upon the aperture whilst anything is passing; whereas, by means of its natural cartilaginous spring, it raises itself a little, as soon as the food is passed, thereby allowing a free inlet and outlet for the respiration of air by the lungs. Such is its structure. And we may here remark the almost complete success of the expedient—namely, how seldom it fails of its purpose, compared with the number of instances in which it fulfils it! Reflect how frequently we swallow, how constantly we breathe! In a city feast, for example, what deglutition, what anhelation! yet does this little cartilage, the epiglottis, so effectually interpose its office, so securely guard the entrance of the windpipe, that, whilst morsel after morsel, draught after draught, are coursing one another over it, an accident of a crumb or a drop slipping into this passage (which nevertheless must be opened for the breath every second of time), excites in the whole company not only alarm by its danger, but surprise by its novelty. Not two guests are choked in a century.

There is no room for pretending that the action of the parts may have gradually formed the epiglottis; I do not mean in the same individual, but in a succession of generations. Not only the action of the parts has no such tendency, but the animal could not live, nor consequently the parts act, either without it, or with it in a half-formed state. The species was not to wait for the

gradual formation or expansion of a part which was from the first necessary to the life of the individual.

Not only is the larynx curious, but the whole windpipe possesses a structure adapted to its peculiar office. It is made up (as any one may perceive by putting his fingers to his throat) of stout cartilaginous ringlets, placed at small and equal distances from one another. Now this is not the case with any other of the numerous conduits of the body. The use of these cartilages is to keep the passage for the air *constantly* open, which they do mechanically. A pipe with soft membranous coats, liable to collapse and close when empty, would not have answered here; although this be the general vascular structure, and a structure which serves very well for those tubes which are kept in a state of perpetual distension by the fluid they enclose, or which afford a passage to solid and protruding substances.

Nevertheless (which is another particularity well worthy of notice), these rings are not complete—that is, are not cartilaginous and stiff all round; but their hinder part, which is contiguous to the gullet, is membranous and soft, easily yielding to the distensions of that organ occasioned by the descent of solid food. The same rings are also bevelled off at the upper and lower edges, the better to close upon one another when the trachea is compressed or shortened.

The constitution of the trachea may suggest likewise another reflection. The membrane which lines its inside is perhaps the most sensible, irritable membrane of the body. It rejects the touch of a crumb of bread, or a drop of water, with a spasm which convulses the whole frame; yet, left to itself, and its proper office—the intromission of air alone—nothing can be so quiet. It does not even make itself felt; a man does not know that he has a trachea. This capacity of perceiving with such acuteness, this impatience of offence, yet perfect rest and ease when let alone, are properties, one would have thought, not likely to reside in the same subject. It is to the junction, however, of these almost inconsistent qualities, in this as well as in some other delicate parts of the body, that we owe our safety and our comfort—our safety to their sensibility, our comfort to their repose.

The larynx, or rather the whole windpipe taken together (for the larynx is only the upper part of the windpipe), besides its other uses, is also a musical instrument; that is to say, it is *mechanism* expressly adapted to the modulation of sound; for it has been found upon trial that, by relaxing or tightening the tendinous bands at the extremity of the windpipe, and blowing in at the other end, all the cries and notes might be produced of which the living animal was capable. It can be sounded, just as a pipe or flute is sounded.

Birds, says Bonnet, have, at the lower end of the windpipe, a

conformation like the reed of a hautboy for the modulation of their notes. A tuneful bird is a ventriloquist. The seat of the song is in the breast.

The use of the lungs *in* the system has been said to be obscure: one use, however, is plain, though in some sense external to the system; and that is, the formation, in conjunction with the larynx, of voice and speech. They are to animal utterance what the bellows are to the organ.

[It is generally known how great is the pressure exerted by a column of water on a closed reservoir of the same liquid. A tube of small diameter, and of no great height, will suffice to burst a large barrel; and in like manner—to state it conversely—were the sides of the barrel movable, and a great pressure exerted on every inch of their superficies, a man, by blowing with his mouth down the tube, would easily counteract the pressure, and prevent the water rising in it. This is the result of the principle in hydraulics, that fluids press equally in all directions; and it is alike applicable to air as to water. Now, in the animal frame, this principle is turned strikingly to account. The strong muscles lying on the chest of the human body assist at once in the respiratory motions and in the exercise of the arms. When the latter are about to be employed in a powerful exertion, we first draw a full inspiration, and keeping the lungs in an expanded state, we perform the intended exertion with the arms. Two questions arise here: What assistance does the expansion of the lungs render? and what prevents the strong compression of the pectoral muscles from forcing the air from the lungs? The fixed expansion of the chest gives to the muscles an immovable basis, which is necessary to the perfection of their exercise, and expiration is prevented by the small muscle of the glottis, which counteracts the whole combined force of many of the largest and most powerful muscles of the body. This it is enabled to do by its position. The lungs are in this case like a close reservoir with movable sides; the windpipe is the cylinder or piston, and the muscles on the chest being the forces, when in action, that press the contents of the reservoir up the piston (a reversal of the Bramah press), the small muscle, by the hydraulic principle we have stated, is enabled, from its position at the top of the piston, to counteract with ease the whole array of strength brought against it.]

For the sake of method, we have considered animal bodies under three divisions—their bones, their muscles, and their vessels; and we have stated our observations upon these parts separately. But this is to diminish the strength of the argument. The wisdom of the Creator is seen not in their separate, but their collective action; in their mutual subserviency and dependence; in their contributing *together* to one effect and one use. It has been said that a man cannot lift his hand to his head, without

finding enough to convince him of the existence of a God. And it is well said; for he has only to reflect, familiar as this action is, and simple as it seems to be, how many things are requisite for the performing of it: how many things which we understand, to say nothing of many more, probably, which we do not—namely, first, a long, hard, strong cylinder, in order to give to the arm its firmness and tension; but which, being rigid, and in its substance inflexible, can only turn upon joints: secondly, therefore, joints for this purpose—one at the shoulder to raise the arm, another at the elbow to bend it; these joints continually fed with a soft mucilage, to make the parts slip easily upon one another, and holden together by strong braces to keep them in their position: then, thirdly, strings and wires—that is, muscles and tendons—artificially inserted for the purpose of drawing the bones in the directions in which the joints allow them to move. Hitherto we seem to understand the mechanism pretty well; and, understanding this, we possess enough for our conclusion. Nevertheless, we have hitherto only a machine standing still; a dead organisation, an apparatus. To put the system in a state of activity, to set it at work, a further provision is necessary—namely, a communication with the brain by means of nerves. We know the existence of this communication, because we can see the communicating threads, and can trace them to the brain: its necessity we also know; because, if the thread be cut, if the communication be intercepted, the muscle becomes paralytic: but beyond this we know little, the organisation being too minute and subtile for our inspection.

To what has been enumerated, as officiating in the single act of a man's raising his hand to his head, must be added likewise all that is necessary, and all that contributes to the growth, nourishment, and sustentation of the limb, the repair of its waste, the preservation of its health; such as the circulation of the blood through every part of it; its lymphatics, exhalents, absorbents; its excretions and integuments. All these share in the result, join in the effect; and how all these, or any of them, come together without a designing, disposing Intelligence, it is impossible to conceive.

CHAPTER XI.

OF THE ANIMAL STRUCTURE REGARDED AS A MASS.

Contemplating *an animal body* in its collective capacity, we cannot forget to notice what a number of instruments are brought together, and often within how small a compass. It is a cluster of contrivances. In a canary bird, for instance, and in the single ounce of matter which composes his body (but which seems to be all employed), we have instruments for eating, for digesting, for nourishment, for breathing, for generation, for running, for flying, for seeing, for hearing, for smelling; each appropriate, each entirely different from all the rest.

The human, or indeed the animal frame, considered as a mass or assemblage, exhibits in its composition three properties, which have long struck my mind as indubitable evidences not only of design, but of a great deal of attention and accuracy in prosecuting the design.

I. The first is, the exact correspondency of the two sides of the same animal; the right hand answering to the left, leg to leg, eye to eye, one side of the countenance to the other; and with a precision, to imitate which in any tolerable degree forms one of the difficulties of statuary, and requires, on the part of the artist, a constant attention to this property of his work, distinct from every other.

It is the most difficult thing that can be to get a wig made even; yet how seldom is the *face* awry! And what care is taken that it should not be so, the anatomy of its bones demonstrates. The upper part of the face is composed of thirteen bones, six on each side, answering each to each, and the thirteenth, without a fellow, in the middle: the lower part of the face is in like manner composed of six bones, three on each side respectively corresponding, and the lower jaw in the centre. In building an arch, could more be done in order to make the curve *true;* that is, the parts equidistant from the middle, alike in figure and position?

The exact resemblance of the *eyes*, considering how compounded this organ is in its structure, how various and how delicate are the shades of colour with which its iris is tinged, how differently, as to effect upon appearance, the eye may be mounted in its socket, and how differently in different heads eyes actually are set, is a property of animal bodies much to be admired. Of ten thousand eyes, I do not know that it would be possible to match one, except with its own fellow; or to distribute them into suitable pairs by any other selection than that which obtains.

This regularity of the animal structure is rendered more remarkable by the three following considerations:—1. The limbs, *separately* taken, have not this correlation of parts, but the contrary of it. A knife drawn down the chine cuts the human body into two parts, externally equal and alike; you cannot draw a straight line which will divide a hand, a foot, the leg, the thigh, the cheek, the eye, the ear, into two parts equal and alike. Those parts which are placed upon the middle or partition line of the body, or which traverse that line, as the nose, the tongue, the lips, may be so divided, or, more properly speaking, are double organs; but other parts cannot. This shows that the correspondency which we have been describing does not arise by any necessity in the nature of the subject: for, if necessary, it would be universal; whereas it is observed only in the system or assemblage: it is not true of the separate parts—that is to say, it is found where it conduces to beauty or utility; it is not found where it would subsist at the expense of both. The two wings of a bird always correspond: the two sides of a feather frequently do not. In centipedes, millepedes, and that whole tribe of insects, no two legs on the same side are alike; yet there is the most exact parity between the legs opposite to one another.

2. The next circumstance to be remarked is, that whilst the cavities of the body are so configurated as *externally* to exhibit the most exact correspondency of the opposite sides, the contents of these cavities have no such correspondency. A line drawn down the middle of the breast, divides the thorax into two sides exactly similar; yet these two sides enclose very different contents. The heart lies on the left side, a lobe of the lungs on the right; balancing each other neither in size nor shape. The same thing holds of the abdomen. The liver lies on the right side, without any similar viscus opposed to it on the left. The spleen, indeed, is situated over against the liver, but agreeing with the liver neither in bulk nor form. There is no equipollency between these. The stomach is a vessel both irregular in its shape and oblique in its position. The foldings and doublings of the intestines do not present a parity of sides. Yet that symmetry which depends upon the correlation of the sides is externally preserved throughout the whole trunk; and is the more remarkable in the lower parts of it, as the integuments are soft; and the shape, consequently, is not, as the thorax is by its ribs, reduced by natural stays. It is evident, therefore, that the external proportion does not arise from any equality in the shape or pressure of the external contents. What is it, indeed, but a correction of inequalities—an adjustment, by mutual compensation, of anomalous forms into a regular congeries—the effect, in a word, of artful, and, if we might be permitted so to speak, of studied collocation!

3. Similar also to this is the third observation—that an internal inequality in the feeding vessels is so managed as to produce no inequality in parts which were intended to correspond. The right arm answers accurately to the left, both in size and shape; but the arterial branches which supply the two arms do not go off from their trunk, in a pair, in the same manner, at the same place, or at the same angle. Under which want of similitude, it is very difficult to conceive how the same quantity of blood should be pushed through each artery: yet the result is right; the two limbs which are nourished by them perceive no difference of supply, no effects of excess or deficiency.

Concerning the difference of manner in which the subclavian and carotid arteries, upon the different sides of the body, separate themselves from the aörta, Cheselden seems to have thought that the advantage which the left gain by going off at an angle much more acute than the right, is made up to the right by their going off together in one branch.* It is very possible that this may be the compensating contrivance; and if it be so, how curious, how hydrostatical!

II. Another perfection of the animal mass is the *package*. I know nothing which is so surprising. Examine the contents of the trunk of any large animal. Take notice how soft, how tender, how intricate they are; how constantly in action, how necessary to life! Reflect upon the danger of any injury to their substance, any derangement of their position, any obstruction to their office. Observe the heart pumping at the centre, at the rate of eighty strokes in a minute; one set of pipes carrying the stream away from it, another set bringing, in its course, the fluid back to it again; the lungs performing their elaborate office—namely, distending and contracting their many thousand vesicles, by a reciprocation which cannot cease for a minute; the stomach exercising its powerful chemistry; the bowels silently propelling the changed aliment; collecting from it, as it proceeds, and transmitting to the blood, an incessant supply of prepared and assimilated nourishment; that blood pursuing its course; the liver, the kidneys, the pancreas, the parotid, with many other known and distinguishable glands, drawing off from it, all the while, their proper secretions. These several operations, together with others more subtile, but less capable of being investigated, are going on within us at one and the same time. Think of this; and then observe how the body itself, the case which holds this machinery, is rolled, and jolted, and tossed about, the mechanism remaining unhurt, and with very little molestation even of its nicest motions. Observe a rope-dancer, a tumbler, or a monkey; the sudden inversions and contortions which the internal parts sustain by the

* Ches. Anat. p. 184, ed. 7.

postures into which their bodies are thrown; or rather observe the shocks which these parts, even in ordinary subjects, sometimes receive from falls and bruises, or by abrupt jerks and twists, without sensible, or with soon-recovered damage. Observe this, and then reflect how firmly every part must be secured, how carefully surrounded, how well tied down and packed together!

This property of animal bodies has never, I think, been considered under a distinct head, or so fully as it deserves. I may be allowed, therefore, in order to verify my observation concerning it, to set forth a short anatomical detail, though it oblige me to use more technical language than I should wish to introduce into a work of this kind.

1. The *heart* (such care is taken of the centre of life) is placed between two soft lobes of the lungs; is *tied* to the mediastinum and to the pericardium; which pericardium is not only itself an exceedingly strong membrane, but *adheres* firmly to the duplicature of the mediastinum, and, by its point, to the middle tendon of the diaphragm. The heart is also *sustained* in its place by the great blood-vessels which issue from it.*

2. The *lungs* are *tied* to the sternum by the mediastinum before; to the vertebræ by the pleura behind. It seems, indeed, to be the very use of the mediastinum (which is a membrane that goes straight through the middle of the thorax, from the breast to the back) to keep the contents of the thorax in their places; in particular, to hinder one lobe of the lungs from incommoding another, or the parts of the lungs from pressing upon each other when we lie on one side.†

3. The *liver* is fastened in the body by two ligaments; the first, which is large and strong, comes from the covering of the diaphragm, and penetrates the substance of the liver; the second is the umbilical vein, which, after birth, degenerates into a ligament. The first, which is the principal, fixes the liver in its situation whilst the body holds an erect posture; the second prevents it from pressing upon the diaphragm when we lie down; and both together *sling* or suspend the liver when we lie upon our backs, so that it may not compress or obstruct the ascending vena cava,‡ to which belongs the important office of returning the blood from the body to the heart.

4. The *bladder* is tied to the navel by the urachus, transformed into a ligament; thus, what was a passage for urine to the fœtus, becomes, after birth, a support or stay to the bladder. The peritonæum also keeps the viscera from confounding themselves with, or pressing irregularly upon, the bladder: for the kidneys and bladder are contained in a distinct duplicature of that mem-

* Keill's Anat. p. 107, ed. 3. † Ib. p. 119. ‡ Ches. Anat. p. 162.

brane, being thereby partitioned off from the other contents of the abdomen.

5. The *kidneys* are lodged in a bed of fat.

6. The *pancreas*, or sweetbread, is strongly tied to the peritonæum, which is the great wrapping sheet that encloses all the bowels contained in the lower belly.*

7. The *spleen* also is confined to its place by an adhesion to the peritonæum and diaphragm, and by a connection with the omentum.† It is possible, in my opinion, that the spleen may be merely a *stuffing*, a soft cushion to fill up a vacancy or hollow, which, unless occupied, would leave the package loose and unsteady: for, supposing that it answers no other purpose than this, it must be vascular, and admit of a circulation through it, in order to be kept alive, or be a part of a living body.

8. The *omentum*, epiplöon, or cawl, is an apron tucked up, or doubled upon itself, at its lowest part. The upper edge is tied to the bottom of the stomach, to the spleen, as hath already been observed, and to part of the duodenum. The reflected edge also, after forming the doubling, comes up behind the front flap, and is tied to the colon and adjoining viscera.‡

9. The *septa* of the brain probably prevent one part of that organ from pressing with too great a weight upon another part. The processes of the *dura mater* divide the cavity of the skull, like so many inner partition walls, and thereby confine each hemisphere and lobe of the brain to the chamber which is assigned to it, without its being liable to rest upon or intermix with the neighbouring parts. The great art and caution of packing, is to prevent one thing hurting another. This, in the head, the chest, and the abdomen of an animal body, is, amongst other methods, provided for by membranous partitions and wrappings which keep the parts separate.

The above may serve as a short account of the manner in which the principal viscera are sustained in their places. But of the provisions for this purpose, by far, in my opinion, the most curious, and where also such a provision was most wanted, is in the *guts*. It is pretty evident that a long narrow tube (in man about five times the length of the body), laid from side to side in folds upon one another, winding in oblique and circuitous directions, composed also of a soft and yielding substance, must, without some extraordinary precautions for its safety, be continually displaced by the various, sudden, and abrupt motions of the body which contains it. I should expect that, if not bruised or wounded by every fall, or leap, or twist, it would be entangled, or be involved with itself; or, at the least, slipped and shaken out of the order in which it is disposed, and which order is neces-

* Keill's Anat. p. 57. † Ches. Anat. p. 167. ‡ Ib. p. 167.

sary to be preserved for the carrying on of the important functions which it has to execute in the animal economy. Let us see, therefore, how a danger so serious, and yet so natural to the length, narrowness, and tubular form of the part, is provided against. The expedient is admirable; and it is this: The intestinal canal, throughout its whole process, is knit to the edge of a broad fat membrane called the *mesentery*. It forms the margin of this mesentery, being stitched and fastened to it like the edging of a ruffle: being four times as long as the mesentery itself, it is what a sempstress would call 'puckered or gathered on' to it. This is the nature of the connection of the gut with the mesentery; and being thus joined to, or rather made a part of, the mesentery, it is folded and wrapped up together with it. Now the mesentery, having a considerable dimension in breadth, being in its substance withal both thick and suety, is capable of a close and safe folding, in comparison of what the intestinal tube would admit of, if it had remained loose. The mesentery, likewise, not only keeps the intestinal canal in its proper place and position under all the turns and windings of its course, but sustains the numberless small vessels, the arteries, the veins, the lymph-ducts, and, above all, the lacteals, which lead from or to almost every point of its coats and cavity. This membrane, which appears to be the great support and security of the alimentary apparatus, is itself strongly tied to the first three vertebræ of the loins.*

III. A third general property of animal forms is *beauty*. I do not mean relative beauty, or that of one individual above another of the same species, or of one species compared with another species; but I mean generally the provision which is made in the body of almost every animal, to adapt its appearance to the perception of the animals with which it converses. In our own species, for example, only consider what the parts and materials are of which the fairest body is composed; and no further observation will be necessary to show how well these things are wrapped up, so as to form a mass which shall be capable of symmetry in its proportion and of beauty in its aspect; how the bones are covered, the bowels concealed, the roughnesses of the muscles smoothed and softened; and how over the whole is drawn an integument, which converts the disgusting materials of a dissecting-room into an object of attraction to the sight, or one upon which it rests, at least, with ease and satisfaction. Much of this effect is to be attributed to the intervention of the cellular or adipose membrane, which lies immediately under the skin; is a kind of lining to it; is moist, soft, slippery, and compressible; everywhere filling up the interstices of the muscles, and forming thereby their roundness and flowing line, as well as the evenness and polish of the whole surface.

* Keill's Anat. p. 45.

All which seems to be a strong indication of design, and of a design studiously directed to this purpose. And it being once allowed that such a purpose existed with respect to *any* of the productions of nature, we may refer, with a considerable degree of probability, other particulars to the same intention; such as the tints of flowers, the plumage of birds, the furs of beasts, the bright scales of fishes, the painted wings of butterflies and beetles, the rich colours and spotted lustre of many tribes of insects.

There are parts also of animals ornamental, and the properties by which they are so not subservient, that we know of, to any other purpose. The *irides* of most animals are very beautiful, without conducing at all, by their beauty, to the perfection of vision; and nature could in no part have employed her pencil to so much advantage, because no part presents itself so conspicuously to the observer, or communicates so great an effect to the whole aspect.

In plants, especially in the flowers of plants, the principle of beauty holds a still more considerable place in their composition —is still more confessed than in animals. Why, for one instance out of a thousand, does the corolla of the tulip, when advanced to its size and maturity, change its colour? The purposes, so far as we can see, of vegetable nutrition, might have been carried on as well by its continuing green. Or if this could not be, consistently with the progress of vegetable life, why break into such a variety of colours? This is no proper effect of age, or of declension in the ascent of the sap; for that, like the autumnal tints, would have produced one colour on one leaf, with marks of fading and withering. It seems a lame account to call it, as it has been called, a disease of the plant. Is it not more probable that this property, which is independent, as it should seem, of the wants and utilities of the plant, was calculated for beauty, intended for display?

A ground, I know, of objection, has been taken against the whole topic of argument—namely, that there is no such thing as beauty at all; in other words, that whatever is useful and familiar, comes of course to be thought beautiful; and that things appear to be so only by their alliance with these qualities.* Our idea of

* [A reason for our possessing *a sense of beauty* is obvious, if we consider the subject attentively. What is the form or mould of the human frame, for example, which pleases the eye, and is considered beautiful? It is that very form or mould which is accompanied by every other physical excellence. Strength, activity, health, and every corporeal property, reside, in their greatest degree, in that mould of frame which seems to us graceful and beautiful. Now the eye, in judging of the human figure, attends to nothing but the outline; and it is therefore evident that it is from some distinct sense or feeling implanted in his mind, that man has been universally led to determine that form to be beautiful which possesses every other physical excellence. Beauty, then, according to this view, is a property attached to material perfection, since those forms that approach nearest to physical perfection in other respects, likewise gratify the eye

beauty is capable of being in so great a degree modified by habit, by fashion, by the experience of advantage or pleasure, and by associations arising out of that experience, that a question has been made, whether it be not altogether generated by these causes, or would have any proper existence without them. It seems, however, a carrying of the conclusion too far, to deny the existence of the principle—namely, a native capacity of perceiving beauty, on account of an influence, or of varieties proceeding from that influence, to which it is subject; seeing that principles the most acknowledged are liable to be affected in the same manner. I should rather argue thus:—The question respects objects of sight. Now, every other sense hath its distinction of agreeable and disagreeable. Some tastes offend the palate, others gratify it. In brutes and insects, this distinction is stronger and more regular than in man. Every horse, ox, sheep, swine, when at liberty to choose, and when in a natural state—that is, when not vitiated by habits forced upon it—eats and rejects the same plants. Many insects which feed upon particular plants, will rather die than change their appropriate leaf. All this looks like a determination in the sense itself to particular tastes. In like manner, smells affect the nose with sensations pleasurable or disgusting. Some sounds, or compositions of sound, delight the ear; others torture it. Habit can do much in all these cases (and it is well for us that it can; for it is this power which reconciles us to many necessities); but has the distinction, in the meantime, of agreeable and disagreeable, no foundation in the sense itself? What is true of the other senses, is most probably true of the eye (the analogy is irresistible)—namely, that there belongs to it an original constitution, fitted to receive pleasure from some impressions, and pain from others.

I do not, however, know that the argument which alleges beauty as a final cause rests upon this concession. We possess a sense of beauty, however we come by it. It in fact exists. Things are not indifferent to this sense; all objects do not suit it: many which we see are agreeable to it; many others disagreeable. It is certainly not the effect of habit upon the particular object, because the most agreeable objects are often the most rare; many, which are very common, continue to be offensive. If they be

most, and our capacity for perceiving beauty has doubtless been implanted in us to increase our appreciation and enjoyment of excellence.

What has been said here respecting the human form, applies in the same degree to the whole animal and vegetable worlds. The horse, which charms the eye by the grace and beauty of his proportions, is first in the trial of speed and strength. The tree, which possesses health, vigour, and other qualities, is, under general circumstances, the most beautiful of its kind. To every rule there are exceptions; but we repeat, that beauty everywhere is the accompaniment of perfection, and the Creating Power seems to have endowed us with a sense of beauty, simply that we may reap greater gratification from the contemplation of perfection.]

made supportable by habit, it is all which habit can do; they never become agreeable. If this sense, therefore, be acquired, it is a result; the produce of numerous and complicated actions of external objects upon the senses, and of the mind upon its sensations. With this *result* there must be a certain congruity, to enable any particular object to please: and that congruity, we contend, is consulted in the *aspect* which is given to animal and vegetable bodies.

IV. The skin and covering of animals is that upon which their appearance chiefly depends, and it is that part which, perhaps, in all animals is most decorated and most free from impurities. But were beauty, or agreeableness of aspect, entirely out of the question, there is another purpose answered by this integument, and by the collocation of the parts of the body beneath it, which is of still greater importance; and that purpose is *concealment*. Were it possible to view through the skin the mechanism of our bodies, the sight would frighten us out of our wits. 'Durst we make a single movement,' asks a lively French writer, 'or stir a step from the place we were in, if we saw our blood circulating, the tendons pulling, the lungs blowing, the humours filtrating, and all the incomprehensible assemblage of fibres, tubes, pumps, valves, currents, pivots, which sustain an existence at once so frail and so presumptuous?'

V. Of animal bodies, considered as masses, there is another property, more curious than it is generally thought to be, which is the faculty of *standing;* and it is more remarkable in two-legged animals than in quadrupeds, and most of all, as being the tallest, and resting upon the smallest base, in man. There is more, I think, in the matter than we are aware of. The statue of a man, placed loosely upon its pedestal, would not be secure of standing half an hour. You are obliged to fix its feet to the block by bolts and solder; or the first shake, the first gust of wind, is sure to throw it down. Yet this statue shall express all the mechanical proportions of a living model. It is not, therefore, the mere figure, or merely placing the centre of gravity within the base, that is sufficient. Either the law of gravitation is suspended in favour of living substances, or something more is done for them, in order to enable them to uphold their posture. There is no reason whatever to doubt but that their parts descend by gravitation in the same manner as those of dead matter. The gift, therefore, appears to me to consist in a faculty of perpetually shifting the centre of gravity by a set of obscure, indeed, but of quick-balancing actions, so as to keep the line of direction, which is a line drawn from that centre to the ground, within its prescribed limits. Of these actions it may be observed, first, that they in part constitute what we call strength. The dead body drops down. The mere adjustment, therefore, of weight and pressure, which may be the same

the moment after death as the moment before, does not support the column. In cases also of extreme weakness, the patient cannot stand upright. Secondly, that these actions are only in a small degree voluntary. A man is seldom conscious of his voluntary powers in keeping himself upon his legs. A child learning to walk is the greatest posture-master in the world; but art, if it may be so called, sinks into habit; and he is soon able to poise himself in a great variety of attitudes, without being sensible either of caution or effort. But still there must be an aptitude of parts, upon which habit can thus attach; a previous capacity of motions, which the animal is thus taught to exercise: and the facility with which this exercise is acquired, forms one object of our admiration. What parts are principally employed, or in what manner each contributes its office, is, as hath already been confessed, difficult to explain. Perhaps the obscure motion of the bones of the feet may have their share in this effect. They are put in action by every slip or vacillation of the body, and seem to assist in restoring its balance. Certain it is that this circumstance in the structure of the foot—namely, its being composed of many small bones applied to and articulating with one another by diversely-shaped surfaces, instead of being made of one piece, like the last of a shoe, is very remarkable. I suppose, also, that it would be difficult to stand firmly upon stilts or wooden legs, though their base exactly imitated the figure and dimensions of the sole of the foot. The alternation of the joints, the knee-joint bending backward, the hip-joint forward; the flexibility in every direction of the spine, especially in the loins and neck, appear to be of great moment in preserving the equilibrium of the body. With respect to this last circumstance, it is observable that the vertebræ are so confined by ligaments, as to allow no more slipping upon their bases than what is just sufficient to break the shock which any violent motion may occasion to the body. A certain degree also of tension of the sinews appears to be essential to an erect posture; for it is by the loss of this that the dead or paralytic body drops down. The whole is a wonderful result of combined powers, and of very complicated operations. Indeed, that *standing* is not so simple a business as we imagine it to be, is evident from the strange gesticulations of a drunken man, who has lost the government of the centre of gravity.*

* [The distinguished physiologist Magendie has explained with great accuracy the succession of contrivances and balances by which the erect position of the body is easily maintained, and the weight of the circumjacent soft parts transmitted progressively through the solid framework, from the top to the base, in such a manner that each portion bears its load under the greatest possible advantage. The three curves, for example, which the spinal column presents, give it sixteen times more *resistance* than it would possess if straight, and enable it to support not only the weight of the organs above and around it, but also very heavy burdens. In every quarter against which force is strongly directed, we find the balance maintained by powerful muscles. Thus the head, having its

We have said that this property is the most worthy of observation in the *human* body: but a *bird*, resting upon its perch, or hopping upon a spray, affords no mean specimen of the same faculty. A chicken runs off as soon as it is hatched from the egg; yet a chicken, considered geometrically, and with relation to its centre of gravity, its line of direction, and its equilibrium, is a very irregular solid. Is this gift, therefore, or instruction? May it not be said to be with great attention that nature hath balanced the body upon its pivots?

I observe also in the same *bird* a piece of useful mechanism of this kind. In the trussing of a fowl, upon bending the legs and thighs up towards the body, the cook finds that the claws close of their own accord. Now, let it be remembered that this is the position of the limbs in which the bird rests upon its perch. And in this position it sleeps in safety; for the claws do their office in keeping hold of the support, not by any exertion of voluntary power, which sleep might suspend, but by the traction of the tendons in consequence of the attitude which the legs and thighs take by the bird sitting down, and to which the mere weight of the body gives the force that is necessary.

VI. Regarding the human body as a mass, regarding the general conformations which obtain in it, regarding also particular parts in respect to those conformations, we shall be led to

point of support placed much nearer the posterior than the anterior part, tends naturally to fall forwards; a result prevented by the strong muscles of the neck, acting under the advantage of the superior curve of the spine. In like manner do the large muscles, arising from the back part of the spine, in the loins, counteract the weight of the chest with its contents, bearing on the upper and anterior portion of the spinal column. This is proved by the fatigue which we feel in the region of the loins, after remaining too long in a standing position. The spinal column, having thus the whole weight of the upper part of the body transmitted to it, is planted, not upon the middle quarter of the pelvis, but upon its posterior part. This would throw the body backwards, were it not for the intestines and the other soft parts below the chest, which press on the anterior portion of the pelvis, and, aided by an admirable adjustment of muscles, place the trunk on the top of the thigh-bones, in exact equilibrium.

The thigh-bones are not straight. At their head they have a portion called the neck, which passes obliquely outwards to the extent of two or three inches, and thus places the weight of the trunk as nearly as possible upon an arch, the figure best calculated to resist pressure and diffuse it equally. From the thigh-bones the weight is transmitted through the leg-bones to the foot, where we find a complicated arrangement for its equal and easy reception. We have, in the first place, an arch; that arch not composed of one bone, but of a series of bones, through which the force is progressively diffused. Secondly, the bones of the arch have movable articulations with each other, so that they can to a certain extent accommodate themselves to the inclination at which the pressure of the body is conveyed to them. Again, they are protected inferiorly by skin of peculiar thickness, and by soft cushions of fat, well calculated to obviate the effects of pressure. The thickness of the skin may be owing to the circumstances of the part, but the layer of fat exists in despite of these circumstances.

Numberless minor balancings might be pointed out, all of which contribute to the maintenance of the erect position of the human body. Wonderful as the multitude of its motions is, scarcely less so is its very repose in the attitude natural to and characteristic of the race.]

observe what I call 'interrupted analogies.' The following are examples of what I mean by these terms; and I do not know how such critical deviations can, by any possible hypothesis, be accounted for without design.

1. All the bones of the body are covered with a *periosteum*, except the teeth, where it ceases, and an enamel of ivory, which saws and files will hardly touch, comes into its place. No one can doubt of the use and propriety of this difference; of the 'analogy' being thus 'interrupted:' of the rule, which belongs to the conformation of the bones, stopping where it does stop: for had so exquisitely sensible a membrane as the periosteum invested the teeth, as it invests every other bone of their body, *their* action, necessary exposure, and irritation, would have subjected the animal to continual pain. General as it is, it was not the sort of integument which suited the teeth; what they stood in need of was a strong, hard, insensible, defensive coat; and exactly such a covering is given to them in the ivory enamel which adheres to their surface.

2. The scarf-skin, which clothes all the rest of the body, gives way, at the extremities of the toes and fingers, to *nails*. A man has only to look at his hand, to observe with what nicety and precision that covering, which extends over every other part, is here superseded by a different substance and a different texture. Now, if either the rule had been necessary, or the deviation from it accidental, this effect would not be seen. When I speak of the rule being necessary, I mean the formation of the skin upon the surface being produced by a set of causes constituted without design, and acting, as all ignorant causes must act, by a general operation. Were this the case, no account could be given of the operation being suspended at the fingers' ends, or on the back part of the fingers, and not on the fore part. On the other hand, if the deviation were accidental, an error, an anomalism—were it anything else than settled by intention—we should meet with nails upon other parts of the body. They would be scattered over the surface like warts or pimples.*

* [Some observations on the uses of the nails have been made in the additions to the text in a previous chapter. It may perhaps be thought superfluous in us to repeat here our deprecation of Paley's reference of warts and pimples to chance: a mistake which he commits, for the second time, at the conclusion of the present paragraph. So far from being things of chance, they evince design in the highest degree, being the result of a power benevolently implanted in the system, for the counteraction of disease, by transferring it from the sensitive and vital interior to the superficial and less delicate parts of the body. The physician creates pimples artificially with this view; and if in his hands they are useful and sanative, can we suppose that they exist naturally without object or design? We cannot trace out the deviation, either personal or hereditary, from the laws of health, which caused an individual excrescence; but we may safely conclude, from our knowledge of their general use, that there is, in every instance, a cause not less distinct than its operation is useful and its origin benevolent.]

3. All the great cavities of the body are enclosed by membranes except the *skull*. Why should not the brain be content with the same covering as that which serves for the other principal organs of the body? The heart, the lungs, the liver, the stomach, the bowels, have all soft integuments, and nothing else. The muscular coats are all soft and membranous. I can see a reason for this distinction in the final cause, but in no other. The importance of the brain to life (which experience proves to be immediate), and the extreme tenderness of its substance, make a solid case more necessary for it than for any other part; and such a case the hardness of the skull supplies. When the smallest portion of this natural casquet is lost, how carefully, yet how imperfectly, is it replaced by a plate of metal! If an anatomist should say that this bony protection is not confined to the brain, but is extended along the course of the spine, I answer, that he adds strength to the argument. If he remark that the chest also is fortified by bones, I reply that I should have alleged this instance myself, if the ribs had not appeared subservient to the purpose of motion as well as of defence. What distinguishes the skull from every other cavity is, that the bony covering completely surrounds its contents, and is calculated not for motion, but solely for defence. Those hollows, likewise, and inequalities, which we observe in the inside of the skull, and which exactly fit the folds of the brain, answer the important design of keeping the substance of the brain steady, and of guarding it against concussions.

CHAPTER XII.

COMPARATIVE ANATOMY.

Whenever we find a general plan pursued, yet with such variations in it as are, in each case, required by the particular exigency of the subject to which it is applied, we possess, in such plan and such adaptation, the strongest evidence that can be afforded of intelligence and design; an evidence which most completely excludes every other hypothesis. If the general plan proceeded from any fixed necessity in the nature of things, how could it accommodate itself to the various wants and uses which it had to serve under different circumstances and on different occasions? *Arkwright's* mill was invented for the spinning of cotton. We see it employed for the spinning of wool, flax, and hemp, with such modifications of the original principle, such variety in the

same plan, as the texture of those different materials rendered necessary. Of the machine's being put together with design, if it were possible to doubt, whilst we saw it only under one mode and in one form; when we came to observe it in its different applications, with such changes of structure, such additions and supplements, as the special and particular use in each case demanded, we could not refuse any longer our assent to the proposition, 'that intelligence, properly and strictly so called (including under that name foresight, consideration, reference to utility), had been employed, as well in the primitive plan, as in the several changes and accommodations which it is made to undergo.'

Very much of this reasoning is applicable to what has been called *Comparative Anatomy*. In their general economy, in the outlines of the plan, in the construction as well as offices of their principal parts, there exists between all large terrestrial animals a close resemblance. In all, life is sustained, and the body nourished, by nearly the same apparatus. The heart, the lungs, the stomach, the liver, the kidneys, are much alike in all. The same fluid (for no distinction of blood has been observed) circulates through their vessels, and nearly in the same order. The same cause, therefore, whatever that cause was, has been concerned in the origin, has governed the production, of these different animal forms.

When we pass on to smaller animals, or to the inhabitants of a different element, the resemblance becomes more distant and more obscure; but still the plan accompanies us.

And, what we can never enough commend, and which it is our business at present to exemplify, the plan is attended, through all its varieties and deflections, by subserviences to special occasions and utilities.

I. The *covering* of different animals (though whether I am correct in classing this under their anatomy I do not know) is the first thing which presents itself to our observation; and is, in truth, both for its variety and its suitableness to their several natures, as much to be admired as any part of their structure. We have bristles, hair, wool, furs, feathers, quills, prickles, scales; yet in this diversity both of material and form, we cannot change one animal's coat for another, without evidently changing it for the worse; taking care, however, to remark that these coverings are, in many cases, armour as well as clothing—intended for protection as well as warmth.

The *human* animal is the only one which is naked, and the only one which can clothe itself. This is one of the properties which render him an animal of all climates and of all seasons. He can adapt the warmth or lightness of his covering to the temperature of his habitation. Had he been born with a fleece upon his back, although he might have been comforted by its warmth in high

latitudes, it would have oppressed him by its weight and heat, as the species spread towards the equator.*

What art, however, does for men, nature has in many instances done for those animals which are incapable of art. Their clothing, of its own accord, changes with their necessities. This is particularly the case with that large tribe of quadrupeds which are covered with *furs*. Every dealer in hare-skins and rabbit-skins knows how much the fur is thickened by the approach of winter. It seems to be a part of the same constitution and the same design that wool in hot countries degenerates, as it is called, but in truth (most happily for the animal's case) passes into hair; whilst, on the contrary, that hair on the dogs of the polar regions is turned into wool, or something very like it. To which may be

* [It ought to be observed, however, that nature, with that extraordinary economy of means and similitude of plan everywhere apparent throughout her works, has in reality bestowed on man a rudimental covering, similar in character and purpose to the fur, hair, &c. of the lower animals. The human skin consists of three layers; the undermost named the *corium*, or true skin, the intermediate one the *rete mucosum*, and the outer layer the *epidermis*, cuticle, or scarf-skin. The true skin is strong, sensible, elastic, and very vascular, and the rete mucosum is a soft delicate layer of animal matter, containing the colouring matter which gives the hue to the skin. Unlike these, the cuticle, the part to which we refer at present, is furnished with no vessels or nerves, and is consequently insensible to pain. It is formed of albuminous matter, and is the same, in chemical composition, with hair or horn.

Here, then, we find a covering thrown over the surface of the human body, resembling in every point, excepting in form and extent, the various clothings with which nature has invested animals—devoid almost of vital connection with the system, and secreted, in self-defence seemingly, by the parts beneath it. The manner in which this secretion is effected, in the instance of hair, may serve as an illustration in the same process in the case of every other species of natural clothing, whether wool, fur, feathers, bristles, or quills. A small oval pulp, well supplied with blood-vessels and nerves, and enclosed in a sheath, forms the bulb of the hair, which is situated in the true skin. From the inside of the sheath, and top of the pulp, depositions of matter issue, which are gradually forced up in an oblique direction, till they pierce the rete mucosum and the cuticle. For a short distance, the hair continues to be a filled tube, consisting of pulp and sheath; but before the cuticle is penetrated, this tubularity ceases, and the hair, though still continuing to a small extent vascular, becomes one uniform horny substance. When the skin becomes dry in age, the nourishing vessels of the hair lose their activity, it loses its colour, and finally becomes detached.

Let us consider for a moment the purpose for which hair, fur, and other natural coverings formed in this manner were intended, and then we shall the better judge of their fitness. If these coverings were equally sensible with the rest of the body, it is perfectly obvious that they would be useless, since any suffering from heat or cold, or injurious contact, would be participated in by these parts as well as the rest of the body. Again, total insensibility, or at least want of vascularity, is almost incompatible with their durable connection with the body. But here we have a substance, formed on the very verge of inanimation—barely within the pale of organised matter—and consequently capable of warding off, unharmed, injuries of every kind from the sensitive body, and yet partaking of vitality so far as to remain permanently attached to the living frame. That chance should determine not only that different animals should have hair, furs, feathers, cuticle, or quills, each as its various circumstances demanded, but that all these substances should be of the uniform and peculiar character which we have described, is surely more than reason can believe.]

referred, what naturalists have remarked, that bears, wolves, foxes, hares, which do not take the water, have the fur much thicker on the back than the belly; whereas on the beaver it is the thickest upon the belly, as are the feathers on water-fowl. We know the final cause of all this; and we know no other.

The *covering of birds* cannot escape the most vulgar observation. Its lightness, its smoothness, its warmth; the disposition of the feathers all inclined backward, the down about their stem, the overlapping of their tips, their different configuration in different parts, not to mention the variety of their colours, constitute a vestment for the body so beautiful, and so appropriate to the life which the animal is to lead, as that, I think, we should have had no conception of anything equally perfect, if we had never seen it, or can now imagine anything more so. Let us suppose (what is possible only in supposition) a person who had never seen a bird, to be presented with a plucked pheasant, and bid to set his wits to work how to contrive for it a covering which shall unite the qualities of warmth, levity, and least resistance to the air, and the highest degree of each; giving it also as much of beauty and ornament as he could afford. He is the person to behold the work of the Deity, in this part of his creation, with the sentiments which are due to it.

The commendation, which the general aspect of the feathered world seldom fails of exciting, will be increased by further examination. It is one of those cases in which the philosopher has more to admire than the common observer. Every *feather* is a mechanical wonder. If we look at the quill, we find properties not easily brought together—strength and lightness. I know few things more remarkable than the strength and lightness of the very pen with which I am writing. If we cast our eye to the upper part of the stem, we see a material, made for the purpose, used in no other class of animals, and in no other part of birds—tough, light, pliant, elastic. The pith also, which feeds the feathers, is, amongst animal substances, perfectly unique; neither bone, flesh, membrane, nor tendon.*

But the artificial part of a feather is the *beard*, or, as it is sometimes, I believe, called, the vane. By the beards are meant what are fastened on each side of the stem, and what constitute the breadth of the feather—what we usually strip off from one side or both when we make a pen. The separate pieces, or laminæ, of which the beard is composed, are called threads, sometimes filaments or rays. Now, the first thing which an attentive observer will remark is, how much stronger the beard of the feather

* The quill part of a feather is composed of circular and longitudinal fibres. In making a pen, you must scrape off the coat of circular fibres, or the quill will split in a ragged, jagged manner, making what boys call *cats' teeth*.

shows itself to be, when pressed in a direction perpendicular to its plane, than when rubbed either up or down in the line of the stem; and he will soon discover the structure which occasions this difference—namely, that the laminæ whereof these beards are composed are flat, and placed with their flat sides towards each other; by which means, whilst they *easily* bend for the approaching of each other, as any one may perceive by drawing his finger ever so lightly upwards, they are much harder to bend out of their plane, which is the direction in which they have to encounter the impulse and pressure of the air, and in which their strength is wanted and put to the trial.

This is one particularity in the structure of a feather; a second is still more extraordinary. Whoever examines a feather, cannot help taking notice that the threads, or laminæ, of which we have been speaking, in their natural state, *unite;* that their union is something more than the mere apposition of loose surfaces; that they are not parted asunder without some degree of force; that nevertheless there is no glutinous cohesion between them; that, therefore, by some mechanical means or other, they catch or clasp among themselves, thereby giving to the beard or vane its closeness and compactness of texture. Nor is this all: when two laminæ, which have been separated by accident or force, are brought together again, they immediately *reclasp;* the connection, whatever it was, is perfectly recovered, and the beard of the leather becomes as smooth and firm as if nothing had happened to it. Draw your finger down the feather, which is against the grain, and you break probably the junction of some of the contiguous threads; draw your finger up the feather, and you restore all things to their former state. This is no common contrivance: and now for the mechanism by which it is effected. The threads, or laminæ, above-mentioned are *interlaced* with one another; and the interlacing is performed by means of a vast number of fibres, or teeth, which the laminæ shoot forth *on each side*, and which hook and grapple together. A friend of mine counted fifty of these fibres in one-twentieth of an inch. These fibres are crooked, but curved after a different manner: for those which proceed from the thread on the side towards the extremity of the feather are longer, more flexible, and bent downward; whereas those which proceed from the side towards the beginning, or quill-end of the feather, are shorter, firmer, and turn upwards. The process, then, which takes place, is as follows:—When two laminæ are pressed together, so that these long fibres are forced far enough over the short ones, *their* crooked parts fall into the cavity made by the crooked parts of the other; just as the latch that is fastened to a door enters into the cavity of the catch fixed to the door-post, and there hooking itself, *fastens* the door; for it is properly in this manner that one thread of a feather is fastened to the other.

This admirable structure of the feather, which it is easy to see with the microscope, succeeds perfectly for the use to which nature has designed it; which use was not only that the laminæ might be united, but that, when one thread or lamina has been separated from another by some external violence, it might be reclasped with sufficient facility and expedition.*

In the *ostrich*, this apparatus of crotchets and fibres, of hooks and teeth, is wanting; and we see the consequence of the want. The filaments hang loose and separate from one another, forming only a kind of down; which constitution of the feathers, however it may fit them for the flowing honours of a lady's head-dress, may be reckoned an imperfection in the bird, inasmuch as wings composed of these feathers, although they may greatly assist it in running, do not serve for flight.†

But under the present division of our subject, our business with feathers is, as they are the *covering* of the bird. And herein a singular circumstance occurs. In the small order of birds which winter with us, from a snipe downwards, let the external colour of the feathers be what it will, their Creator has universally given them a bed of *black* down next their bodies. Black, we know, is the warmest colour; and the purpose here is, to *keep in* the heat arising from the heart and circulation of the blood. It is further likewise remarkable, that this is not found in larger birds; for which there is also a reason: small birds are much more exposed to the cold than large ones, forasmuch as they present, in proportion to their bulk, a much larger surface to the air. If a turkey were divided into a number of wrens (supposing the shape of the turkey and the wren to be similar), the surface of all the wrens would exceed the surface of the turkey, in the proportion of the length, breadth (or of any homologous line), of a turkey to that of a wren; which would be perhaps a proportion of ten to one. It

* The above account is taken from Memoirs for a Natural History of Animals, by the Royal Academy of Paris, published in 1701, p. 219.

† [There are other points in the anatomy of the ostrich which, like the peculiarity in the structure of the feathers, could scarcely result from any cause but design, and which strongly corroborate the opinion that the animal was never intended to fly, but to run. By a specific arrangement of the processes or projections of the spine, the back of birds generally is fixed; that is to say, the bones composing the spinal column in the back do not move upon each other as they do in the neck. This deviation from the general plan, as it prevails through the vertebrated tribes, is for the purpose, it is supposed, of fixing the trunk during the violent motions which occur in flying; and the supposition is borne out by the fact that, in the ostrich and other birds which do not fly, the spinal column in the back is equally movable as in man and other vertebrated animals. Before concluding this note, we may be allowed surely to claim attention to the remarkable length of limb in the ostrich and cassowary, as a provident compensation for the want of those powers possessed by their feathered kind. If it be said that the habit of running made the long legs, may we not justly ask in reply, How comes it, then, that mice, or any other running animals, do not exhibit limbs equally disproportioned to their bodies with those of the ostrich?]

was necessary, therefore, that small birds should be more warmly clad than large ones; and this seems to be the expedient by which that exigency is provided for.

II. In comparing different animals, I know no part of their structure which exhibits greater variety, or in that variety a nicer accommodation to their respective conveniency, than that which is seen in the different formations of their *mouths*. Whether the purpose be the reception of aliment merely, or the catching of prey, the picking up of seeds, the cropping of herbage, the extraction of juices, the suction of liquids, the breaking and grinding of food, the taste of that food, together with the respiration of air, and, in conjunction with it, the utterance of sound; these various offices are assigned to this one part, and, in different species, provided for, as they are wanted, by its different constitution. In the human species, forasmuch as there are hands to convey the food to the mouth, the mouth is flat, and by reason of its flatness, fitted only for *reception:* whereas the projecting jaws, the wide rictus, the pointed teeth of the dog and his affinities, enable them to apply their mouths to *snatch and seize* the objects of their pursuit. The full lips, the rough tongue, the corrugated cartilaginous palate, the broad cutting teeth of the ox, the deer, the horse, and the sheep, qualify this tribe for *browsing* upon their pasture; either gathering large mouthfuls at once, where the grass is long, which is the case with the ox in particular, or biting close where it is short, which the horse and the sheep are able to do in a degree that one could hardly expect. The retired under-jaw of a swine *works in the ground*, after the protruding snout, like a prong or ploughshare, has made its way to the roots upon which it feeds. A conformation so happy was not the gift of chance.*

In *birds*, this organ assumes a new character—new both in substance and in form; but in both wonderfully adapted to the wants and uses of a distinct mode of existence. We have no longer the fleshy lips, the teeth of enamelled bone; but we have, in the place of these two parts, and to perform the office of both, a hard substance (of the same nature with that which composes the nails, claws, and hoofs of quadrupeds) cut out into proper shapes, and mechanically suited to the actions which are wanted. The sharp edge and tempered point of the *sparrow's* bill picks

* [This observation may be carried further with regard to the swine in its wild state, where the peculiarities of the race are strongly marked. The fitness of the head, neck, and shoulders, to follow out the same purposes with the snout, is here obvious at a glance. The whole conformation of these parts indicates that on them the animal depends alike for sustenance and defence. Wedge-like in shape, the head is attached to the body by enormous masses of muscles, which enable the animal to drive its tusks into the earth for roots, or force its headlong way through the thicket. The retracted under-jaw completes the apparatus, the mouth never coming into play until the strong wedge-head and tusks have forced or torn up the necessary food.]

almost every kind of seed from its concealment in the plant; and not only so, but hulls the grain, breaks and shatters the coats of the seed, in order to get at the kernel. The hooked beak of the hawk tribe separates the flesh from the bones of the animals which it feeds upon almost with the cleanness and precision of a dissector's knife. The butcher-bird transfixes its prey upon the spike of a thorn, whilst it picks its bones. In some birds of this class we have the *cross*-bill—that is, both the upper and lower bill hooked, and their tips crossing. The *spoon*-bill enables the goose to graze, to collect its food from the bottom of pools, or to seek it amidst the soft or liquid substances with which it is mixed. The *long* tapering bill of the snipe and woodcock penetrates still deeper into moist earth, which is the bed in which the food of that species is lodged. This is exactly the instrument which the animal wanted. It did not want strength in its bill, which was inconsistent with the slender form of the animal's neck, as well as unnecessary for the kind of aliment upon which it subsists; but it wanted length to reach its object.

But the species of bill which belongs to birds that live by *suction*, deserves to be described in its relation to that office. They are what naturalists call serrated or dentated bills, the inside of them, towards the edge, being thickly set with parallel or concentric rows of short, strong, sharp-pointed prickles. These, though they should be called teeth, are not for the purpose of mastication, like the teeth of quadrupeds; nor yet, as in fish, for the seizing and retaining of their prey; but for a quite different use. They form a filter. The *duck* by means of them discusses the mud; examining with great accuracy the puddle, the brake, every mixture which is likely to contain her food. The operation is thus carried on:—The liquid or semiliquid substances in which the animal has plunged her bill, she draws, by the action of her lungs, through the narrow interstices which lie between these teeth; catching, as the stream passes across her beak, whatever it may happen to bring along with it that proves agreeable to her choice, and easily dismissing all the rest. Now, suppose the purpose to have been, out of a mass of confused and heterogeneous substances, to separate for the use of the animal, or rather to enable the animal to separate for its own, those few particles which suited its taste and digestion, what more artificial or more commodious instrument of selection could have been given to it than this natural filter? It has been observed also (what must enable the bird to choose and distinguish with greater acuteness, as well probably as what greatly increases its luxury), that the bills of this species are furnished with large nerves, that they are covered with a skin, and that the nerves run down to the very extremity. In the curlew, woodcock, and snipe, there are *three pairs* of nerves, equal almost to the optic nerve in thick-

ness, which pass first along the roof of the mouth, and then along the upper chap down to the point of the bill, long as the bill is.

[The bill, moreover, is of remarkable service to some birds in the construction of their habitations. The ivory-billed woodpecker, for example, has a bill as white and hard as ivory, and elegantly fluted. With this powerful instrument the bird can strip a dead or decaying tree of its bark, in search of insects, with amazing rapidity, and is able to dig in a growing tree a cavity four or five feet deep for a residence. Corresponding to this bill and its uses, the woodpecker's tongue, as will be afterwards more fully explained, is remarkable for its length, and the quickness with which the bird can dart it out in search of prey.]

But to return to the train of our observations. The similitude between the bills of birds and the mouths of quadrupeds is exactly such as, for the sake of the argument, might be wished for. It is near enough to show the continuation of the same plan; it is remote enough to exclude the supposition of the difference being produced by action or use. A more prominent contour, or a wider gape, might be resolved into the effect of continued efforts on the part of the species to thrust out the mouth, or open it to the stretch. But by what course of action, or exercise, or endeavour, shall we get rid of the lips, the gums, the teeth, and acquire in the place of them pincers of horn? By what habit shall we so completely change not only the shape of the part, but the substance of which it is composed? The truth is, if we had seen no other than the mouths of quadrupeds, we should have thought no other could have been formed: little could we have supposed that all the purposes of a mouth, furnished with lips and armed with teeth, could be answered by an instrument which had none of these; could be supplied, and that with many additional advantages, by the hardness, and sharpness, and figure of the bills of birds. Everything about the animal *mouth* is mechanical. The teeth of fish have their points turned backward, like the teeth of a wool or cotton card. The teeth of lobsters work one against another, like the sides of a pair of shears. In many insects the mouth is converted into a pump or sucker, fitted at the end sometimes with a wimble, sometimes with a forceps;* by which double provision—namely, of the tube and the penetrating form of the point—the insect first bores through the integuments of its prey, and then extracts the juices. And, what is most extraordinary of all, one sort of mouth, as the

* [The very lowest orders of organised bodies—the infusory animalcules, and the flukes and hydatids—are provided with sucking orifices, elongated in some cases into the form of a proboscis. The food of these creatures being fluid, no other mechanism is required than an apparatus for suction. In some of these animals an immense number (upwards of a hundred) of sucking disks have been discovered, but it is doubtful whether these act as mouths, or merely serve as the means of adhesion.]

occasion requires, shall be changed into another sort. The caterpillar could not live without teeth; in several species, the butterfly formed from it could not use them. The old teeth, therefore, are cast off with the exuviæ of the grub; a new and totally different apparatus assumes their place in the fly. Amid these novelties of form we sometimes forget that it is, all the while, the animal's *mouth;* that whether it be lips, or teeth, or bill, or beak, or shears, or pump, it is the same part diversified: and it is also remarkable that, under all the varieties of configuration with which we are acquainted, and which are very great, the organs of taste and smelling are situated near each other.

III. To the mouth adjoins the gullet: in this part also comparative anatomy discovers a difference of structure adapted to the different necessities of the animal. In brutes, because the posture of their neck conduces little to the passage of the aliment, the fibres of the gullet, which act in this business, run in two close spiral lines crossing each other: in men, these fibres run only a little obliquely from the upper end of the œsophagus to the stomach, into which, by a gentle contraction, they easily transmit the descending morsels; that is to say, for the more laborious deglutition of animals, which thrust their food *up* instead of *down*, and also through a longer passage, a proportionably more powerful apparatus of muscles is provided; more powerful, not merely by the strength of the fibres, which might be attributed to the greater exercise of their force, but in their collocation, which is a determinate circumstance, and must have been original.

IV. The gullet leads to the *intestines:* here likewise, as before, comparing quadrupeds with man, under a general similitude we meet with appropriate differences. The *valvulæ conniventes*, or, as they are by some called, the semilunar valves, found in the human intestine, are wanting in that of brutes. These are wrinkles or plaits of the innermost coat of the guts, the effect of which is to retard the progress of the food through the alimentary canal. It is easy to understand how much more necessary such a provision may be to the body of an animal of an erect posture, and in which, consequently, the weight of the food is added to the action of the intestine, than in that of a quadruped, in which the course of the food, from its entrance to its exit, is nearly horizontal: but it is impossible to assign any cause, except the final cause, for this distinction actually taking place. So far as depends upon the action of the part, this structure was more to be expected in a quadruped than in a man. In truth, it must in both have been formed not by action, but in direct opposition to action and to pressure; but the opposition which would arise from pressure, is greater in the upright trunk than in any other. That theory, therefore, is pointedly contradicted by the example before us. The structure is found where its generation, according to the

method by which the theorist would have it generated, is the most difficult; but (*observe*) it is found where its effect is most useful.

The different length of the intestines in carnivorous and herbivorous animals has been noticed on a former occasion. The shortest, I believe, is that of some birds of prey, in which the intestinal canal is little more than a straight passage from the mouth to the vent. The longest is in the deer kind. The intestines of a Canadian stag, four feet high, measured ninety-six feet.* The intestine of a sheep, unravelled, measured thirty times the length of the body. The intestine of a wild-cat is only three times the length of the body. Universally, where the substance upon which the animal feeds is of slow concoction, or yields its chyle with more difficulty, there the passage is circuitous and dilatory, that time and space may be allowed for the change and the absorption which are necessary. Where the food is soon dissolved, or already half assimilated, an unnecessary, or perhaps hurtful detention is avoided, by giving to it a shorter and a readier route.

V. In comparing the *bones* of different animals, we are struck, in the bones of birds, with a *propriety*, which could only proceed from the wisdom of an intelligent and designing Creator. In the bones of an animal which is to fly, the two qualities required are strength and lightness. Wherein, therefore, do the bones of birds (I speak of the cylindrical bones) differ in these respects from the bones of quadrupeds? In three properties: first, their cavities are much larger in proportion to the weight of the bone than in those of quadrupeds; secondly, these cavities are empty; thirdly, the shell is of a firmer texture than the substance of other bones. It is easy to observe these particulars, even in picking the wing or leg of a chicken. Now, the weight being the same, the diameter, it is evident, will be greater in a hollow bone than in a solid one, and with the diameter, as every mathematician can prove, is increased (other things being equal) the strength of the cylinder, or its resistance to breaking. In a word, a bone of the *same weight* would not have been so strong in any other form; and to have made it heavier, would have incommoded the animal's flight. Yet this form could not be acquired by use, or the bone become hollow and tubular by exercise. What appetency could excavate a bone?

VI. The *lungs* also of birds, as compared with the lungs of quadrupeds, contain in them a provision, distinguishingly calculated for this same purpose of levitation—namely, a communication (not found in other kinds of animals) between the air-vessels of the lungs and the cavities of the body; so that, by the intro-

* Mem. Acad. Paris, 1701, p. 170.

mission of air from one to the other (at the will, as it should seem, of the animal), its body can be occasionally puffed out, and its tendency to descend in the air, or its specific gravity, made less. The bodies of birds are blown up from their lungs (which no other animal bodies are), and thus rendered buoyant.

VII. All birds are *oviparous*. This likewise carries on the work of gestation with as little increase as possible of the weight of the body. A gravid uterus would have been a troublesome burden to a bird in its flight. The advantage, in this respect, of an oviparous procreation is, that whilst the whole brood are hatched together, the eggs are excluded singly, and at considerable intervals. Ten, fifteen, or twenty young birds may be produced in one cletch or covey, yet the parent bird have never been encumbered by the load of more than one full-grown egg at one time.

VIII. A principal topic of comparison between animals is in their *instruments of motion*. These come before us under three divisions—feet, wings, and fins. I desire any man to say which of the three is best fitted for its use, or whether the same consummate art be not conspicuous in them all. The constitution of the elements in which the motion is to be performed is very different. The animal action must necessarily follow that constitution. The Creator, therefore, if we might so speak, had to prepare for different situations, for different difficulties; yet the purpose is accomplished not less successfully in one case than in the other. And, as between *wings* and the corresponding limbs of quadrupeds, it is accomplished without deserting the general idea. The idea is modified, not deserted. Strip a wing of its feathers, and it bears no obscure resemblance to the fore-leg of a quadruped. The articulations at the shoulder and the cubitus are much alike; and, what is a closer circumstance, in both cases the upper part of the limb consists of a single bone, the lower part of two.

But, fitted up with its furniture of feathers and quills, it becomes a wonderful instrument, more artificial than its first appearance indicates, though that be very striking; at least the use which the bird makes of its wings in flying is more complicated and more curious than is generally known. One thing is certain, that if the flapping of the wings in flight were no more than the reciprocal motion of the same surface in opposite directions, either upwards and downwards, or estimated in any oblique line, the bird would lose as much by one motion as she gained by another. The skylark could never ascend by such an action as this; for, though the stroke upon the air by the under side of her wing would carry her up, the stroke from the upper side, when she raised her wing again, would bring her down. In order, therefore, to account for the advantage which the bird derives from her wing, it is necessary to suppose that the surface of the wing,

measured upon the same plane, is contracted whilst the wing is drawn up, and let out to its full expansion when it descends upon the air, for the purpose of moving the body by the reaction of that element. Now, the form and structure of the wing, its external convexity, the disposition, and particularly the overlapping, of its larger feathers, the action of the muscles, and joints of the pinions, are all adapted to this alternate adjustment of its shape and dimensions. Such a twist, for instance, or semi-rotatory motion, is given to the great feathers of the wing, that they strike the air with their flat side, but rise from the stroke slantwise. The turning of the oar in rowing, whilst the rower advances his hand for a new stroke, is a similar operation to that of the feather, and takes its name from the resemblance. I believe that this faculty is not found in the great feathers of the tail. This is the place also for observing that the pinions are so set upon the body as to bring down the wings, not vertically, but in a direction obliquely tending towards the tail; which motion, by virtue of the common resolution of forces, does two things at the same time—supports the body in the air, and carries it forward. The *steerage* of a bird in its flight is effected partly by the wings, but in a principal degree by the tail. And herein we meet with a circumstance not a little remarkable. Birds with long legs have short tails, and in their flight place their legs close to their bodies, at the same time stretching them out backwards as far as they can. In this position the legs extend beyond the rump, and become the rudder, supplying that steerage which the tail could not.

From the *wings* of birds, the transition is easy to the *fins* of fish. They are both to their respective tribes the instruments of their motion; but in the work which they have to do there is a considerable difference, founded in this circumstance. Fish, unlike birds, have very nearly the same specific gravity with the element in which they move. In the case of fish, therefore, there is little or no weight to bear up; what is wanted is only an impulse sufficient to carry the body through a resisting medium, or to maintain the posture, or to support or restore the balance of the body, which is always the most unsteady where there is no weight to sink it. For these offices the fins are as large as necessary, though much smaller than wings, their action mechanical, their position, and the muscles by which they are moved, in the highest degree convenient. The following short account of some experiments upon fish, made for the purpose of ascertaining the use of their fins, will be the best confirmation of what we assert. In most fish, beside the great fin, the tail, we find two pairs of fins upon the sides, two single fins upon the back, and one upon the belly, or rather between the belly and the tail. The *balancing* use of these organs is proved in this manner: Of the large-headed fish, if you cut off the pectoral fins—that is, the pair

which lies close behind the gills—the head falls prone to the bottom; if the right pectoral fin only be cut off, the fish leans to that side; if the ventral fin on the same side be cut away, then it loses its equilibrium entirely; if the dorsal and ventral fins be cut off, the fish reels to the right and left. When the fish dies—that is, when the fins cease to play—the belly turns upwards. The use of the same parts for *motion* is seen in the following observation upon them when put in action: The pectoral, and more particularly the ventral fins, serve to *raise and depress* the fish; when the fish desires to have a *retrograde* motion, a stroke forward with the pectoral fin effectually produces it; if the fish desire to turn either way, a single blow with the tail the opposite way sends it round at once; if the tail strike both ways, the motion produced by the double lash is *progressive*, and enables the fish to dart forwards with an astonishing velocity.* The result is not only in some cases the most rapid, but in all cases the most gentle, pliant, easy animal motion with which we are acquainted. However, when the tail is cut off, the fish loses all motion, and gives itself up to where the water impels it. The rest of the fins, therefore, so far as respects motion, seem to be merely subsidiary to this. In their mechanical use, the anal fin may be reckoned the keel; the ventral fins, out-riggers; the pectoral muscles, the oars; and if there be any similitude between these parts of a boat and a fish, observe that it is not the resemblance of imitation, but the likeness which arises from applying similar mechanical means to the same purpose.

We have seen that the *tail* in the fish is the great instrument of motion. Now, in cetaceous or warm-blooded fish, which are obliged to rise every two or three minutes to the surface to take breath, the tail, unlike what it is in other fish, is horizontal; its stroke consequently perpendicular to the horizon, which is the right direction for sending the fish to the top, or carrying it down to the bottom.

Regarding animals in their instruments of motion, we have only followed the comparison through the first great division of animals into beasts, birds, and fish. If it were our intention to pursue the consideration further, I should take in that generic distinction amongst birds—the *web-foot* of water-fowl. It is an instance which may be pointed out to a child. The utility of the web to water-fowl, the inutility to land-fowl, are so obvious, that it seems impossible to notice the difference without acknowledging the design. I am at a loss to know how those who deny the agency of an intelligent Creator dispose of this example. There is nothing in the action of swimming, as carried on by a bird upon the surface of the water, that should generate a membrane between the toes.

* Goldsmith, Hist. of An. Nat., vol. vi., p. 154.

As to that membrane, it is an exercise of constant resistance. The only supposition I can think of is, that all birds have been originally water-fowl and web-footed; that sparrows, hawks, linnets, &c. which frequent the land, have in process of time, and in the course of many generations, had this part worn away by treading upon hard ground. To such evasive assumptions must Atheism always have recourse! and, after all, it confesses that the structure of the feet of birds, in their original form, was critically adapted to their original destination! The web-feet of amphibious quadrupeds, seals, otters, &c. fall under the same observation.

[It has been already said that, in constructing the instruments of motion for different races, the general idea has been modified only, not deserted. This is seen remarkably in the amphibious and semi-amphibious tribes, which form a link between the denizens of earth and sea. The walrus or sea-horse, an animal that visits the land only to suckle its young, and is most unwieldy in its motions when there, has a foot which, in swimming, is expanded into a large flat paddle, covered with skin. This hangs down vertically from the thick bent limbs into the water, and it may easily be conceived how awkward must be the animal's motions on land. The seal is much more perfect in its character as a land animal, and may be said to be one remove nearer the latter class. On the other hand, the dolphin is a remove nearer the true water-animals, having short thick knobs in place of leg-bones, and the middle toes of the foot greatly elongated, till the whole extremity assumes the appearance of a true fin. This creature never leaves the water, as might be anticipated from its formation. Other intermediate examples might be noticed, but these are sufficient to show with how little variation of the leading idea the most opposite purposes have been accomplished by the great Artist; or, as the Atheist would say, by nothing, or nobody—for what is chance but the absence of a substantive cause, or what substantive agency can we assign to a *principle* of order!

No point, perhaps, connected with the subject of animal mechanics is calculated to impress on our minds more strongly the illimitable resources of the creative Power, than the manner in which certain animals have been endowed with the capacity of moving to and fro, without limb, wing, fin, or any specific instrument of motion whatever. When we suppose a naked and rounded trunk, whatever may be its size or form, laid on the ground, possessed of life indeed, but furnished with no organ of prehension or any external means of impulsion whatever, it seems to us that where it is laid there it must lie, rolling, it may be, to a small extent, but moving neither forwards nor backwards.

Observe in how curious and beautiful a manner the internal parts of a serpent's body have been disposed, so as to obviate the

want of external members. The ribs arising from the long vertebral column are very numerous, being continued far behind the lungs, and articulated with the spine in a way that admits of great freedom of motion. Anteriorly, these ribs do not meet the ribs of the opposite side, nor are they united to a breast-bone, but terminate obliquely in a pointed slip of cartilage, which rests on the inner surface of one of the strong rough scales which cover the body externally, and are moved by short muscles placed below them. In the slow motions of the animal in a straight direction, these ribs, moving in pairs, carry the scales with them, and the rough projections on the outside of the latter take a firm hold, at each advance, of the ground, thus making a fixed point for the propulsion of the parts behind. When the numerous ribs are all acting after this fashion, the serpent is enabled to steal forward noiselessly upon its prey with considerable speed.

When the animal, however, is less cautious in its movements, it brings to the aid of this curious apparatus of concealed foot-work moving powers of a higher order. It throws its body either into curvatures upon the ground, or arches in the air, and, fixing the fore parts and hind parts alternately, projects the former and drags up the latter, so as to pass over the ground with great rapidity. By aid also of its strong muscles it can coil itself like a watch-spring, and uncoil itself with such force and rapidity, as to propel its body to a great distance. Whichever method of progression is adopted by the serpent, in each the prospective arrangements for its accomplishment are equally undeniable. How many of the serpent's ribs would be utterly useless without the purpose in view which we have described!]

IX. The *five senses* are common to most large animals: nor have we much difference to remark in their constitution; or much, however, which is referable to mechanism.

The superior sagacity of animals which hunt their prey, and which consequently depend for their livelihood upon their *nose*, is well known in its use, but not at all known in the organisation which produces it.

The external *ears* of beasts of prey, of lions, tigers, wolves, have their trumpet part, or concavity, standing forwards, to seize the sounds which are before them—namely, the sounds of the animals which they pursue or watch. The ears of animals of flight are turned backward, to give notice of the approach of their enemy from behind, whence he may steal upon them unseen. This is a critical distinction, and is mechanical: but it may be suggested, and I think not without probability, that it is the effect of continual habit.

The *eyes* of animals which follow their prey by night, as cats, owls, &c. possess a faculty not given to those of other species—namely, of closing the pupil *entirely*. The final cause of which

seems to be this:—It was necessary for such animals to be able to descry objects with very small degrees of light. This capacity depended upon the superior sensibility of the retina; that is, upon its being affected by the most feeble impulses. But that tenderness of structure which rendered the membrane thus exquisitely sensible, rendered it also liable to be offended by the access of stronger degrees of light. The contractile range, therefore, of the pupil is increased in these animals, so as to enable them to close the aperture entirely; which includes the power of diminishing it in every degree; whereby at all times such portions, and only such portions of light are admitted, as may be received without injury to the sense.

There appears to be also in the figure, and in some properties of the pupil of the eye, an appropriate relation to the wants of different animals. In horses, oxen, goats, sheep, the pupil of the eye is elliptical; the transverse axis being horizontal; by which structure, although the eye be placed on the side of the head, the anterior elongation of the pupil catches the forward rays, or those which come from objects immediately in front of the animal's face.*

CHAPTER XIII.

PECULIAR ORGANISATIONS.

I believe that all the instances which I shall collect under this title might, consistently enough with technical language, have been placed under the head of *Comparative Anatomy*. But there appears to me an impropriety in the use which that term hath obtained; it being in some sort absurd to call that a case of comparative anatomy in which there is nothing to 'compare'—in which a conformation is found in one animal which had nothing properly answering to it in another. Of this kind are the examples which I have to propose in the present chapter; and the reader will see that though some of them be the strongest perhaps he will meet with under any division of our subject, they must necessarily be of an unconnected and miscellaneous nature. To dispose them, however, into some sort of order, we will notice, first, particularities of structure which belong to quadrupeds, birds, and fish, as such, or to many of the kinds included in these classes

* [Some of the illustrations contained in these paragraphs upon the senses, have been in part alluded to in the additions to the text in a previous chapter, where their introduction seemed to us of importance to the argument.]

of animals; and then, such particularities as are confined to one or two species.

I. Along each side of the neck of large *quadrupeds* runs a stiff, robust cartilage, which butchers call the pax-wax. No person can carve the upper end of a crop of beef without driving his knife against it. It is a tough, strong, tendinous substance, braced from the head to the middle of the back; its office is to assist in supporting the weight of the head. It is a mechanical provision, of which this is the undisputed use; and it is sufficient, and not more than sufficient, for the purpose which it has to execute. The head of an ox or a horse is a heavy weight, acting at the end of a long lever (consequently with a great purchase), and in a direction nearly perpendicular to the joints of the supporting neck. From such a force, so advantageously applied, the bones of the neck would be in constant danger of dislocation, if they were not fortified by this strong tape. No such organ is found in the human subject, because, from the erect position of the head (the pressure of it acting nearly in the direction of the spine), the junction of the vertebræ appears to be sufficiently secure without it. This cautionary expedient, therefore, is limited to quadrupeds; the care of the Creator is seen where it is wanted.*

II. The oil with which *birds* prune their feathers, and the organ which supplies it, is a specific provision for the winged creation. On each side of the rump of birds is observed a small nipple, yielding upon pressure a butter-like substance, which the bird extracts by pinching the pap with its bill. With this oil or ointment, thus procured, the bird dresses its coat; and repeats the action as often as its own sensations teach it that it is in any part wanted, or as the excretion may be sufficient for the expense. The gland, the pap, the nature and quality of the excreted substance, the manner of obtaining it from its lodgment in the body, the application of it when obtained, form, collectively, an evidence of intention which it is not easy to withstand. Nothing similar to it is

* [Our author has not described this remarkable provision with his usual accuracy. He terms it at one time cartilage, and at another tendon, whereas its true character is more properly designated by its anatomical name of *ligamentum nuchæ*, though it differs from ligaments generally, in being highly elastic. It is further described by Paley as running along each side of the neck. This is, to a certain extent, incorrect. The ligament passes in one strong band from the spinous processes of the back to the posterior portion of the skull, and only sends off strong slips to *each side*, where they are inserted into the spinous processes in the neck. To understand this perfectly, it must be kept in mind that the processes of the vertebral column in the back, and the posterior portion of the skull, between which the ligament passes, are considerably higher than the spine of the neck, and that, consequently, the slips require to be sent down to the neck bones from the main ligament, to assist it in raising the head. We may further observe, that the text takes no notice of the fact, that the deer, the ox, and other animals possessing this strong ligament, depend on their heads in a great measure for offence and defence, to which this provision mainly contributes. In the cruel amusement of bull-baiting, for example, the animal often exhibits the power of the pax-wax, by tossing his tormentors to an immense height in the air.]

found in unfeathered animals. What blind *conatus* [essay] of nature should produce it in birds—should not produce it in beasts?

III. The air-bladder also of a *fish* affords a plain and direct instance not only of contrivance, but strictly of that species of contrivance which we denominate mechanical. It is a philosophical apparatus in the body of an animal. The principle of the contrivance is clear; the application of the principle is also clear. The use of the organ to sustain, and, at will, also to elevate the body of the fish in the water, is proved by observing, what has been tried, that when the bladder is burst, the fish grovels at the bottom; and also that flounders, soles, skates, which are without the air-bladder, seldom rise in the water, and that with effort. The manner in which the purpose is attained, and the suitableness of the means to the end, are not difficult to be apprehended. The rising and sinking of a fish in water, so far as it is independent of the stroke of the fins and tail, can only be regulated by the specific gravity of the body. When the bladder contained in the body of the fish is contracted, which the fish probably possesses a muscular power of doing, the bulk of the fish is contracted along with it; whereby, since the absolute weight remains the same, the specific gravity, which is the sinking force, is increased, and the fish descends; on the contrary, when, in consequence of the relaxation of the muscles, the elasticity of the enclosed and now compressed air restores the dimensions of the bladder, the tendency downwards becomes proportionably less than it was before, or is turned into a contrary tendency. These are known properties of bodies immersed in a fluid. The enamelled figures, or little glass bubbles, in a jar of water, are made to rise and fall by the same artifice. A diving machine might be made to ascend and descend upon the like principle; namely, by introducing into the inside of it an air-vessel, which by its contraction would diminish, and by its distension enlarge, the bulk of the machine itself, and thus render it specifically heavier or specifically lighter than the water which surrounds it. Suppose this to be done, and the artist to solicit a patent for his invention. The inspectors of the model, whatever they might think of the use or value of the contrivance, could by no possibility entertain a question in their minds whether it were a contrivance or not. No reason has ever been assigned, no reason can be assigned, why the conclusion is not as certain in the fish as it is in the machine—why the argument is not as firm in the one case as the other.

It would be very worthy of inquiry, if it were possible to discover by what method an animal, which lives constantly in water, is able to supply a repository of air.* The expedient, whatever it

* [The air-bladder, in a number of fishes, contains a glandular body of considerable size, which has been supposed by some to secrete the air from the blood.

be, forms part, and perhaps the most curious part, of the provision. Nothing similar to the air-bladder is found in land animals; and a life in the water has no natural tendency to produce a bag of air. Nothing can be further from an acquired organisation than this is.

These examples mark the attention of the Creator to the three great kingdoms of His animal creation, and to their constitution as such. The example which stands next in point of generality, belonging to a large tribe of animals, or rather to various species of that tribe, is the poisonous tooth of serpents.

I. The *fang of a viper* is a clear and curious example of mechanical contrivance. It is a perforated tooth, loose at the root; in its quiet state, lying down flat upon the jaw, but furnished with a muscle, which with a jerk, and by the pluck, as it were, of a string, suddenly erects it. Under the tooth, close to its root, and communicating with the perforation, lies a small bag containing the venom. When the fang is raised, the closing of the jaw presses its root against the bag underneath, and the force of this compression sends out the fluid with a considerable impetus through the tube in the middle of the tooth. What more unequivocal or effectual apparatus could be devised for the double purpose of at once inflicting the wound and injecting the poison? Yet, though lodged in the mouth, it is so constituted as, in its inoffensive and quiescent state, not to interfere with the animal's ordinary office of receiving its food. It has been observed, also, that none of the harmless serpents—the black snake, the blind worm, &c.—have these fangs, but teeth of an equal size; not movable, as this is, but fixed into the jaw.*

II. In being the property of several different species, the preceding example is resembled by that which I shall next mention, which is the *bag of the opossum*. This is a mechanical contrivance, most properly so called. The simplicity of the expedient renders

In other fishes, there is a direct connection between the air-bladder and the stomach, by which means, it is clear, the air would be easily expelled. The bag in these animals might even be filled through the stomach, for it is not difficult to suppose that the fish, with the bladder entirely empty (which is unlikely to happen), might raise itself to the surface by a strong exertion of its fins, in order to procure air. Neither the glandular body, however, which we have alluded to, nor the connection between the air-bag and stomach, being found to exist universally, the source of the air in the bladder, as well as other points relating to this remarkable provision, are still left in doubt.

The position of the air-bladder is worthy of notice. Had it been placed close to the head, or near the tail, the balance of the animal's body would have been overthrown, and its motions awkwardly impeded. We find the bag, however, to be situated below the spine in the centre of the back—as near as possible, in short, to the centre of gravity. Independently of other considerations, does not this very location of the air-bladder afford a striking evidence of design?]

* [It may perhaps be thought superfluous to observe, that the fang assumes an erect position when the jaw is opened, by means of a small bone pressing upon it, and not by the action of any muscle acting directly upon the fang itself. In other points, the description in the text is sufficiently accurate.]

the contrivance more obvious than many others, and by no means less certain. A false skin under the belly of the animal forms a pouch, into which the young litter are received at their birth; where they have an easy and constant access to the teats; in which they are transported by the dam from place to place; where they are at liberty to run in and out; and where they find a refuge from surprise and danger. It is their cradle, their asylum, and the machine for their conveyance. Can the use of this structure be doubted of? Nor is it a mere doubling of the skin; but it is a new organ, furnished with bones and muscles of its own. Two bones are placed before the *os pubis*, and joined to that bone as their base. These support and give a fixture to the muscles which serve to open the bag. To these muscles there are antagonists, which serve in the same manner to shut it; and this office they perform so exactly, that in the living animal the opening can scarcely be discerned, except when the sides are forcibly drawn asunder.* Is there any action in this part of the animal, any process arising from that action, by which these members could be formed—any account to be given of the formation, except design?

III. As a particularity, yet appertaining to more species than one, and also as strictly mechanical, we may notice a circumstance in the structure of the *claws* of certain birds. The middle claw of the heron and cormorant is toothed and notched like a saw. These birds are great fishers, and these notches assist them in holding their slippery prey. The use is evident; but the structure such as cannot at all be accounted for by the effort of the animal or the exercise of the part. Some other fishing birds have these notches in their *bills;* and for the same purpose. The gannet or Soland goose has the side of its bill irregularly jagged, that it may hold its prey the faster. Nor can the structure in this, more than in the former case, arise from the manner of employing the part. The smooth surfaces and soft flesh of fish were less likely to notch the bills of birds, than the hard bodies upon which many other species feed.

We now come to particularities strictly so called, as being limited to a single species of animal. Of these I shall take one from a quadruped and one from a bird.

I. The *stomach of the camel* is well known to retain large quantities of water, and to retain it unchanged for a considerable length of time. This property qualifies it for living in the desert. Let us see, therefore, what is the internal organisation upon which a faculty so rare and so beneficial depends. A number of distinct sacks or bags (in a dromedary thirty of these have been counted) are observed to lie between the membranes of the

* Goldsmith's Nat. Hist., vol. iv., p. 244.

second stomach, and to open into the stomach near the top by small square apertures. Through these orifices, after the stomach is full, the annexed bags are filled from it; and the water so deposited is, in the first place, not liable to pass into the intestines; in the second place, is kept separate from the solid aliment; and, in the third place, is out of the reach of the digestive action of the stomach, or of mixture with the gastric juice. It appears probable, or rather certain, that the animal, by the conformation of its muscles, possesses the power of squeezing back this water from the adjacent bags into the stomach whenever thirst excites it to put this power in action.

II. The *tongue of the woodpecker* is one of those singularities which nature presents us with when a singular purpose is to be answered. It is a particular instrument for a particular use; and what, except design, ever produces such? The woodpecker lives chiefly upon insects, lodged in the bodies of decayed or decaying trees. For the purpose of boring into the wood, it is furnished with a bill, straight, hard, angular, and sharp. When, by means of this piercer, it has reached the cells of the insects, then comes the office of its tongue; which tongue is, first, of such a length, that the bird can dart it out three or four inches from the bill—in this respect differing greatly from every other species of bird; in the second place, it is tipped with a stiff, sharp, bony thorn; and, in the third place (which appears to me the most remarkable property of all), this tip is dentated on both sides, like the beard of an arrow or the barb of a hook. The description of the part declares its uses. The bird having exposed the retreats of the insects by the assistance of its bill, with a motion inconceivably quick, launches out at them this long tongue, transfixes them upon the barbed needle at the end of it, and thus draws its prey within its mouth. If this be not mechanism, what is? Should it be said that, by continual endeavours to shoot out the tongue to the stretch, the woodpecker's species may by degrees have lengthened the organ itself, beyond that of other birds, what account can be given of its form, of its tip—how, in particular, did it get its barb, its dentation? These barbs, in my opinion, wherever they occur, are decisive proofs of mechanical contrivance.

[As an instance of peculiar organisation somewhat akin to the preceding, we may notice the remarkable contrivance by which the ant-eater, a quadruped of small size, is enabled to capture the insects designated in its name as the animal's food. The ant-eater has no teeth, nor has it any proper organ of prehension; but in the place of these, it is provided with a tongue, nearly one-third the length of its whole body, and moved by means of a long and powerful muscle arising from the breast-bone. This tongue, however, is not pointed like the woodpecker's, to transfix the prey; and though it is so prominent a part of the animal's struc-

ture as to be evidently a provision of importance, a person unacquainted with the truth is unable at first to conceive how the ant-eater will turn its gift to account. But the creature itself has no hesitation. It plants itself by the side of an ant-path, or thoroughfare, near a hillock inhabited by these insects; lies down on all-fours, and stretches its tongue across the track. The tongue is speedily covered with the little victims, when the ant-eater suddenly retracts it, and swallows its prey, at one gulp, and without mastication; which, indeed, is rendered unnecessary by the nature of the food.]

III. I shall add one more example, for the sake of its novelty. It is always an agreeable discovery, when, having remarked in an animal an extraordinary structure, we come at length to find out an unexpected use for it. The following narrative furnishes an instance of this kind. The babyrouessa, or Indian hog, a species of wild-boar found in the East Indies, has two *bent* teeth, more than half a yard long, growing upwards, and (which is the singularity) from the upper jaw. These instruments are not wanted for offence, that service being provided for by two tusks issuing from the upper jaw, and resembling those of the common boar; nor does the animal use them for defence. They might seem, therefore, to be both a superfluity and an encumbrance. But observe the event—the animal sleeps standing; and, in order to support its head, hooks its upper tusks upon the branches of trees.*

CHAPTER XIV.

PROSPECTIVE CONTRIVANCES.

I can hardly imagine to myself a more distinguishing mark, and consequently a more certain proof of design, than *preparation*—that is, the providing of things beforehand which are not to be used until a considerable time afterwards; for this implies a contemplation of the future, which belongs only to Intelligence.

Of these *prospective* contrivances, the bodies of animals furnish various examples.

* [The babyrouessa, or babyroussa, has two bent tusks of the kind described in the text, but it is altogether unfounded to suppose that the animal suspends the weight of its head by them while sleeping: at the same time it is equally erroneous to suppose them useless. Upon a similar principle, we should condemn the bent horns of the ram as devoid of utility. In both cases, the purpose of defence, if not of offence, is obviously served by the provision, and to the babyroussa, in particular, its long tusks must be of great service, from the wandering life of the animal among the tangled thickets of India.]

I. The human teeth afford an instance not only of prospective contrivance, but of the completion of the contrivance being designedly suspended. They are formed within the gums, and there they stop; the fact being, that their further advance to maturity would not only be useless to the new-born animal, but extremely in its way; as it is evident that the act of *sucking*, by which it is for some time to be nourished, will be performed with more ease both to the nurse and to the infant whilst the inside of the mouth and edges of the gums are smooth and soft, than if set with hard-pointed bones. By the time they are wanted, the teeth are ready. They have been lodged within the gums for some months past, but detained, as it were, in their sockets so long as their further protrusion would interfere with the office to which the mouth is destined. Nature—namely, that Intelligence which was employed in creation—looked beyond the first year of the infant's life; yet, whilst she was providing for functions which were after that term to become necessary, was careful not to incommode those which preceded them. What renders it more probable that this is the effect of design is, that the teeth are imperfect, whilst all other parts of the mouth are perfect. The lips are perfect, the tongue is perfect; the cheeks, the jaws, the palate, the pharynx, the larynx, are all perfect; the teeth alone are not so. This is the fact with respect to the human mouth: the fact also is, that the parts above enumerated are called into use from the beginning; whereas the teeth would be only so many obstacles and annoyances if they were there. When a contrary order is necessary, a contrary order prevails. In the worm of the beetle, as hatched from the egg, the teeth are the first things which arrive at perfection. The insect begins to gnaw as soon as it escapes from the shell, though its other parts be only gradually advancing to their maturity.

What has been observed of the teeth, is true of the *horns* of animals, and for the same reason. The horn of a calf or a lamb does not bud, or at least does not sprout to any considerable length, until the animal be capable of browsing upon its pasture; because such a substance upon the forehead of the young animal would very much incommode the teat of the dam in the office of giving suck.

But in the case of the *teeth*—of the human teeth at least—the prospective contrivance looks still farther. A succession of crops is provided, and provided from the beginning; a second tier being originally formed beneath the first, which do not come into use till several years afterwards. And this double or suppletory provision meets a difficulty in the mechanism of the mouth, which would have appeared almost insurmountable. The expansion of the jaw (the consequence of the proportionable growth of the animal and of its skull) necessarily separates the teeth of the first

set, however compactly disposed, to a distance from one another, which would be very inconvenient. In due time, therefore—that is, when the jaw has attained a great part of its dimensions—a new set of teeth springs up (loosening and pushing out the old ones before them), more exactly fitted to the space which they are to occupy, and rising also in such close ranks, as to allow for any extension of line which the subsequent enlargement of the head may occasion.

II. It is not very easy to conceive a more evidently prospective contrivance than that which, in all viviparous animals, is found in the *milk* of the female parent. At the moment the young animal enters the world, there is its maintenance ready for it. The particulars to be remarked in this economy are neither few nor slight. We have, first, the nutritious quality of the fluid, unlike, in this respect, every other excretion of the body, and in which nature hitherto remains unimitated, neither cookery nor chemistry having been able to make milk out of grass; we have, secondly, the organ for its reception and retention; we have, thirdly, the excretory duct annexed to that organ; and we have, lastly, the determination of the milk to the breast, at the particular juncture when it is about to be wanted. We have all these properties in the subject before us; and they are all indications of design. The last circumstance is the strongest of any. If I had been to guess beforehand, I should have conjectured, that at the time when there was an extraordinary demand for nourishment in one part of the system, there would be the least likelihood of a redundancy to supply another part. The advanced pregnancy of the female has no intelligible tendency to fill the breasts with milk. The lacteal system is a constant wonder; and it adds to other causes of our admiration, that the number of the teats or paps in each species is found to bear a proportion to the number of the young. In the sow, the bitch, the rabbit, the cat, the rat, which have numerous litters, the paps are numerous, and are disposed along the whole length of the belly; in the cow and mare they are few. The most simple account of this is to refer it to a designing Creator.

But in the argument before us, we are entitled to consider not only animal bodies when framed, but the circumstances under which they are framed: and in this view of the subject, the constitution of many of their parts is most strictly prospective.

III. The eye is of no use at the time when it is formed. It is an optical instrument made in a dungeon; constructed for the refraction of light to a focus, and perfect for its purpose, before a ray of light has had access to it: geometrically adapted to the properties and action of an element with which it has no communication. It is about, indeed, to enter into that communication; and this is precisely the thing which evidences intention.

It is *providing* for the *future* in the closest sense which can be given to these terms; for it is providing for a future change, not for the then subsisting condition of the animal, nor for any gradual progress or advance in that same condition, but for a new state, the consequence of a great and sudden alteration which the animal is to undergo at its birth. Is it to be believed that the eye was formed, or, which is the same thing, that the series of causes was fixed by which the eye is formed, without a view to this change—without a prospect of that condition in which its fabric, of no use at present, is about to be of the greatest—without a consideration of the qualities of that element, hitherto entirely excluded, but with which it was hereafter to hold so intimate a relation? A young man makes a pair of spectacles for himself against he grows old; for which spectacles he has no want or use whatever at the time he makes them. Could this be done without knowing and considering the defect of vision to which advanced age is subject? Would not the precise suitableness of the instrument to its purpose, of the remedy to the defect, of the convex lens to the flattened eye, establish the certainty of the conclusion, that the case, afterwards to arise, had been considered beforehand, speculated upon, provided for?—all which are exclusively the acts of a reasoning mind. The eye formed in one state, for use only in another state, and in a different state, affords a proof no less clear of destination to a future purpose, and a proof proportionably stronger, as the machinery is more complicated and the adaptation more exact.

IV. What has been said of the eye, holds equally true of the lungs. Composed of air-vessels, where there is no air—elaborately constructed for the alternate admission and expulsion of an elastic fluid, where no such fluid exists—this great organ, with the whole apparatus belonging to it, lies collapsed in the fœtal thorax, yet in order and in readiness for action the first moment that the occasion requires its service. This is having a machine locked up in store for future use; which incontestably proves that the case was expected to occur in which this use might be experienced; but expectation is the proper act of intelligence. Considering the state in which an animal exists before its birth, I should look for nothing less in its body than a system of lungs. It is like finding a pair of bellows in the bottom of the sea; of no sort of use in the situation in which they are found; formed for an action which was impossible to be exerted; holding no relation or fitness to the element which surrounds them, but both to another element in another place.

As part and parcel of the same plan, ought to be mentioned, in speaking of the lungs, the provisionary contrivances of the *foramen ovale* and *ductus arteriosus*. In the fœtus, pipes are laid for the passage of the blood through the lungs; but until the lungs

be inflated by the inspiration of air, that passage is impervious, or in a great degree obstructed. What, then, is to be done?—what would an artist, what would a master, do upon the occasion? He would endeavour, most probably, to provide a *temporary* passage, which might carry on the communication required until the other was open. Now this is the thing which is actually done in the heart: Instead of the circuitous route through the lungs, which the blood afterwards takes before it gets from one auricle of the heart to the other, a portion of the blood passes immediately from the right auricle to the left, through a hole placed in a partition which separates these cavities. This hole anatomists call the *foramen ovale.* There is likewise another cross-cut, answering the same purpose, by what is called the *ductus arteriosus,* lying between the pulmonary artery and the aörta. But both expedients are so strictly temporary, that after birth the one passage is closed, and the tube which forms the other shrivelled up into a ligament. If this be not contrivance, what is?

But forasmuch as the action of the air upon the blood in the lungs appears to be necessary to the perfect concoction of that fluid—that is, to the life and health of the animal (otherwise the shortest route might still be the best)—how comes it to pass that the *fœtus* lives, and grows, and thrives without it? The answer is, that the blood of the fœtus is the mother's; that it has undergone that action in her habit; that one pair of lungs serves for both. When the animals are separated, a new necessity arises; and to meet this necessity as soon as it occurs, an organisation is prepared. It is ready for its purpose; it only waits for the atmosphere; it begins to play the moment the air is admitted to it.

CHAPTER XV.

RELATIONS.

When several different parts contribute to one effect—or, which is the same thing, when an effect is produced by the joint action of different instruments—the fitness of such parts or instruments to one another, for the purpose of producing by their united action the effect, is what I call *relation;* and wherever this is observed in the works of nature or of man, it appears to me to carry along with it decisive evidence of understanding, intention, art. In examining, for instance, the several parts of a *watch,* the spring, the barrel, the chain, the fusee, the balance, the wheels of various sizes, forms, and positions, what is it which would take an ob-

server's attention, as most plainly evincing a construction directed by thought, deliberation, and contrivance? It is the suitableness of these parts to one another—first, in the succession and order in which they act; and secondly, with a view to the effect finally produced. Thus, referring the spring to the wheels, our observer sees in it that which originates and upholds *their* motion; in the chain, that which transmits the motion to the fusee; in the fusee, that which communicates it to the wheels; in the conical figure of the fusee, if he refer to the spring, he sees that which corrects the inequality of its force. Referring the wheels to one another, he notices, first, their teeth, which would have been without use or meaning, if there had been only one wheel, or if the wheels had had no connection between themselves, or common bearing upon some joint effect; secondly, the correspondency of their position, so that the teeth of one wheel catch into the teeth of another; thirdly, the proportion observed in the number of teeth of each wheel, which determines the rate of going. Referring the balance to the rest of the works, he saw, when he came to understand its action, that which rendered their motions equable. Lastly, in looking upon the index and face of the watch, he saw the use and conclusion of the mechanism—namely, marking the succession of minutes and hours; but all depending upon the motions within, all upon the system of intermediate actions between the spring and the pointer. What thus struck his attention in the several parts of the watch, he might probably designate by one general name of 'relation:' and observing with respect to all cases whatever, in which the origin and formation of a thing could be ascertained by evidence, that these relations were found in things produced by art and design, and in no other things, he would rightly deem them as characteristic of such productions. To apply the reasoning here described to the works of nature.

The animal economy is full, is made up of these *relations*:—

I. There are, first, what in one form or other belong to all animals—the parts and powers which successively act upon their *food*. Compare this action with the process of a manufactory. In men and quadrupeds, the aliment is first broken and bruised by mechanical instruments of mastication—namely, sharp spikes or hard knobs pressing against or rubbing upon one another; thus ground and comminuted, it is carried by a pipe into the stomach, where it waits to undergo a great chemical action, which we call digestion; when digested, it is delivered through an orifice, which opens and shuts as there is occasion, into the first intestine; there, after being mixed with certain proper ingredients, poured through a hole in the side of the vessel, it is further dissolved; in this state the milk, chyle, or part which is wanted, and which is suited for animal nourishment, is strained off by the mouths of very small tubes, opening into the cavity of the intestines; thus freed

from its grosser parts, the percolated fluid is carried by a long, winding, but traceable course, into the main stream of the old circulation; which conveys it, in its progress, to every part of the body. Now, I say again, compare this with the process of a manufactory; with the making of cider, for example; with the bruising of the apples in the mill, the squeezing of them, when so bruised, in the press, the fermentation in the vat, the bestowing of the liquor thus fermented in the hogsheads, the drawing off into bottles, the pouring out for use into the glass. Let any one show me any difference between these two cases as to the point of contrivance. That which is at present under our consideration—the 'relation' of the parts successively employed—is not more clear in the last case than in the first. The aptness of the jaws and teeth to prepare the food for the stomach, is at least as manifest as that of the cider-mill to crush the apples for the press. The concoction of the food in the stomach is as necessary for its future use, as the fermentation of the stum in the vat is to the perfection of the liquor. The disposal of the aliment afterwards; the action and change which it undergoes; the route which it is made to take, in order that, and until that, it arrive at its destination, is more complex, indeed, and intricate, but, in the midst of complication and intricacy, as evident and certain, as is the apparatus of cocks, pipes, tunnels, for transferring the cider from one vessel to another; of barrels and bottles for preserving it till fit for use, or of cups and glasses for bringing it, when wanted, to the lip of the consumer. The character of the machinery is in both cases this, that one part answers to another part, and every part to the final result.

This parallel between the alimentary operation and some of the processes of art might be carried further into detail. Spallanzani has remarked a circumstantial resemblance between the stomachs of gallinaceous fowls and the structure of *corn-mills*. Whilst the two sides of the gizzard perform the office of the millstones, the craw or crop supplies the place of the *hopper*.

When our fowls are abundantly supplied with meat, they soon fill their craw; but it does not immediately pass thence into the gizzard; it always enters in very small quantities, in proportion to the progress of trituration; in like manner as, in a mill, a receiver is fixed above the two large stones which serve for grinding the corn; which receiver, although the corn be put into it by bushels, allows the grain to dribble only in small quantities into the central hole in the upper millstone.

But we have not done with the alimentary history. There subsists a general *relation* between the external organs of an animal, by which it procures its food, and the internal powers, by which it digests it. Birds of prey, by their talons and beaks, are qualified to seize and devour many species, both of other birds and

of quadrupeds. The constitution of the stomach agrees exactly with the form of the members. The gastric juice of a bird of prey, of an owl, a falcon, or a kite, acts upon the animal fibre alone; it will not act upon seeds or grasses at all. On the other hand, the conformation of the mouth of the sheep or the ox is suited for browsing upon herbage. Nothing about these animals is fitted for the pursuit of living prey. Accordingly, it has been found by experiments tried not many years ago, with perforated balls, that the gastric juice of ruminating animals, such as the sheep and the ox, speedily dissolves vegetables, but makes no impression upon animal bodies. This accordancy is still more particular. The gastric juice even of granivorous birds will not act upon the grain whilst whole and entire. In performing the experiment of digestion with the gastric juice in vessels, the grain must be crushed and bruised before it be submitted to the menstruum—that is to say, must undergo by art, without the body, the preparatory action which the gizzard exerts upon it within the body, or no digestion will take place. So strict, in this case, is the relation between the offices assigned to the digestive organ —between the mechanical operation and the chemical process.

II. The relation of the kidneys to the bladder, and of the ureters to both—that is, of the secreting organ to the vessel receiving the secreting liquor, and the pipe laid from one to the other for the purpose of conveying it from one to the other—is as manifest as it is amongst the different vessels employed in a distillery, or in the communications between them. The animal structure in this case being simple, and the parts easily separated, it forms an instance of correlation which may be presented by dissection to every eye, or which indeed, without dissection, is capable of being apprehended by every understanding. This correlation of instruments to one another fixes intention somewhere.

Especially when every other solution is negatived by the conformation. If the bladder had been merely an expansion of the ureter, produced by retention of the fluid, there ought to have been a bladder for each ureter. One receptacle, fed by two pipes, issuing from different sides of the body, yet from both conveying the same fluid, is not to be accounted for by any such supposition as this.

III. Relation of parts to one another accompanies us throughout the whole animal economy. Can any relation be more simple, yet more convincing, than this, that the eyes are so placed as to look in the direction in which the legs move and the hands work? It might have happened very differently if it had been left to chance. There were at least three quarters of the compass out of four to have erred in. Any considerable alteration in the position of the eye, or the figure of the joints, would have disturbed the line, and destroyed the alliance between the sense and the limbs.

IV. But relation perhaps is never so striking as when it subsists, not between different parts of the same thing, but between different things. The relation between a lock and a key is more obvious than it is between different parts of the lock. A bow was designed for an arrow, and an arrow for a bow: and the design is more evident from their being separate implements.

Nor do the works of the Deity want this clearest species of relation. The *sexes* are manifestly made for each other. They form the grand relation of animated nature; universal, organic, mechanical; subsisting like the clearest relations of art, in different individuals; unequivocal, inexplicable without design.

So much so, that were every other proof of contrivance in nature dubious or obscure, this alone would be sufficient. The example is complete. Nothing is wanting to the argument. I see no way whatever of getting over it.

V. The teats of animals which give suck, bear a relation to the mouth of the sucking progeny; particularly to the lips and tongue. Here, also, as before, is a correspondency of parts; which parts subsist in different individuals.

[The act of suction is, in truth, as striking an example of relation of parts, and provident design, as can be adduced. To extract the milk, a vacuum around the nipple is requisite; without this the store of nourishment could never be enjoyed. Happily, the mouth of the infant is a hydraulic machine. The tongue, being retracted to the back part of the cavity, acts as the piston of the pump, and the muscles of the lips and cheeks lend their contractile powers. Is there no design apparent in this relation of parts in separate beings—in the adaptation of the nipple to the mouth, and in the hydraulic conformation of that mouth, without which suction could not be performed?

It is impossible to consider this subject deeply, without being struck with other evidences of design, as well as the mutual relation of parts. Does the newly-born child know what a vacuum is?—that air has weight, and that a partial vacuum must be created before the orifice of the breast can express the milk? No. Whence, then, arises his instinctive use and application of the principle from the moment of his birth? Whence could the instinct come but from the same Power which moulds the child's lips for the purpose they serve? And can this Power be blind, and devoid of foresight and intelligence?]

These are *general* relations, or the relations of parts which are found either in all animals, or in large classes and descriptions of animals. *Particular* relations, or the relations which subsist between the particular configuration of one or more parts of certain species of animals, and the particular configuration of one or more other parts of the same animal (which is the sort of relation that is perhaps most striking), are such as the following:—

I. In the *swan*, the web-foot, the spoon-bill, the long neck, the thick down, the graminivorous stomach, bear all a relation to one another, inasmuch as they all concur in one design—that of supplying the occasions of an aquatic fowl, floating upon the surface of shallow pools of water, and seeking its food at the bottom. Begin with any one of these particularities of structure, and observe how the rest follow it. The web-foot qualifies the bird for swimming; the spoon-bill enables it to graze. But how is an animal, floating upon the surface of pools of water, to graze at the bottom, except by the mediation of a long neck? A long neck, accordingly, is given to it. Again, a warm-blooded animal, which was to pass its life upon water, required a defence against the coldness of that element. Such a defence is furnished to the swan, in the muff in which its body is wrapped. But all this outward apparatus would have been in vain, if the intestinal system had not been suited to the digestion of vegetable substances. I say suited to the digestion of vegetable substances; for it is well known that there are two intestinal systems found in birds, one with a membranous stomach and a gastric juice capable of dissolving animal substances alone; the other with a crop and gizzard, calculated for the moistening, bruising, and afterwards digesting of vegetable aliment.

Or set off with any other distinctive part in the body of the swan; for instance, with the long neck. The long neck, without the web-foot, would have been an encumbrance to the bird; yet there is no necessary connection between a long neck and a web-foot. In fact they do not usually go together. How happens it, therefore, that they meet only when a particular design demands the aid of both?

II. This mutual relation, arising from a subserviency to a common purpose, is very observable also in the parts of a *mole*. The strong short legs of that animal, the palmated feet armed with sharp nails, the pig-like nose, the teeth, the velvet coat, the small external ear, the sagacious smell, the sunk protected eye, all conduce to the utilities or to the safety of its underground life. It is a special purpose, specially consulted throughout. The form of the feet fixes the character of the animal. They are so many shovels; they determine its action to that of rooting in the ground; and everything about its body agrees with this destination. The cylindrical figure of the mole, as well as the compactness of its form, arising from the terseness of its limbs, proportionally lessens its labour; because, according to its bulk, it thereby requires the least possible quantity of earth to be removed for its progress. It has nearly the same structure of the face and jaws as a swine, and the same office for them. The nose is sharp, slender, tendinous, strong; with a pair of nerves going down to the end of it. The plush covering, which, by the smoothness, closeness, and polish of

the short piles that compose it, rejects the adhesion of almost every species of earth, defends the animal from cold and wet, and from the impediment which it would experience by the mould sticking to its body. From soils of all kinds the little pioneer comes forth bright and clean. Inhabiting dirt, it is of all animals the neatest.

But what I have always most admired in the mole is its *eyes*. This animal occasionally visiting the surface, and wanting, for its safety and direction, to be informed when it does so, or when it approaches it, a perception of light was necessary. I do not know that the clearness of sight depends at all upon the size of the organ. What is gained by the largeness or prominence of the globe of the eye, is width in the field of vision. Such a capacity would be of no use to an animal which was to seek its food in the dark. The mole did not want to look about it; nor would a large advanced eye have been easily defended from the annoyance to which the life of the animal must constantly expose it. How, indeed, was the mole, working its way under ground, to guard its eyes at all? In order to meet this difficulty, the eyes are made scarcely larger than the head of a corking-pin; and these minute globules are sunk so deeply in the skull, and lie so sheltered within the velvet of its covering, as that any contraction of what may be called the eyebrows, not only closes up the apertures which lead to the eyes, but presents a cushion, as it were, to any sharp or protruding substance which might push against them. This aperture, even in its ordinary state, is like a pin-hole in a piece of velvet, scarcely pervious to loose particles of earth.

Observe, then, in this structure, that which we call relation. There is no natural connection between a small sunk eye and a shovel palmated foot. Palmated feet might have been joined with goggle eyes; or small eyes might have been joined with feet of any other form. What was it, therefore, which brought them together in the mole? That which brought together the barrel, the chain, and the fusee in a watch—design; and design, in both cases, inferred from the relation which the parts bear to one another in the prosecution of a common purpose. As hath already been observed, there are different ways of stating the relation, according as we set out from a different part. In the instance before us, we may either consider the shape of the feet, as qualifying the animal for that mode of life and inhabitation to which the structure of its eyes confines it; or we may consider the structure of the eye as the only one which would have suited with the action to which the feet are adapted. The relation is manifest, whichever of the parts related we place first in the order of our consideration. In a word, the feet of the mole are made for digging; the neck, nose, eyes, ears, and skin, are peculiarly adapted to an underground life; and this is what I call relation.

[For the instruction of those who may be inclined to account for

all these relations in the configuration of the mole, on the principle 'that habits form the animal,' it may be remarked, that the bony skeleton of the mole—a portion of its frame less likely, certainly, to be moulded by 'habits' than the soft parts—shows the same adaptation with these to the purposes of burrowing. The clavicle, for example, which is wanting altogether, or nearly so, in most quadrupeds, is possessed in great strength by the mole, and it is from being specially gifted with this bone that the glossy-coated pioneer is enabled to exercise free, lateral, and circular motion with its shovel-like fore-foot in scooping the earth. This motion, however, could not be effected without strong muscles attached to the limb; and here again we find a peculiarity in the skeleton to suit this object. The breast-bone extends beyond its usual point, in a ploughshare-like projection, which affords a firm origin to the muscles in question. In the nose-bone a similar adaptation may be observed. To increase the wedge-like character of the snout, the bone ends in a long-pointed projection, which gives firmness to the soft parts. 'Can appetency,' as has been already remarked, 'create a bone?' or can habits do it?]

CHAPTER XVI.

COMPENSATION.

Compensation is a species of relation. It is relation when the *defects* of one part, or of one organ, are supplied by the structure of another part, or of another organ. Thus,

I. The short unbending neck of the *elephant* is compensated by the length and flexibility of his *proboscis*. He could not have reached the ground without it; or, if it be supposed that he might have fed upon the fruit, leaves, or branches of trees, how was he to drink? Should it be asked, Why is the elephant's neck so short? it may be answered, that the weight of a head so heavy could not have been supported at the end of a longer lever. To a form, therefore, in some respects necessary, but in some respects also inadequate to the occasion of the animal, a supplement is added, which exactly makes up the deficiency under which he laboured.

If it be suggested that this proboscis may have been produced, in a long course of generations, by the constant endeavour of the elephant to thrust out his nose (which is the general hypothesis by which it has lately been attempted to account for the forms of animated nature), I would ask, How was the animal to subsist in

the meantime, during the process, *until* this prolongation of snout were completed? What was to become of the individual whilst the species was perfecting?

Our business at present is, simply to point out the relation which this organ bears to the peculiar figure of the animal to which it belongs. And herein all things correspond. The necessity of the elephant's proboscis arises from the shortness of his neck; the shortness of the neck is rendered necessary by the weight of the head. Were we to enter into an examination of the structure and anatomy of the proboscis itself, we should see in it one of the most curious of all examples of animal mechanism. The disposition of the ringlets and fibres, for the purpose, first, of forming a long cartilaginous pipe; secondly, of contracting and lengthening that pipe; thirdly, of turning it in every direction at the will of the animal; with the superaddition at the end of a fleshy production, of about the length and thickness of a finger, and performing the office of a finger, so as to pick up a straw from the ground; these properties of the same organ, taken together, exhibit a specimen not only of design (which is attested by the advantage), but of consummate art, and, as I may say, of elaborate preparation, in accomplishing that design.*

II. The hook in the wing of a *bat* is strictly a mechanical, and also a *compensating* contrivance. At the angle of its wing there is a bent claw, exactly in the form of a hook, by which the bat attaches itself to the sides of rocks, caves, and buildings, laying hold of crevices, joinings, chinks, and roughnesses. It hooks itself by this claw; remains suspended by this hold; takes its flight from this position: which operations compensate for the decrepitude of its legs and feet. Without her hook, the bat would be the most helpless of all animals. She can neither run upon her feet, nor raise herself from the ground. These inabilities are made up to her by the contrivance in her wing; and in placing a claw on

* [The muscles of the proboscis are, as might be anticipated, exceedingly numerous and powerful. They are arranged in short bands of fibres, circular, longitudinal, and oblique, which clothe the organ throughout its whole length. Besides the extreme flexibility which these muscles impart to the proboscis, they also endow it with great strength, of which some idea may be formed from the following circumstance:—A tame elephant, belonging to a menagerie in France, fell ill, and became incapable of assuming the horizontal posture. This condition of matters, aggravated by the general weakness of the animal, rendered its massive head a great burden. By contracting the muscles of the proboscis, and resting its point perpendicularly on the ground, the wise creature was enabled to relieve itself by using the organ as a fifth limb, for the support of the head.

The point of the proboscis is endowed with great sensibility, and there the animal's sense of touch may be said to lie. If there is in nature any provision unique, the elephant's proboscis has some right to be termed so. The long and flexible snout of the *tapir*, which resembles it most, fulfils only the function of nostrils, and is not an organ of prehension, while what is called the proboscis in insects is simply an instrument of suction. In every respect, the elephant's proboscis is one of the most wonderful and perfect provisions to be observed in the organic world.]

that part, the Creator has deviated from the analogy observed in winged animals. A singular defect required a singular substitute.

III. The *crane*-kind are to live and seek their food amongst the waters; yet, having no web-feet, are incapable of swimming. To make up for this deficiency, they are furnished with long legs for wading, or long bills for groping; or usually with both. This is *compensation*. But I think the true reflection upon the present instance is, how every part of nature is tenanted by appropriate inhabitants. Not only is the surface of deep waters peopled by numerous tribes of birds that swim, but marshes and shallow pools are furnished with hardly less numerous tribes of birds that wade.

IV. The common *parrot* has, in the structure of its beak, both an inconveniency, and a *compensation* for it. When I speak of an inconveniency, I have a view to a dilemma which frequently occurs in the works of nature—namely, that the peculiarity of structure by which an organ is made to answer one purpose, necessarily unfits it for some other purpose. This is the case before us. The upper bill of the parrot is so much hooked, and so much overlaps the lower, that if, as in other birds, the lower chap alone had motion, the bird could scarcely gape wide enough to receive its food: yet this hook and overlapping of the bill could not be spared, for it forms the very instrument by which the bird climbs; to say nothing of the use which it makes of it in breaking nuts and the hard substances upon which it feeds. How, therefore, has nature provided for the opening of this occluded mouth? By making the upper chap movable as well as the lower. In most birds, the upper chap is connected, and makes but one piece, with the skull; but in the parrot, the upper chap is joined to the bone of the head by a strong membrane placed on each side of it, which lifts and depresses it at pleasure.

V. The *spider's web* is a *compensating* contrivance. The spider lives upon flies, without wings to pursue them; a case one would have thought of great difficulty, yet provided for, and provided for by a resource which no stratagem, no effort of the animal, could have produced, had not both its external and internal structure been specifically adapted to the operation.

VI. In many species of insects the eye is fixed, and consequently without the power of turning the pupil to the object. This great defect is, however, perfectly *compensated;* and by a mechanism which we should not suspect. The eye is a multiplying glass, with a lens looking in every direction, and catching every object. By which means, although the orb of the eye be stationary, the field of vision is as ample as that of other animals, and is commanded on every side. When this lattice-work was first observed, the multiplicity and minuteness of the surfaces

must have added to the surprise of the discovery. Adam tells us that fourteen hundred of these reticulations have been counted in the two eyes of a drone-bee.

In other cases, the *compensation* is effected by the number and position of the eyes themselves. The spider has eight eyes, mounted upon different parts of the head; two in front, two in the top of the head, two on each side. These eyes are without motion; but, by their situation, suited to comprehend every view which the wants or safety of the animal render it necessary for it to take.*

VII. The Memoirs for the Natural History of Animals, published by the French Academy in the year 1687, furnish us with some curious particulars in the eye of a chameleon. Instead of two eyelids, it is covered by an eyelid with a hole in it. This singular structure appears to be *compensatory*, and to answer to some other singularities in the shape of the animal. The neck of the chameleon is inflexible. To make up for this, the eye is so prominent, as that more than half of the ball stands out of the head; by means of which extraordinary projection, the pupil of the eye can be carried by the muscles in every direction, and is capable of being pointed towards every object. But then, so unusual an exposure of the globe of the eye requires, for its lubricity and defence, a more than ordinary protection of eyelid, as well as a more than ordinary supply of moisture; yet the motion of an eyelid, formed according to the common construction, would be impeded, as it should seem, by the convexity of the organ. The aperture in the lid meets this difficulty. It enables the animal to keep the principal part of the surface of the eye under cover, and to preserve it in a due state of humidity without shutting out the light, or without performing every moment a nictitation, which, it is probable, would be more laborious to this animal than to others.

VIII. In another animal, and in another part of the animal economy, the same Memoirs describe a most remarkable *substitution*. The reader will remember what we have already observed concerning the *intestinal* canal; that its length, so many times exceeding that of the body, promotes the extraction of the chyle from the aliment, by giving room for the lacteal vessels to act

* [After describing the small lenses in the eye of a beetle, which he calculates to be at least eight thousand in number, Niewentyt remarks, 'Now, if those little particles or eyes were not transparent, there would be no sight; if each of them were not round, there would be a sight, but confused; if they were not disposed in a convex superficies, these insects would not be able to see round about them, because of the immobility of their eyes; if the membranes thereof were not supplied with humours proper for them, and such as must be conveyed thither by inconceivably little vessels, the sight would be ruined by dryness, as experience teaches us when eyes continue too long dry. Now all this is required, and all this is found in each of these insects, and every one of these circumstances is wonderful. Can we then see them all concurring in so small a compass, and coolly affirm that it is all by chance?']

upon it through a greater space. This long intestine, wherever it occurs, is in other animals disposed in the abdomen from side to side in returning folds. But in the animal now under our notice, the matter is managed otherwise. The same intention is mechanically effectuated, but by a mechanism of a different kind. The animal of which I speak is an amphibious quadruped, which our authors call the alopecias, or sea-fox. The intestine is straight from one end to the other: but in this straight, and consequently short intestine, is a winding, cork-screw, spiral passage, through which the food, not without several circumvolutions, and in fact by a long route, is conducted to its exit. Here the shortness of the gut is *compensated* by the obliquity of the perforation.

IX. But the works of the Deity are known by expedients. Where we should look for absolute destitution, where we can reckon up nothing but wants, some contrivance always comes in to supply the privation. A *snail*, without wings, feet, or thread, climbs up the stalks of plants by the sole aid of a viscid humour discharged from her skin. She adheres to the stems, leaves, and fruits of plants by means of a sticking-plaster. A *mussel*, which might seem, by its helplessness, to lie at the mercy of every wave that went over it, has the singular power of spinning strong tendinous threads, by which she moors her shell to rocks and timbers. A *cockle*, on the contrary, by means of its stiff tongue, works for itself a shelter in the sand. The provisions of nature extend to cases the most desperate. A *lobster* has in its constitution a difficulty so great, that one could hardly conjecture beforehand how nature would dispose of it. In most animals the skin grows with their growth. If, instead of a soft skin, there be a shell, still it admits of a gradual enlargement. If the shell, as in the tortoise, consist of several pieces, the accession of substance is made at the sutures. Bivalve shells grow bigger by receiving an accretion at their edge; it is the same with spiral shells at their mouth. The simplicity of their form admits of this. But the lobster's shell being applied to the limbs of the body, as well as to the body itself, allows not of either of the modes of growth which are observed to take place in other shells. Its hardness resists expansion; and its complexity renders it incapable of increasing its size by addition of substance to its edge. How, then, was the growth of the lobster to be provided for? Was room to be made for it in the old shell, or was it to be successively fitted with new ones? If a change of shell became necessary, how was the lobster to extricate himself from his present confinement? How was he to uncase his buckler, or draw his legs out of his boots? The process which fishermen have observed to take place is as follows:—At certain seasons, the shell of the lobster grows soft: the animal swells its body; the seams open, and the claws burst at the joints. When the shell has thus become loose upon the body,

the animal makes a second effort, and by a tremulous spasmodic motion casts it off. In this state the liberated but defenceless fish retires into holes in the rock. The released body now suddenly pushes its growth. In about eight-and-forty hours, a fresh concretion of humour upon the surface—that is, a new shell—is formed, adapted in every part to the increased dimensions of the animal. This wonderful mutation is repeated every year.

If there be imputed defects without compensation, I should suspect that they were defects only in appearance. Thus, the body of the *sloth* has often been reproached for the slowness of its motions, which has been attributed to an imperfection in the formation of its limbs. But it ought to be observed that it is this slowness which alone suspends the voracity of the animal. He fasts during his migration from one tree to another; and this fast may be necessary for the relief of his overcharged vessels, as well as to allow time for the concoction of the mass of coarse and hard food which he has taken into his stomach. The tardiness of his pace seems to have reference to the capacity of his organs, and to his propensities with respect to food—that is, is calculated to counteract the effects of repletion.*

Or there may be cases in which a defect is artificial, and compensated by the very cause which produces it. Thus the *sheep*, in the domesticated state in which we see it, is destitute of the ordinary means of defence or escape; is incapable either of resistance or flight. But this is not so with the wild animal. The natural sheep is swift and active; and if it lose these qualities when it comes under the subjection of man, the loss is compensated by his protection. Perhaps there is no species of quadruped whatever which suffers so little as this does from the depredation of animals of prey.

For the sake of making our meaning better understood, we

* [Instead of meriting the name of a 'bungled composition,' applied to it by an eminent naturalist of last century, the body of the *sloth* has been shown, by later and more accurate observations, to be admirably fitted for the animal's mode of life. The mistake has arisen from judging of the sloth by the rules which apply to ordinary land animals. The sloth cannot walk; but it is as unjust to reproach him with this defect, as because he cannot fly or swim. He is not made for common walking, any more than he is for flying or swimming. He is an inhabitant of the trees; on them he moves, eats, sleeps, and, in short, passes his whole life. And how strikingly does his conformation suit his destined existence! His lengthy curved legs cannot support his body on the ground, for he has no soles to his feet, and his claws are long and sharp; but by these same legs and claws, hooked over a branch of a tree, he suspends his body (for he never walks *on*, but always *under* the branch), and feeds at his ease on the delicious green leaves. Suspended in this manner, he moves from tree to tree, among the tangled forests of which he is a native, and in the same attitude he sleeps. The weight of his body, as with sleeping fowls, probably contracts the tendons of his limbs, and renders the attitude free from exertion. It is when following this, his natural mode of life, that we are to judge of the sloth; and when so judged, he is seen to be no bungled composition, but, on the contrary, wonderfully fitted for enjoying the mode of life assigned to him.]

have considered this business of compensation under certain *particularities* of constitution, in which it appears to be most conspicuous. This view of the subject necessarily limits the instances to single species of animals. But there are compensations perhaps not less certain, which extend over large classes, and to large portions of living nature.

I. In quadrupeds, the deficiency of teeth is usually *compensated* by the faculty of rumination. The sheep, deer, and ox tribe, are without fore-teeth in the upper jaw. These ruminate. The horse and ass are furnished with teeth in the upper jaw, and do not ruminate. In the former class, the grass and hay descend into the stomach nearly in the state in which they are cropped from the pasture or gathered from the bundle. In the stomach, they are softened by the gastric juice, which in these animals is unusually copious. Thus softened and rendered tender, they are returned a second time to the action of the mouth, where the grinding teeth complete at their leisure the trituration which is necessary, but which was before left imperfect. I say the trituration which is necessary; for it appears from experiments, that the gastric fluid of sheep, for example, has no effect in digesting plants, unless they have been previously masticated; that it only produces a slight maceration, nearly as common water would do in a like degree of heat: but that when once vegetables are reduced to pieces by mastication, the fluid then exerts upon them its specific operation. Its first effect is to soften them, and to destroy their natural consistency; it then goes on to dissolve them; not sparing even the toughest parts, such as the nerves of the leaves.*

I think it very probable that the gratification also of the animal is renewed and prolonged by this faculty. Sheep, deer, and oxen, appear to be in a state of enjoyment whilst they are chewing the cud. It is then, perhaps, that they best relish their food.

[In the whale, we find the absence of teeth compensated by a structure of a very curious nature. Capacious as the animal's mouth is posteriorly (the lower jaw being frequently used as an ornamental arch to a carriage gateway), the entrance to the mouth is contracted, and the gullet too narrow to admit of the passage of prey of large size, and teeth do not exist to masticate such prey, even could it find access. The whale, then, being in a measure necessitated to feed on minute objects—the small fry around it, in short—how can its ample mouth, into which, when opened to receive the prey, an immense body of water enters, prevent the engulfed victims from escaping again with the waters, as they re-issue on the mouth being closed? An admirable mechanism,

* Spall. Dis. iii., sect. cxl.

evincing design in the highest degree, obviates this difficulty. From the sides of the upper jaw, or rather from the edges of the arched palate, there hang down vertically a great number of thin plates (amounting in one species of whale to three hundred), placed parallel to each other, and having their inner edges directed towards the centre of the palate. These plates are firm in texture where they arise from the palate, and also through a great portion of their length, but at their inner and inferior margins, their fibres become loose and detached, so as to form a long and thick fringe. Now, when the whale swallows a quantity of water, containing a host of small fry, this fringe acts like a sieve, permitting the egress of the water, when the jaws are being brought together, but retaining the whole of the prey, which are immediately swallowed. The substance of these plates is well known by the name of whalebone. By this contrivance, the leviathan of the deep has but to open his mouth and be fed.]

II. In birds, the *compensation* is still more striking. They have no teeth at all. What have they, then, to make up for this severe want? I speak of granivorous and herbivorous birds, such as common fowls, turkeys, ducks, geese, pigeons, &c.; for it is concerning these alone that the question need be asked. All these are furnished with a peculiar and most powerful muscle, called the *gizzard;* the inner coat of which is fitted up with rough plates, which, by a strong friction against one another, break and grind the hard aliment as effectually, and by the same mechanical action, as a coffee-mill would do. It has been proved by the most correct experiments, that the gastric juice of these birds will not operate upon the *entire* grain; not even when softened by water or macerated in the crop. Therefore, without a grinding machine within its body, without the trituration of the gizzard, a chicken would have starved upon a heap of corn. Yet why should a bill and a gizzard go together? Why should a gizzard never be found where there are teeth?*

Nor does the gizzard belong to birds as such. A gizzard is not found in birds of prey. *Their* food requires not to be ground down in a mill. The compensatory contrivance goes no further

* [The power of the gizzard in triturating hard substances was long regarded by naturalists with extreme astonishment, until it was discovered that birds, by a curious instinct, were in the practice of calling in artificial means to aid their natural powers of digestion. In their gizzards were constantly found numbers of small stones, amounting frequently to hundreds, which at first were thought to have been swallowed by chance. Later observations, however, have determined that these stones are swallowed intentionally, and are essential adjuncts to perfect digestion. Chickens, hatched apart from their parent, and consequently undirected by example, uniformly swallow a proportion of stones with their grain, when a mixture of both is set before them. This explains the extraordinary power of the gizzard in triturating, without injury to its structure, such substances as broken glass, and the like. These stones may be termed artificial teeth, and they *compensate* perfectly the want of natural ones.]

than the necessity. In both classes of birds, however, the digestive organ within the body bears a strict and mechanical relation to the external instruments for procuring food. The soft membranous stomach accompanies a hooked, notched beak; short, muscular legs; strong, sharp, crooked talons: the cartilaginous stomach attends that conformation of bill and toes which restrains the bird to the picking of seeds or the cropping of plants.

III. But to proceed with our *compensations*.—A very numerous and comprehensive tribe of terrestrial animals are entirely without feet; yet locomotive, and in a very considerable degree swift in their motion. How is the *want of feet* compensated? It is done by the disposition of the muscles and fibres of the trunk. In consequence of the just collocation, and by means of the joint action of longitudinal and annular fibres—that is to say, of strings and rings—the body and train of reptiles are capable of being reciprocally shortened and lengthened, drawn up and stretched out. The result of this action is a progressive, and in some cases a rapid movement of the whole body, in any direction to which the will of the animal determines it. The meanest creature is a collection of wonders. The play of the rings in an *earthworm* as it crawls; the undulatory motion propagated along the body; the beards or prickles with which the annuli [rings] are armed, and which the animal can either shut up close to its body, or let out to lay hold of the roughness of the surface upon which it creeps; and the power, arising from all these, of changing its place and position affords, when compared with the provisions for motion in other animals, proofs of new and appropriate mechanism. Suppose that we had never seen an animal move upon the ground without feet, and that the problem was—muscular action; that is, reciprocal contraction and relaxation, being given—to describe how such an animal might be constructed, capable of voluntarily changing place. Something perhaps like the organisation of reptiles might have been hit upon by the ingenuity of an artist, or might have been exhibited in an automaton, by the combination of springs, spiral wires, and ringlets; but to the solution of the problem would not be denied, surely, the praise of invention and of successful thought: least of all could it ever be questioned whether intelligence had been employed about it or not.

CHAPTER XVII.

THE RELATION OF ANIMATED BODIES TO INANIMATE NATURE.

We have already considered *relation*, and under different views; but it was the relation of parts to parts, of the parts of an animal to other parts of the same animal, or of another individual of the same species.

But the bodies of animals hold, in their constitution and properties, a close and important relation to natures altogether external to their own—to inanimate substances, and to the specific qualities of these; for example, *they hold a strict relation to the* ELEMENTS *by which they are surrounded.*

I. Can it be doubted whether the *wings of birds* bear a relation to air, and the *fins of fish* to water? They are instruments of motion, severally suited to the properties of the medium in which the motion is to be performed: which properties are different. Was not this difference contemplated when the instruments were differently constituted?

II. The structure of the animal *ear* depends for its use not simply upon being surrounded by a fluid, but upon the specific nature of that fluid. Every fluid would not serve; its particles must repel one another; it must form an elastic medium; for it is by the successive pulses of *such* a medium that the undulations excited by the surrounding body are carried to the organ—that a communication is formed between the object and the sense—which must be done before the internal machinery of the ear, subtile as it is, can act at all.

III. The *organs* of voice and respiration are, no less than the ear, indebted for the success of their operation to the peculiar qualities of the fluid in which the animal is immersed. They therefore, as well as the ear, are constituted upon the supposition of such a fluid; that is, of a fluid with such particular properties being always present. Change the properties of the fluid, and the organ cannot act; change the organ, and the properties of the fluid would be lost. The structure, therefore, of our organs, and the properties of our atmosphere, are made for one another. Nor does it alter the relation, whether you allege the organ to be made for the element (which seems the most natural way of considering it), or the element as prepared for the organ.

IV. But there is another fluid with which we have to do; with properties of its own; with laws of acting, and of being acted upon, totally different from those of air and water: and that is *light*. To this new, this singular element—to qualities perfectly peculiar,

perfectly distinct and remote from the qualities of any other substance with which we are acquainted—an organ is adapted, an instrument is correctly adjusted, not less peculiar amongst the parts of the body, not less singular in its form and in the substance of which it is composed, not less remote from the materials, the model, and the analogy of any other part of the animal frame, than the element to which it relates is specific amidst the substances with which we converse. If this does not prove appropriation, I desire to know what would prove it.

Yet the element of light and the organ of vision, however related in their office and use, have no connection whatever in their original. The action of rays of light upon the surfaces of animals has no tendency to breed eyes in their heads. The sun might shine for ever upon living bodies without the smallest approach towards producing the sense of sight. On the other hand, also, the animal eye does *not* generate or emit light.

V. Throughout the universe there is a wonderful *proportioning* of one thing to another. The size of animals, of the human animal especially, when considered with respect to other animals, or to the plants which grow around him, is such as a regard to his conveniency would have pointed out. A giant or a pigmy could not have milked goats, reaped corn, or mowed grass; we may add, could not have rode a horse, trained a vine, shorn a sheep, with the same bodily ease as we do, if at all. A pigmy would have been lost amongst rushes, or carried off by birds of prey.

It may be mentioned likewise that the model and the materials of the human body being what they are, a much greater bulk would have broken down by its own weight. The persons of men who much exceed the ordinary stature betray this tendency.

[In another point of view, there is a striking adjustment of the physical constitution of man and other animals to the planet which they inhabit. If the magnitude of the earth were equal to that of Saturn, the intensity of gravity at its surface would be so great, as to degrade man to the rank of a quadruped or reptile. Instead of treading the ground in the erect and noble attitude which is now his distinguishing boast, he would creep slowly and painfully on his hands and feet, while on every muscle of his frame a load would press, under which the slightest motion or exertion would be burdensome and insupportable. Life, in fact, would speedily become extinct; for the movements of the heart would flag, and the function of the lungs could not be maintained, in an atmosphere so dense as that which would necessarily envelop the earth in its supposed circumstances. All the present race of terrestrial animals would of course be no less unsuited to such circumstances than man. The very trees would die; for the intensity of gravity would stop the vital ascension of the sap in every plant which clothes our present earth. In this single parti-

cular, in short, we find a relation between animated bodies and inanimate nature, which alone ought to convince us of the existence of a great designing Intelligence, capable of poising the earth and its inhabitants as if in the scales of a balance, and adjusting them to each other.]

VI. Again (and which includes a vast variety of particulars, and those of the greatest importance), how close is the *suitableness* of the earth and sea to their several inhabitants, and of these inhabitants to the places of their appointed residence!

Take the *earth* as it is, and consider the correspondency of the powers of its inhabitants with the properties and condition of the soil which they tread. Take the inhabitants as they are, and consider the substances which the earth yields for their use. They can scratch its surface, and its surface supplies all which they want. This is the length of their faculties; and such is the constitution of the globe, and their own, that this is sufficient for all their occasions. When we pass from the earth to the *sea*, from land to water, we pass through a great change; but an adequate change accompanies us of animal forms and functions, of animal capacities and wants; so that *correspondency* remains. The earth in its nature is very different from the sea, and the sea from the earth; but one accords with its inhabitants as exactly as the other.

VII. The last relation of this kind which I shall mention is that of *sleep* to *night;* and it appears to me to be a relation which was expressly intended. Two points are manifest: first, that the animal frame requires sleep; secondly, that night brings with it a silence and a cessation of activity which allows of sleep being taken without interruption and without loss. Animal existence is made up of action and slumber; nature has provided a season for each. An animal which stood not in need of rest, would always live in daylight. An animal which, though made for action, and delighting in action, must have its strength repaired by sleep, meets by its constitution the returns of day and night. In the human species, for instance, were the bustle, the labour, the motion of life, upheld by the constant presence of light, sleep could not be enjoyed without being disturbed by noise, and without expense of that time which the eagerness of private interest would not contentedly resign. It is happy, therefore, for this part of the creation—I mean that it is conformable to the frame and wants of their constitution—that nature, by the very disposition of her elements, has commanded, as it were, and imposed upon them, at moderate intervals, a general intermission of their toils, their occupations, and pursuits.

[The duration, likewise, of day and night, bears an evident relation to the physical constitution of animals, and particularly of man. If the earth required a period of forty-eight hours to com-

plete its revolution on its axis, how jumbled and irregular would be the periods of rest and activity! With his present degree of strength, man is incapable of working for four-and-twenty hours, neither can he sleep, experience tells us, above eight or ten hours at a time; hence, were his days and nights extended to twenty-four hours each, a great portion of the daylight would be useless to him, for in it he would be driven to seek repose; and a great portion of the night not less useless, for in it he would be awake, and competent to labour, without the light to enable him to pursue it. Compared with such a state of things, how admirably does the existing distribution of day and night suit the purposes of healthy labour and the requirements of healthy rest!]

But it is not for man, either solely or principally, that night is made. Inferior but less perverted natures taste its solace, and expect its return with greater exactness and advantage than he does. I have often observed, and never observed but to admire, the satisfaction, no less than the regularity, with which the greatest part of the irrational world yield to this soft necessity, this grateful vicissitude; how comfortably the birds of the air, for example, address themselves to the repose of the evening, with what alertness they resume the activity of the day!

Nor does it disturb our argument to confess that certain species of animals are in motion during the night and at rest in the day. With respect even to them, it is still true that there is a change of condition in the animal, and an external change corresponding with it. There is still the relation, though inverted. The fact is, that the repose of other animals sets these at liberty, and invites them to their food or their sport.

If the relation of *sleep* to *night*, and in some instances its converse, be real, we cannot reflect without amazement upon the extent to which it carries us. Day and night are things close to us; the change applies immediately to our sensations; of all the phenomena of nature, it is the most obvious and the most familiar to our experience; but in its cause it belongs to the great motions which are passing in the heavens. Whilst the earth glides round her axle, she ministers to the alternate necessities of the animals dwelling upon her surface, at the same time that she obeys the influence of those attractions which regulate the order of many thousand worlds. The relation, therefore, of sleep to night, is the relation of the inhabitants of the earth to the rotation of their globe: probably it is more; it is a relation to the system of which that globe is a part; and, still further, to the congregation of systems of which theirs is only one. If this account be true, it connects the meanest individual with the universe itself—a chicken roosting upon its perch with the spheres revolving in the firmament.

VIII. But if any one object to our representation, that the succession of day and night, or the rotation of the earth upon

which it depends, is not resolvable into central attraction, we will refer him to that which certainly is—to the change of the seasons. Now, the constitution of animals susceptible of torpor bears a relation to winter similar to that which sleep bears to night. Against not only the cold, but the want of food which the approach of winter induces, the Preserver of the world has provided in many animals by migration, in many others by torpor. As one example out of a thousand—the bat, if it did not sleep through the winter, must have starved, as the moths and flying insects upon which it feeds disappear. But the transition from summer to winter carries us into the very midst of physical astronomy—that is to say, into the midst of those laws which govern the solar system at least, and probably all the heavenly bodies.*

CHAPTER XVIII.

INSTINCTS.

The order may not be very obvious by which I place *instincts* next to relations. But I consider them as a species of relation. They contribute, along with the animal organisation, to a joint effect; in which view they are related to that organisation. In many cases they refer from one animal to another animal; and, when this is the case, become strictly relations in a second point of view.

An INSTINCT is a propensity prior to experience, and independent of instruction. We contend that it is by *instinct* that the sexes of animals seek each other; that animals cherish their offspring; that the young quadruped is directed to the teat of its dam; that birds build their nests, and brood with so much patience upon their eggs; that insects which do not sit upon their eggs, deposit them in those particular situations in which the young, when hatched, find their appropriate food; that it is instinct which carries the salmon, and some other fishes, out of the sea into rivers, for the purpose of shedding their spawn in fresh water.

We may select out of *this* catalogue the incubation of eggs. I entertain no doubt but that a couple of sparrows hatched in an oven, and kept separate from the rest of their species, would proceed as other sparrows do, in every office which related to the

* [In succeeding chapters, and in that on 'The Elements' in particular, some further illustrations of the relations observable between animated bodies and inanimate matter (under which latter term the elements may justly be classed) will be introduced.]

production and preservation of their brood. Assuming this fact, the thing is inexplicable upon any other hypothesis than that of an instinct impressed upon the constitution of the animal. For, first, what should induce the female bird to prepare a nest before she lays her eggs?* It is in vain to suppose her to be possessed of the faculty of reasoning; for no reasoning will reach the case. The fulness or distension which she might feel in a particular part of her body, from the growth and solidity of the egg within her, could not possibly inform her that she was about to produce something which, when produced, was to be preserved and taken care of. Prior to experience, there was nothing to lead to this inference or to this suspicion. The analogy was *all* against it; for in every other instance, what issued from the body was cast out and rejected.

But secondly, let us suppose the egg to be produced into day; how should birds know that their eggs contain their young? There is nothing, either in the aspect or in the internal composition of an egg, which could lead even the most daring imagination to conjecture that it was hereafter to turn out from under its shell a living perfect bird. The form of the egg bears not the rudiments of a resemblance to that of the bird. Inspecting its contents, we find still less reason, if possible, to look for the result which actually takes place. If we should go so far as, from the appearance of order and distinction in the disposition of the liquid substances which we noticed in the egg, to guess that it might be designed for the abode and nutriment of an animal (which would be a very bold hypothesis), we should expect a tadpole dabbling in the slime, much rather than a dry-winged feathered creature; a compound of parts and properties impossible to be used in a state of confinement in the egg, and bearing no conceivable relation, either in quality or material, to anything observed in it. From the white of an egg, would any one look for the feather of a goldfinch? or expect from a simple uniform mucilage, the most complicated of all machines, the most diversified of all collections of substances?

* [It may be alleged that the building of the nest is simply the result of a natural and immediate desire on the part of the newly-mated pair to have a home—a restingplace, to be shared by none but themselves. Upon this view, a rational motive, rather than instinct, originates the nest. But if we adopt this view, what are we to say to such a case as that of the wren's nest, where a bird, the very smallest where many are small, builds an edifice larger and roomier than those erected by birds more than twice its size? If we consider the wren as merely constructing a home for itself and its mate, the size of its nest is altogether inexplicable. But upon the supposition that the bird was guided by an instinct to prepare for incubation, this difficulty disappears; since we find that the wren generally lays a far greater number of eggs (often fifteen or sixteen) than the majority of birds, and the roominess of the nest is seen to be nothing more than is necessary, in the end, for the lodgment of the numerous brood. Upon any other supposition than that of an instinctive impulse, we must ascribe to her much more wisdom than is allotted to human beings, in as far as she is able to number her progeny long ere they have seen the light.]

Nor would the process of incubation, for some time at least, lead us to suspect the event. Who that saw red streaks shooting in the fine membrane which divides the white from the yolk, would suppose that these were about to become bones and limbs? Who that espied two discoloured points first making their appearance in the cicatrix, would have had the courage to predict that these points were to grow into the heart and head of a bird? It is difficult to strip the mind of its experience. It is difficult to resuscitate surprise, when familiarity has once laid the sentiment asleep. But could we forget all that we know, and which *our* sparrows never knew, about oviparous generation; could we divest ourselves of every information but what we derived from reasoning upon the appearances or quality discovered in the objects presented to us, I am convinced that Harlequin, coming out of an egg upon the stage, is not more astonishing to a child than the hatching of a chicken both would be, and ought to be, to a philosopher.

But admit the sparrow, by some means, to know that within that egg was concealed the principle of a future bird; from what chemist was she to learn that *warmth* was necessary to bring it to maturity, or that the degree of warmth imparted by the temperature of her own body was the degree required?

To suppose, therefore, that the female bird acts in this process from a sagacity and reason of her own, is to suppose her to arrive at conclusions which there are no premises to justify. If our sparrow, sitting upon her eggs, expect young sparrows to come out of them, she forms, I will venture to say, a wild and extravagant expectation, in opposition to present appearances and to probability. She must have penetrated into the order of nature farther than any faculties of ours will carry us; and it hath been well observed, that this deep sagacity, if it be sagacity, subsists in conjunction with great stupidity, even in relation to the same subject. 'A chemical operation,' says Addison, 'could not be followed with greater art or diligence than is seen in hatching a chicken; yet is the process carried on without the least glimmering of thought or common sense. The hen will mistake a piece of chalk for an egg; is insensible of the increase or diminution of their number; does not distinguish between her own and those of another species; is frightened when her supposititious breed of ducklings take the water.'

But it will be said, that what reason could not do for the bird, observation, or instruction, or tradition might. Now, if it be true that a couple of sparrows, brought up from the first in a state of separation from all other birds, would build their nest, and brood upon their eggs, then there is an end of this solution. What can be the traditionary knowledge of a chicken hatched in an oven?

Of young birds taken in their nests, a few species breed when

kept in cages; and they which do so, build their nests nearly in the same manner as in the wild state, and sit upon their eggs. This is sufficient to prove an instinct, without having recourse to experiments upon birds hatched by artificial heat, and deprived from their birth of all communication with their species; for we can hardly bring ourselves to believe that the parent bird informed her unfledged pupil of the history of her gestation, her timely preparation of a nest, her expulsion of the eggs, her long incubation, and of the joyful eruption at last of her expected offspring; all which the bird in the cage must have learned in her infancy, if we resolve her conduct into *institution*.

Unless we will rather suppose that she remembers her own escape from the egg; had attentively observed the conformation of the nest in which she was nurtured, and had treasured up her remarks for future imitation; which is not only extremely improbable (for who that sees a brood of callow birds in their nest, can believe that they are taking a plan of their habitation?), but leaves unaccounted for one principal part of the difficulty—'the preparation of the nest before the laying of the egg.' This she could not gain from observation in her infancy.

It is remarkable, also, that the hen sits upon eggs which she has laid without any communication with the male, and which are therefore necessarily unfruitful; that secret she is not let into. Yet if incubation had been a subject of instruction or of tradition, it should seem that this distinction would have formed part of the lesson; whereas the instinct of nature is calculated for a state of nature; the exception here alluded to taking place chiefly, if not solely, amongst domesticated fowls, in which nature is forced out of her course.

There is another case of oviparous economy, which is still less likely to be the effect of education, than it is even in birds; namely, that of *moths* and *butterflies*, which deposit their eggs in the precise substance—that of a cabbage, for example—from which, not the butterfly herself, but the caterpillar which is to issue from her egg, draws its appropriate food. The butterfly cannot taste the cabbage. Cabbage is no food for her; yet in the cabbage, not by chance, but studiously and electively, she lays her eggs. There are, amongst many other kinds, the willow-caterpillar and the cabbage-caterpillar; but we never find upon a willow the caterpillar which eats the cabbage: nor the converse. This choice, as appears to me, cannot in the butterfly proceed from instruction. She had no teacher in her caterpillar state. She never knew her parent. I do not see, therefore, how knowledge acquired by experience, if it ever were such, could be transmitted from one generation to another. There is no opportunity either for instruction or imitation. The parent race is gone before the new brood is hatched. And if it be original reasoning in the butterfly, it is

profound reasoning indeed. She must remember her caterpillar state, its tastes and habits; of which memory she shows no signs whatever. She must conclude from analogy (for here her recollection cannot serve her) that the little round body which drops from her abdomen, will at a future period produce a living creature, not like herself, but like the caterpillar which she remembers herself once to have been. Under the influence of these reflections, she goes about to make provision for an order of things which she concludes will some time or other take place. And it is to be observed, that not a few out of many, but that all butterflies argue thus; all draw this conclusion; all act upon it.

But suppose the address, and the selection, and the plan, which we perceive in the preparations which many irrational animals make for their young, to be traced to some probable origin; still there is left to be accounted for, that which is the source and foundation of these phenomena, that which sets the whole at work, the *στοργη*, the parental affection, which I contend to be inexplicable upon any other hypothesis than that of instinct.

For we shall hardly, I imagine, in brutes, refer their conduct towards their offspring to a sense of duty, or of decency, a care of reputation, a compliance with public manners, with public laws, or with rules of life built upon a long experience of their utility. And all attempts to account for the parental affection from association, I think, fail. With what is it associated? Most immediately with the throes of parturition—that is, with pain, and terror, and disease. The more remote, but not less strong association, that which depends upon analogy, is all against it. Everything else which proceeds from the body is cast away and rejected. In birds, is it the egg which the hen loves? or is it the expectation which she cherishes of a future progeny, that keeps her upon her nest? What cause has she to expect delight from her progeny? Can any rational answer be given to the question, why, prior to experience, the brooding hen should look for pleasure from her chickens? It does not, I think, appear that the cuckoo ever knows her young; yet, in her way, she is as careful in making provision for them as any other bird. She does not leave her egg in every hole.*

*[The strange deviation from the common order of nature presented in the history of parasitical birds, of which the cuckoo is the most remarkable specimen, merits further notice. In this case, as in other seeming deviations from nature, we find the exception accompanied with so many compensating circumstances, as to render it, from its standing out so prominently, even more exhibitive of contrivance and foresight than the general rule. The cuckoo, as the text rightly says, does not leave her egg in every nest. Were she to do this, starvation would probably be the fate of her offspring in many cases; seeing that the stomach of the young orphan, being membranaceous, and fitted only for the digestion of insects or soft food, would be totally incapable of triturating the food of the granivorous birds, which have strong muscular gizzards. The parent

The salmon suffers no surmountable obstacle to oppose her progress up the stream of fresh rivers. And what does she do there? She sheds a spawn, which she immediately quits, in order to return to the sea; and this issue of her body she never afterwards recognises in any shape whatever. Where shall we find a motive for her efforts and her perseverance? Shall we seek it in argumentation, or in instinct? The violet crab of Jamaica performs a fatiguing march of some months' continuance, from the mountains to the sea-side. When she reaches the coast, she casts her spawn into the open sea, and sets out upon her return home.

Moths and butterflies, as hath already been observed, seek out for their eggs those precise situations and substances in which

cuckoo, therefore, by a fine instinct, selects the nest of the sparrow, the titlark, and other soft-billed insectivorous birds, to deposit her egg in; nor is there one well-authenticated case of her having chosen the domicile of a granivorous bird for that purpose.

This fact is in itself very remarkable, but there are points regarding the abandoned offspring of the cuckoo not less curious. The number of eggs laid by the cuckoo is one of these points. She rarely produces more than one egg, and this limited number, it is obvious, is well adapted to the circumstances of the case; as the birds to whom she leaves the charge of her young are so much smaller in size than the cuckoo tribes, that they would be altogether unable to rear more than one of the young strangers. Again, the size of the cuckoo's egg is uncommonly small for so large a bird, being less than the house-sparrow's. This not only suits the tiny nest in which the egg is deposited, but serves also, it may be supposed, to deceive the foster-mother.

Perhaps the most remarkable point, however, connected with this subject, is the instinctive consciousness of its peculiar situation, possessed seemingly by the young cuckoo. Its unnatural parent is so far kind, as to take care to deposit its burden in the strange nest at the very time when the real proprietor is laying her own eggs, which secures to the deserted egg the necessary incubation. From this cause it happens, too, that the young cuckoo leaves the shell about the same time with the foster-bird's own offspring, which generally are three or four in number. Scarcely has the young cuckoo issued from the shell, when it begins to act as if aware that it alone will be sufficient to engross all the cares of its little nurse, and prepares to enjoy them without a rival. It deliberately turns out all its fellow-nestlings, one by one, whether they be in the egg or out of it, and this, too, at a time when the nest can easily hold all. With the assistance of its wings, it contrives to get the bird or egg on its back, and, clambering to the top of the nest, ejects its load with a jerk. Dr Jenner, who first observed this process, says—'The singularity of the young cuckoo's shape is well adapted to these purposes; for, different from other newly-hatched birds, its back, from the shoulders downwards, is very broad, with a considerable depression in the middle. This depression seems formed by nature for the *design* of giving a more secure lodgment to the egg of the foster-bird, or its young one, when the young cuckoo is employed in removing either of them from the nest.' This conclusion is supported by the fact, that the depression disappears when the bird is twelve days old, by which time the provision must have served its purpose. The poor little dupe of a nurse all the while is priding herself on the size and strength of the intruder, and cherishes it as her own.

Though the cause of the cuckoo's abandonment of its young, which leads to the evolution of these curious instincts, is unknown to us, we may notice a curious calculation which has been made, that no less than 3,479,325 young sparrows, &c. are destroyed annually in England in the way described. Can this check, which must operate to a far greater extent in some other countries, and which has many cases analogous to it in nature, be the end in view?]

the offspring caterpillar will find its appropriate food. That dear caterpillar the parent butterfly must never see. There are no experiments to prove that she would retain any knowledge of it if she did. How shall we account for her conduct? I do not mean for her art and judgment in selecting and securing a maintenance for her young, but for the impulse upon which she acts. What should induce her to exert any art, or judgment, or choice, about the matter? The undisclosed grub, the animal which she is destined not to know, can hardly be the object of a particular affection, if we deny the influence of instinct. There is nothing, therefore, left to her, but that of which her nature seems incapable —an abstract anxiety for the general preservation of the species; a kind of patriotism; a solicitude lest the butterfly race should cease from the creation.

Lastly, the principle of association will not explain the discontinuance of the affection when the young animal is grown up. Association, operating in its usual way, would rather produce a contrary effect. The object would become more necessary by habits of society; whereas birds and beasts, after a certain time, banish their offspring; disown their acquaintance; seem to have even no knowledge of the objects which so lately engrossed the attention of their minds, and occupied the industry and labour of their bodies. This change, in different animals, takes place at different distances of time from the birth; but the time always corresponds with the ability of the young animal to maintain itself; never anticipates it. In the sparrow tribe, when it is perceived that the young brood can fly and shift for themselves, then the parents forsake them for ever; and though they continue to live together, pay them no more attention than they do to other birds in the same flock. I believe the same thing is true of all gregarious quadrupeds.

In this part of the case, the variety of resources, expedients, and materials which animals of the same species are said to have recourse to, under different circumstances, and when differently supplied, makes nothing against the doctrine of instincts. The thing which we want to account for is the propensity. The propensity being there, it is probable enough that it may put the animal upon different actions, according to different exigencies. And this adaptation of resources may look like the effect of art and consideration rather than of instinct; but still the propensity is instinctive. For instance, suppose what is related of the woodpecker to be true—that in Europe she deposits her eggs in cavities which she scoops out in the trunks of soft or decayed trees, and in which cavities the eggs lie concealed from the eye, and in some sort safe from the hand of man; but that in the forests of Guinea and the Brazils, which man seldom frequents, the same bird hangs her nest to the twigs of tall trees, thereby placing them out of the

reach of *monkeys* and *snakes;* that is, that in each situation she prepares against the danger which she has most occasion to apprehend; suppose, I say, this to be true, and to be alleged, on the part of the bird that builds these nests, as evidence of a reasoning and distinguishing precaution, still the question returns—whence the propensity to build at all!*

Nor does parental affection accompany generation by any universal law of animal organisation, if such a thing were intelligible. Some animals cherish their progeny with the most ardent fondness and the most assiduous attention; others entirely neglect them: and this distinction always meets the constitution of the young animal, with respect to its wants and capacities. In many, the parental care extends to the young animal; in others, as in all oviparous fish, it is confined to the egg, and even, as to that, to the disposal of it in its proper element. Also, as there is generation without parental affection, so is there parental instinct, or what exactly resembles it, without generation. In the bee tribe, the grub is nurtured neither by the father nor the mother, but by the neutral bee. Probably the case is the same with ants.†

I am not ignorant of the theory which resolves instinct into sensation; which asserts that what appears to have a view and relation to the future, is the result only of the present disposition of the animal's body, and of pleasure or pain experienced *at the time.* Thus the incubation of eggs is accounted for by the pleasure which the bird is supposed to receive from the pressure

* [The North American forests do not seem to have presented any example of a woodpecker's nest so constructed to the eminent ornithologists who have roamed amid their lofty shades. This bird, however, according to Audubon, displays a degree of acuteness in searching for insects which is worthy of notice, though it is difficult to say what is the true nature of the faculty evinced. 'All woodpeckers are extremely expert at discovering insects as they lie under the bark of trees. No sooner have they alighted on a tree, than they stand for a few moments motionless and listening. If no motion is observed in the bark, the woodpecker gives a smart rap with its bill, and bending its neck sideways, lays its head close to it, when the least crawling motion of a beetle, or even a larva, is instantly discovered, and the bird forthwith attacks the tree, removes the bark, and continues to dig till it reaches its prey.' A proceeding somewhat similar has been observed in the lapwing. Earthworms, on perceiving the approach of a mole, fly immediately to the surface. Of this the lapwing seems to be aware, and when other food is scarce, it pats the ground with its feet, till the earthworms, mistaking it for a mole, ascend to the surface, and fall a prey to the cunning bird.

It would perhaps have been better, as will be further noticed, had Paley either admitted the existence of a certain degree of reason in animals, as a separate endowment, or avowed that, in many respects, the faculty which directs their actions bears a mingled character of reason and instinct.]

† [It is generally understood that there is but one mother in the ant communities. This common parent holds the same rank as the queen bee, and, like her, is treated by the subject offspring with a vast deal of attention and respect. When the queen ant lays her eggs, the workers carry them off to nurseries, where they are hatched. As these *workers* are undeveloped females, the text may be regarded as correct, in supposing that the ant communities, like the bee-hives, exhibit parental affection without generation.]

of the smooth convex surface of the shells against the abdomen, or by the relief which the mild temperature of the egg may afford to the heat of the lower part of the body, which is observed at this time to be increased beyond its usual state. This present gratification is the only motive with the hen for sitting upon her nest; the hatching of the chickens is, with respect to her, an accidental consequence. The affection of viviparous animals for their young is, in like manner, solved by the relief, and perhaps the pleasure, which they receive from giving suck. The young animal's seeking, in so many instances, the teat of its dam, is explained from its sense of smell, which is attracted by the odour of milk. The salmon's urging its way up the stream of fresh-water rivers, is attributed to some gratification or refreshment which, in this particular state of the fish's body, she receives from the change of element. Now, of this theory it may be said—

First, that of the cases which require solution, there are few to which it can be applied with tolerable probability; that there are none to which it can be applied without strong objections, furnished by the circumstances of the case. The attention of the cow to its calf, and of the ewe to its lamb, appears to be prior to their sucking. The attraction of the calf or lamb to the teat of the dam is not explained by simply referring it to the sense of smell. What made the scent of milk so agreeable to the lamb that it should follow it up with its nose, or seek with its mouth the place from which it proceeded? No observation, no experience, no argument, could teach the new-dropped animal that the substance from which the scent issued was the material of its food. It had never tasted milk before its birth. None of the animals which are not designed for that nourishment ever offer to suck or to seek out any such food. What is the conclusion, but that the sugescent parts of animals are fitted for their use, and the knowledge of that use put into them?

We assert, secondly, that even as to the cases in which the hypothesis has the fairest claim to consideration, it does not at all lessen the force of the argument for intention and design. The doctrine of instincts is that of appetencies, *superadded* to the constitution of an animal, for the effectuating of a purpose beneficial to the species. The above-stated solution would derive these appetencies from organisation; but then this organisation is not less specifically, not less precisely, and therefore not less evidently, adapted to the same ends, than the appetencies themselves would be upon the old hypothesis. In this way of considering the subject, sensation supplies the place of foresight; but this is the effect of contrivance on the part of the Creator. Let it be allowed, for example, that the hen is induced to brood upon her eggs by the enjoyment or relief which in the heated state of her abdomen she experiences from the pressure of round, smooth

surfaces, or from the application of a temperate warmth. How comes this extraordinary heat or itching, or call it what you will, which you suppose to be the cause of the bird's inclination, to be felt just at the time when the inclination itself is wanted—when it tallies so exactly with the internal constitution of the egg, and with the help which that constitution requires in order to bring it to maturity? In my opinion, this solution, if it be accepted as to the fact, ought to increase, rather than otherwise, our admiration of the contrivance. A gardener lighting up his stoves just when he wants to force his fruit, and when his trees require the heat, gives not a more certain evidence of design. So again, when a male and female sparrow come together, they do not meet to confer upon the expediency of perpetuating their species. As an abstract proposition, they care not the value of a barleycorn whether the species be perpetuated or not: they follow their sensations; and all those consequences ensue, which the wisest counsels could have dictated, which the most solicitous care of futurity, which the most anxious concern for the sparrow-world, could have produced. But how do these consequences ensue? The sensations, and the constitution upon which they depend, are as manifestly directed to the purpose which we see fulfilled by them; and the train of intermediate effects as manifestly laid and planned with a view to that purpose—that is to say, design is as completely evinced by the phenomena, as it would be, even if we suppose the operations to begin, or to be carried on, from what some will allow to be alone properly called instincts—that is, from desires directed to a future end, and having no accomplishment or gratification distinct from the attainment of that end.

In a word: I should say to the patrons of this opinion, Be it so: be it, that those actions of animals which we refer to instinct, are not gone about with any view to their consequences, but that they are attended in the animal with a present gratification, and are pursued for the sake of that gratification alone; what does all this prove but that the *prospection*, which must be somewhere, is not in the animal, but in the Creator?

In treating of the parental affection in brutes, our business lies rather with the origin of the principle than with the effects and expressions of it. Writers recount these with pleasure and admiration. The conduct of many kinds of animals towards their young has escaped no observer, no historian of nature. 'How will they caress them,' says Derham, 'with their affectionate notes; lull and quiet them with their tender parental voice; put food into their mouths; cherish and keep them warm; teach them to pick and eat, and gather food for themselves; and, in a word, perform the part of so many nurses deputed by the Sovereign Lord and Preserver of the world to help such young and shiftless creatures!' Neither ought it, under this head, to be forgotten how

much the instinct *costs* the animal which feels it; how much a bird, for example, gives up, by sitting upon her nest; how repugnant it is to her organisation, her habits, and her pleasures. An animal formed for liberty submits to confinement in the very season when everything invites her abroad: what is more; an animal delighting in motion, made for motion, all whose motions are so easy and so free, hardly a moment, at other times, at rest, is, for many hours of many days together, fixed to her nest as close as if her limbs were tied down by pins and wires. For my part I never see a bird in that situation, but I recognise an invisible hand, detaining the contented prisoner from her fields and groves, for the purpose, as the event proves, the most worthy of the sacrifice, the most important, the most beneficial.*

But the loss of liberty is not the whole of what the procreant bird suffers. Harvey tells us that he has often found the female wasted to skin and bone by sitting upon her eggs.

One observation more, and I will dismiss the subject. The *pairing* of birds, and the *non-pairing* of beasts, forms a distinction between the two classes, which shows that the conjugal instinct is modified with a reference to utility founded in the condition of the offspring. In quadrupeds, the young animal draws its nutriment from the body of the dam. The male parent neither does nor can contribute any part to its sustentation. In the winged race, the young bird is supplied by an importation of food, to procure and bring home which, in a sufficient quantity for the demand of a numerous brood, requires the industry of both parents. In this difference we see a reason for the vagrant instinct of the quadruped, and for the faithful love of the feathered mate.†

* [So powerful is the tie that binds them at this season to their nests, that their natural timidity disappears, and in many instances they will permit themselves to be taken rather than desert their charge. In the Magazine of Natural History, a fine illustration of this is recorded:—'A pair of blue titmice built their nest in the upper part of an old pump, fixing on the pin on which the handle worked. It chanced that during the time of building and laying the eggs, the pump had not been in use; when again set a-going, the female was sitting, and it was naturally expected that the motion of the pump-handle would drive her away. The young brood were hatched safely, however, without any other misfortune than the loss of part of the tail of the sitting bird, which was rubbed off by the friction of the pump-handle; nor did they appear at all disturbed by the visitors who were frequently looking at them.']

† [In this chapter, Paley takes no notice of the great sagacity, if not the reasoning powers, which dogs and other animals have in many instances shown themselves to possess. We do not mean by this remark to imply that there *is* any distinctly ascertained connection between the faculty called instinct, and reason, or mind, as exemplified in man. There are many circumstances, however, which should deter us from adopting hasty opinions, in the present imperfect state of our knowledge, on the subject. For while it is impossible to deny that many of the operations of instinct in animals appear totally dissimilar to those of reason in man, on the other hand there is in many instances a similitude between them equally undeniable. Every species of bird, for example, has a mode of nidification peculiar to itself; and this is regarded distinctly as the

CHAPTER XIX.

OF INSECTS.

We are not writing a system of natural history, therefore we have not attended to the classes into which the subjects of that science are distributed. What we had to observe concerning different species of animals fell easily, for the most part, within the divisions which the course of our argument led us to adopt. There remain, however, some remarks upon the *insect* tribe, which could not properly be introduced under any of these heads, and which, therefore, we have collected into a chapter by themselves.

The structure and the use of the parts of insects are less understood than those of quadrupeds and birds, not only by reason of their minuteness, or the minuteness of their parts (for that minuteness we can in some measure follow with glasses), but also by reason of the remoteness of their manners and modes of life from those of larger animals. For instance: Insects, under all their varieties of form, are endowed with *antennæ*, which is the name given to those long feelers that rise from each side of

result of instinct, not reason, because a sparrow hatched apart from its parent will build after the fashion of its kind—a fashion never taught it. But we find that this nidifying instinct is capable of being modified by circumstances, so as to assume the semblance of reason. 'The regular nest (says a naturalist) of the house-martin is hemispheric; but where a rafter, or a joint, or a cornice, may happen to stand in the way, the nest is so contrived as to conform to the obstruction, and becomes flat, or oval, or compressed.' So, in like manner, do birds frequently vary their building materials, to suit peculiar circumstances. Now, considering instinct in animals in the light of a specific and secret influence, by which every species is impelled naturally to pursue, at all times, *one way*, or tract, without any teaching or example, these facts seem scarcely referable to a power which can be justly so defined.

The cases to which we have alluded evince, as it were, a certain degree of reason blended with the exercise of instinct; but there have been observed in birds instances of sagacity in which instinct could scarcely be said to have any share. They have been known to drop hard alimentary substances from a height in order to break them, and to fill a vessel, containing water which they could not reach, with stones, in order to bring the liquid nearer the surface. Instinct, which is, according to Paley, 'prior to experience, and independent of instruction,' cannot explain such acts as these. They are as certainly the result of a reasoning power as any act of man. If the bird, in filling the pitcher, imitated a process which it had seen gone through before, then it had faculties not 'independent of instruction;' and if it had never witnessed the process, nothing but a degree of reasoning power can account for the act.

Whether or not instinct bears any relation to the mental endowments of man, one thing at least is certain (and it is the chief point to be attended to here), that the faculty with which they have been gifted leads animals unerringly, in all cases, to what is most conducive to their enjoyment and welfare. Whatever view we adopt of the immediate means that lead to this result, the result itself tends strongly to support the argument for design.]

the head; but to what common use or want of the insect kind a provision so universal is subservient, has not yet been ascertained, because it admits not of a clear or very probable comparison with any organs which we possess ourselves, or with the organs of animals which resemble ourselves in their functions and faculties, or with which we are better acquainted than we are with insects.* We want a ground of analogy. This difficulty stands in our way as to some particulars in the insect constitution, which we might wish to be acquainted with. Nevertheless, there are many contrivances in the bodies of insects, neither dubious in their use nor obscure in their structure, and most properly mechanical. These form parts of *our* argument.

I. The *elytra*, or scaly wings of the genus of scarabæus or beetle,† furnish an example of this kind. The true wing of the animal is a light transparent membrane, finer than the finest gauze, and not unlike it. It is also, when expanded, in proportion to the size of the animal, very large. In order to protect this delicate structure, and perhaps also to preserve it in a due state of suppleness and humidity, a strong hard case is given to it, in the shape of the horny wing which we call the *elytron*. When the animal is at rest, the gauze wings lie folded up under this impenetrable shield. When the beetle prepares for flying, he raises the integument, and spreads out his thin membrane to the air. And it cannot be observed without admiration, what a tissue of cordage—that is, of muscular tendons—must run in various and complicated, but determinate directions, along this fine surface, in order to enable the animal either to gather it up into a certain precise form, whenever it desires to place its wings under the shelter which nature hath given to them, or to expand again their folds when wanted for action.

In some insects, the elytra cover the whole body; in others,

* [The observations of Huber have shown that the antennæ, or feelers, are instruments of great importance to the creatures possessed of them. That they are endowed with the most delicate sense of touch, has long been conjectured, and indeed seems almost unquestionable. By means of them, bees and ants guide all their movements and labours in the hive, where no light is present. Huber conceives the antennæ, however, to possess a much finer sensibility, and higher powers, than appertain to a mere organ of touch. If an ant be deprived of its feelers, it appears to become stupified, and though placed immediately before its hole, appears to have lost all knowledge of the locality. In a bee-hive, also, if any commotion arises, the alarm is conveyed from bee to bee by crossing their antennæ, until the whole hive is warned. Huber is inclined to think that both with bees and ants the antennæ are the chief organs of communication, and that it is by varying the manner of bringing them into contact that different news are conveyed. With regard, at least, to ants—insects which emit no sound—this appears extremely probable; it is difficult, indeed, to account for the unity of action and order which prevails in their communities, except upon some such supposition. The antennæ of some insects contain not less than one hundred distinct parts or pieces.]

† [Coleopterous, or sheath-winged insects, according to the modern classification.]

half; in others, only a small part of it; but in all they completely hide and cover the true wings. Also,

Many or most of the beetle species lodge in holes in the earth, environed by hard rough substances, and have frequently to squeeze their way through narrow passages; in which situation, wings so tender and so large could scarcely have escaped injury, without both a firm covering to defend them, and the capacity of collecting themselves up under its protection.

II. Another contrivance, equally mechanical and equally clear, is the *awl* or borer, fixed at the tails of various species of flies; and with which they pierce, in some cases, plants; in others, wood; in others, the skin and flesh of animals; in others, the coat of the chrysalis of insects of a different species from their own; and in others, even lime, mortar, and stone. I need not add, that having pierced the substance, they deposit their eggs in the hole. The descriptions which naturalists give of this organ are such as the following:—It is a sharp-pointed instrument, which, in its inactive state, lies concealed in the extremity of the abdomen, and which the animal draws out at pleasure, for the purpose of making a puncture in the leaves, stem, or bark of the particular plant which is suited to the nourishment of its young. In a sheath, which divides and opens whenever the organ is used, there is enclosed a compact, solid, dentated stem, along which runs a *gutter* or *groove*, by which groove, after the penetration is effected, the egg, assisted in some cases by a peristaltic motion, passes to its destined lodgment. In the œstrum or gad-fly, the wimble *draws out* like the pieces of a spyglass; the last piece is armed with three hooks, and is able to bore through the hide of an ox. Can anything more be necessary to display the mechanism than to relate the fact?

III. The *stings* of insects, though for a different purpose, are in their structure not unlike the piercer. The sharpness to which the point in all of them is wrought; the temper and firmness of the substance of which it is composed; the strength of the muscles by which it is darted out, compared with the smallness and weakness of the insect, and with the soft and friable texture of the rest of the body, are properties of the sting to be noticed, and not a little to be admired. The sting of a *bee* will pierce through a goat-skin glove. It penetrates the human flesh more readily than the finest point of a needle. The *action* of the sting affords an example of the union of chemistry and mechanism, such as, if it be not a proof of contrivance, nothing is. First, as to the chemistry; how highly concentrated must be the *venom*, which, in so small a quantity, can produce such powerful effects! And in the bee we may observe, that this venom is made from *honey*, the only food of the insect, but the last material from which I should have expected that an exalted poison could, by any process or digestion

whatsoever, have been prepared. In the next place, with respect to the mechanism, the sting is not a simple, but a compound instrument. The visible sting, though drawn to a point exquisitely sharp, is in strictness only a sheath: for near to the extremity may be perceived by the microscope two minute orifices, from which orifices, in the act of stinging, and as it should seem, after the point of the main sting has buried itself in the flesh, are launched out two subtile rays, which may be called the true or proper stings, as being those through which the poison is infused into the puncture already made by the exterior sting.* I have said that chemistry and mechanism are here *united:* by which observation I meant that all this machinery would have been useless, *telum imbelle* [an innoxious weapon], if a supply of poison, intense in quality in proportion to the smallness of the drop, had not been furnished to it by the chemical elaboration which was carried on in the insect's body; and that, on the other hand, the poison, the result of this process, could not have attained its effect, or reached its enemy, if, when it was collected at the extremity of the abdomen, it had not found there a machinery fitted to conduct it to the external situations in which it was to operate—namely, an awl to bore a hole, and a syringe to inject the fluid. Yet these attributes, though combined in their action, are independent in their origin. The venom does not breed the sting, nor does the sting concoct the venom.

IV. The *proboscis* with which many insects are endowed, comes next in order to be considered. It is a tube attached to the head of the animal. In the bee, it is composed of two pieces connected by a joint; for if it were constantly extended, it would be too much exposed to accidental injuries; therefore, in its indolent state, it is doubled up by means of the joint, and in that position lies secure under a scaly penthouse. In many species of the butterfly, the proboscis, when not in use, is coiled up like a watch-spring. In the same bee, the proboscis serves the office of the mouth, the insect having no other; and how much better adapted

* [The description in the text of the sting of the bee, is correct as far as it is carried. The improved means, however, of microscopic observation, which have since Paley's time created a new world, inform us that the two subtile rays, or true stings, of which he speaks, can only be regarded properly as one sting, having a split in it, which opens at the requisite time to permit the passage of the poison. This fluid is conveyed from two small secreting organs to the sting by a duct, in the course of which, and near its termination at the sting, is a dilatation or bag of considerable size, where a quantity of the poison lies always ready for use. It further appears that the point of the true sting is slightly serrated, and that it has at one point a bulge, which prevents it from passing too far out of the sheath. Separate muscles are distributed to the sheath and sting, as might be anticipated—seeing that their motions, though following rapidly on each other, are not simultaneous. These same muscles, it is probable, press out the contents of the poison bag at the moment of their action. Our author may indeed observe of this minute but finished instrument, 'if it be not a proof of contrivance, nothing is.']

it is than a mouth would be for the collecting of the proper nourishment of the animal, is sufficiently evident. The food of the bee is the nectar of flowers—a drop of syrup, lodged deep in the bottom of the corollæ, in the recesses of the petals, or down the neck of a monopetalous glove. Into these cells the bee thrusts its long narrow pump, through the cavity of which it sucks up this precious fluid, inaccessible to every other approach. It is observable also, that the plant is not the worse for what the bee does to it. The harmless plunderer rifles the sweets, but leaves the flower uninjured. The ringlets of which the proboscis of the bee is composed, the muscles by which it is extended and contracted, form so many microscopical wonders. The agility also with which it is moved, can hardly fail to excite admiration. But it is enough for our purpose to observe in general the suitableness of the structure to the use, of the means to the end, and especially the wisdom by which nature has departed from its most general analogy (for animals being furnished with mouths is such), when the purpose could be better answered by the deviation.

In some insects, the proboscis, or tongue, or trunk, is shut up in a sharp-pointed sheath; which sheath, being of a much firmer texture than the proboscis itself, as well as sharpened at the point, pierces the substance which contains the food, and then *opens within the wound*, to allow the enclosed tube, through which the juice is extracted, to perform its office. Can any mechanism be plainer than this is, or surpass this?*

V. The *metamorphosis* of insects from grubs into moths and flies is an astonishing process. A hairy caterpillar is transformed into a butterfly. Observe the change. We have four beautiful wings, where there were none before; a tubular proboscis, in the place of a mouth with jaws and teeth; six long legs, instead of fourteen feet. In another case we see a white, smooth, soft worm, turned into a black, hard, crustaceous beetle, with gauze wings. These, as I said, are astonishing processes, and must require, as it should seem, a proportionably artificial apparatus. The hypothesis which appears to me most probable is, that in the grub there exist at the same time three animals, one within another, all nourished by the

* [To all the forms in which the proboscis appears in insects, it is impossible to give attention here: they are as numerous and varied as the wants and circumstances of the creatures possessed of them. One of the most striking forms of the organ is seen in the butterfly and moth tribes, as the following description in Dr Roget's admirable Treatise on Animal and Vegetable Physiology will show:—'The proboscis of the lepidoptera (scaly-winged insects) is a double tube, constructed by the two edges being rolled longitudinally till they meet in the middle of the lower surface, thus forming a tube on each side, but leaving also another tube intermediate to the two lateral ones. This middle tube is formed by the junction of two grooves, which, by the aid of a curious apparatus of hooks, resembling those of the laminæ of a feather, lock into each other, and can be either united into an air-tight canal, or can be easily separated at the will of the animal.' The side tubes, it has been supposed, convey air, while by the central canal the insect sucks its food from flowers.]

same digestion, and by a communicating circulation, but in different stages of maturity. The latest discoveries made by naturalists seem to favour this supposition. The insect, already equipped with wings, is descried under the membranes both of the worm and nymph. In some species, the proboscis, the antennæ, the limbs, and wings of the fly, have been observed to be folded up within the body of the caterpillar; and with such nicety, as to occupy a small space only under the two first rings. This being so, the outermost animal, which, besides its own proper character, serves as an integument to the other two, being the farthest advanced, dies, as we suppose, and drops off first. The second, the pupa or chrysalis, then offers itself to observation. This also, in its turn, dies; its dead and brittle husk falls to pieces, and makes way for the appearance of the fly or moth. Now if this be the case, or indeed whatever explication be adopted, we have a prospective contrivance of the most curious kind; we have organisations *three deep;* yet a vascular system, which supplies nutrition, growth, and life, to all of them together.*

VI. Almost all insects are oviparous. Nature keeps her butterflies, moths, and caterpillars locked up during the winter in their egg state; and we have to admire the various devices to which, if we may so speak, the same nature hath resorted for the *security* of the egg. Many insects enclose their eggs in a silken web;

* [It may be useful to describe in a connected manner the whole process of change, or, in other words, the metamorphosis, which an insect undergoes before reaching its perfect state. To take the case of the butterfly, for example. About the middle of summer, butterflies usually deposit on the leaf of a tree or plant three or four hundred eggs, from each of which, in a few days, proceeds a young caterpillar. The insect is now in its *larva* state, as it is termed. Soon after these caterpillars are produced, they begin to form a common habitation, by spinning silken threads, which they attach to one edge of the leaf, and carry over to the other, thus forming a tent or hammock with a spun-silk roof, under which the little community lives in great harmony. As they increase in size, they form many new tents of the same kind. Such dwellings, however, are but temporary. As the winter approaches, they form one spacious domicile upon similar principles, but composed of many leaves, or fragments of leaves, and even twigs united, and in this the whole community lies all winter, closely huddled up together, in a torpid state. At the end of April, the caterpillars awake, and soon grow bulky by feeding on the green leaves. Their old habitation, though at this time often altered, still serves them, and in it they cast their skins several times. About the middle of June the great change begins. Each caterpillar spins and invests itself with a *cocoon*, which is a roll of silky thread of great length. The thread of the silkworm's cocoon measures generally five hundred ells. In the cocoon, the animal enters into the state of a *pupa* (sometimes termed *chrysalis*, or *nympha*, or *aurelia*), when it is an oblong, soft, whitish body, without limbs, apparently, or power of motion. Its members, however, gradually develop themselves, and in about twenty days, it bursts from its case a perfect *imago*, or butterfly.

The text rightly says that the insect is, throughout these changes, one and the same. The rudiments of the perfect *imago*, or butterfly, lie from the first below the numerous integuments. It is not difficult to discover the end of this arrangement. The delicate creatures which flutter in the summer sun are thus protected in the winter colds, their race is preserved, and a longer measure of life and enjoyment insured to them.]

others cover them with a coat of hair torn from their own bodies; some glue them together; and others, like the moth of the silk-worm, glue them to the leaves upon which they are deposited, that they may not be shaken off by the wind, or washed away by rain; some, again, make incisions into leaves, and hide an egg in each incision; whilst some envelop their eggs with a soft substance, which forms the first aliment of the young animal; and some, again, make a hole in the earth, and having stored it with a quantity of proper food, deposit their eggs in it. In all which we are to observe that the expedient depends not so much upon the address of the animal, as upon the physical resources of its constitution.

The art, also, with which the young insect is *coiled up* in the egg, presents, where it can be examined, a subject of great curiosity. The insect, furnished with all the members which it ought to have, is rolled up into a form which seems to contract it into the least possible space; by which contraction, notwithstanding the smallness of the egg, it has room enough in its apartment, and to spare. This folding of the limbs appears to me to indicate a special direction; for if it were merely the effect of compression, the collocation of the parts would be more various than it is. In the same species I believe it is always the same.

These observations belong to the whole insect tribe, or to a great part of them. Other observations are limited to fewer species, but not, perhaps, less important or satisfactory.

I. The organisation in the abdomen of the *silkworm* or *spider*, whereby these insects form their *thread*, is as incontestably mechanical as a wire-drawer's mill. In the body of the silkworm are two bags, remarkable for their form, position, and use. They wind round the intestine; when drawn out, they are ten inches in length, though the animal itself is only two. Within these bags is collected a glue; and communicating with the bags are two paps or outlets, perforated, like a grater, by a number of small holes. The glue or gum being passed through these minute apertures, forms hairs of almost imperceptible fineness; and these hairs, when joined, compose the silk which we wind off from the cone in which the silkworm has wrapped itself up; in the spider, the web is formed from this thread. In both cases, the extremity of the thread, by means of its adhesive quality, is first attached by the animal to some external hold; and the end being now fastened to a point, the insect, by turning round its body, or by receding from that point, draws out the thread through the holes above described, by an operation, as hath been observed, exactly similar to the drawing of wire. The thread, like the wire, is formed by the hole through which it passes. In one respect there is a difference. The wire is the metal unaltered, except in figure. In the animal process, the nature of the substance

is somewhat changed, as well as the form; for, as it exists within the insect, it is a soft clammy gum or glue. The thread acquires, it is probable, its firmness and tenacity from the action of the air upon its surface, in the moment of exposure; and a thread so fine is almost all surface. This property, however, of the paste is part of the contrivance.

The mechanism itself consists of the bags or reservoirs into which the glue is collected, and of the external holes communicating with these bags; and the action of the machine is seen in the forming of a thread, as wire is formed, by forcing the material already prepared through holes of proper dimensions. The secretion is an act too subtile for our discernment, except as we perceive it by the produce. But one thing answers to another; the secretory glands to the quality and consistence required in the secreted substance; the bag to its reception: the outlets and orifices are constructed not merely for relieving the reservoirs of their burden, but for manufacturing the contents into a form and texture of great external use, or rather, indeed, of future necessity, to the life and functions of the insect.*

II. BEES, under one character or other, have furnished every naturalist with a set of observations. I shall in this place confine myself to one; and that is, the *relation* which obtains between the wax and the honey. No person who has inspected a beehive can forbear remarking how commodiously the honey is bestowed in the comb; and, amongst other advantages, how effectually the fermentation of the honey is prevented by distributing it into small cells. The fact is, that when the honey is separated from the comb, and put into jars, it runs into fermentation with a much less degree of heat than what takes place in a hive. This may be

* [If the general subserviency and adaptation of everything around him to the purposes of man be held as any indication of design in the arrangements of nature, then it will not be thought superfluous to allude here to the results of the silkworm's metamorphosis from the grub to the chrysalis state, though the allusion can afford no confirmation of the immediate argument in the text. When we think of the immense number of human beings whom this little insect clothes, warms, and adorns, we are tempted to say, presumptuous as the saying may be, 'were it but for this end alone, the peculiarity in the insect economy which effects it had been well established!' Following out this idea, of the practical utility of insects to man, we find many other examples of it besides the silkworm. Galls, cochineal, blistering-flies, are instances of this, and many more might be adduced.

Of the perfection of the mechanism, minute as the machine is, by which the silkworm elaborates its thread, some idea may be formed from the fact, that the thread composing the ball or cocoon in which the insect wraps itself, when unwound, is often found to be three miles long, though seldom weighing three grains. It is of a texture firm enough to bear being unwound, and indeed this is always done in the manufacture of silk. As soon as the cocoon is formed, to prevent the insect from eating through it on reaching the imago, or moth state, heat is applied to the ball, which does not injure the silk, but which the creature is unable to bear. The thread is then uncoiled for the purposes of commerce.]

reckoned a nicety; but, independently of any nicety in the matter, I would ask—what could the bee do with the honey if it had not the wax?—how, at least, could it store it up for winter? The wax, therefore, answers a purpose with respect to the honey, and the honey constitutes that purpose with respect to the wax. This is the relation between them. But the two substances, though together of the greatest use, and without each other of little, come from a different origin. The bee finds the honey, but makes the wax. The honey is lodged in the nectaria of flowers, and probably undergoes little alteration; is merely collected: whereas the wax is a ductile, tenacious paste, made out of a dry powder, not simply by kneading it with a liquid, but by a digestive process in the body of the bee. What account can be rendered of facts so circumstanced, but that the animal, being intended to feed upon honey, was, by a peculiar external configuration, enabled to procure it? That, moreover, wanting the honey when it could not be procured at all, it was further endued with the no less necessary faculty of constructing repositories for its preservation? Which faculty, it is evident, must depend primarily upon the capacity of providing suitable materials. Two distinct functions go to make up the ability. First, the power in the bee, with respect to wax, of loading the *farina* of flowers upon its thighs. Microscopic observers speak of the spoon-shaped appendages with which the thighs of bees are beset for this very purpose; but inasmuch as the art and will of the bee may be supposed to be concerned in this operation, there is, secondly, that which doth not rest in art or will—a digestive faculty, which converts the loose powder into a stiff substance. This is a just account of the honey and the honey-comb: and this account, through every part, carries a creative intelligence along with it.

The *sting* also of the bee has this relation to the honey, that it is necessary for the protection of a treasure which invites so many robbers.

[One of the most wonderful examples of instinct, is that presented by the bee in the construction of its cells. These tiny apartments have their sides inclined at the exact angle of 120 degrees, and the roof is constructed with similar accuracy, at the angles of 110 and 70 degrees. All varieties of the bee, in all lands, and at all times, employ these proportions in the erection of their cells. Now, these are the exact geometrical proportions which mathematicians have determined to be best fitted for giving strength to the structure, and for saving room, labour, and wax. The angle of 120 degrees, at which the sides are formed, had been long known to be the best one for such a purpose, but it was only by a recent application of the fluxional calculus that the other angles were proved to have the same wonderful adaptation to the end in view. Thus has instinct taught the bee to

act upon principles which have for ages evaded the knowledge of man.]

III. Our business is with mechanism. In the *panorpa* tribe of insects, there is a forceps in the tail of the male insect, with which he catches and holds the female. Are a pair of pincers more mechanical than this provision in its structure? or is any structure more clear and certain in its design?

IV. St Pierre tells us that in a fly with six feet (I do not remember that he describes the species), the pair next the head and the pair next the tail have brushes at their extremities, with which the fly dresses, as there may be occasion, the anterior or the posterior part of its body; but that the middle pair have no such brushes, the situation of these legs not admitting of the brushes, if they were there, being converted to the same use. This is a very exact mechanical distinction.

V. If the reader, looking to our distributions of science, wish to contemplate the chemistry as well as the mechanism of nature, the insect creation will afford him an example. I refer to the light in the tail of a *glow-worm*. Two points seem to be agreed upon by naturalists concerning it: first, that it is phosphoric; secondly, that its use is to attract the male insect. The only thing to be inquired after, is the singularity, if any such there be, in the natural history of this animal, which should render a provision of this kind more necessary for it than for other insects. That singularity seems to be the difference which subsists between the male and the female; which difference is greater than what we find in any other species of animal whatever. The glow-worm is a female *caterpillar;* the male of which is a *fly;* lively, comparatively small, dissimilar to the female in appearance, probably also as distinguished from her in habits, pursuits, and manners, as he is unlike in form and external constitution. Here, then, is the adversity of the case. The caterpillar cannot meet her companion in the air. The winged rover disdains the ground. They might never, therefore, be brought together, did not this radiant torch direct the volatile mate to his sedentary female.

In this example we also see the resources of art anticipated. One grand operation of chemistry is the making of phosphorus: and it was thought an ingenious device to make phosphoric matches supply the place of lighted tapers. Now this very thing is done in the body of the glow-worm. The phosphorus is not only made, but kindled; and caused to emit a steady and genial beam, for the purpose which is here stated, and which I believe to be the true one.

VI. Nor is the last the only instance that entomology affords in which our discoveries, or rather our projects, turn out to be imitations of nature. Some years ago, a plan was suggested of producing propulsion by reaction in this way: By the force of a

steam-engine, a stream of water was to be shot out of the stern of a boat; the impulse of which stream upon the water in the river was to push the boat itself forward: it is, in truth, the principle by which skyrockets ascend in the air. Of the use or practicability of the plan I am not speaking, nor is it my concern to praise its ingenuity: but it is certainly a contrivance. Now, if naturalists are to be believed, it is exactly the device which nature has made use of for the motion of some species of aquatic insects. The larva of the *dragon-fly*, according to Adams, swims by ejecting water from its tail; is driven forward by the reaction of water in the pool upon the current issuing in a direction backward from its body.

VII. Again: Europe has lately been surprised by the elevation of bodies in the air by means of a balloon. The discovery consisted in finding out a manageable substance, which was, bulk for bulk, lighter than air; and the application of the discovery was to make a body composed of this substance bear up, along with its own weight, some heavier body which was attached to it. This expedient, so new to us, proves to be no other than what the Author of Nature has employed in the *gossamer spider*. We frequently see this spider's thread floating in the air, and extended from hedge to hedge, across a road or brook of four or five yards width. The animal which forms the thread has no wings wherewith to fly from one extremity to the other of this line, nor muscles to enable it to spring or dart to so great a distance; yet its Creator hath laid for it a path in the atmosphere; and after this manner. Though the animal itself be heavier than air, the thread which it spins from its bowels is specifically lighter. This is its *balloon*. The spider, left to itself, would drop to the ground; but being tied to its thread, both are supported. We have here a very peculiar provision; and to a contemplative eye, it is a gratifying spectacle to see this insect wafted on her thread, sustained by a levity not her own, and traversing regions which, if we examined only the body of the animal, might seem to have been forbidden to its nature.

I must now crave the reader's permission to introduce into this place, for want of a better, an observation or two upon the tribe of animals, whether belonging to land or water, which are covered by *shells*.

I. The *shells* of *snails* are a wonderful, a mechanical, and, if one might so speak concerning the works of nature, an original contrivance. Other animals have their proper retreats, their hybernacula also, or winter quarters, but the snail carries these about with him. He travels with his tent; and this tent, though, as was necessary, both light and thin, is completely impervious either to moisture or air. The young snail comes out of its egg with the shell upon its back; and the gradual enlargement which

the shell receives, is derived from the slime excreted by the animal's skin. Now the aptness of this excretion to the purpose, its property of hardening into a shell, and the action, whatever it be, of the animal, whereby it avails itself of its gift, and of the constitution of its glands (to say nothing of the work being commenced before the animal is born), are things which can, with no probability, be referred to any other cause than to express design; and that not on the part of the animal alone, in which design, though it might build the house, could not have supplied the material. The will of the animal could not determine the quality of the excretion. Add to which, that the shell of a snail, with its pillar and convolution, is a very artificial fabric; whilst a snail, as it should seem, is the most numb and unprovided of all artificers. In the midst of variety, there is likewise a regularity, which would hardly be expected. In the same species of snail, the number of turns is usually, if not always, the same. The sealing up of the mouth of the shell by the snail is also well calculated for its warmth and security; but the cerate is not of the same substance with the shell.

II. Much of what has been observed of snails belongs to *shell-fish* and their *shells*, particularly to those of the univalve kind; with the addition of two remarks: one of which is upon the great strength and hardness of most of these shells. I do not know whether, the weight being given, art can produce so strong a case as are some of these shells. Which defensive strength suits well with the life of an animal that has often to sustain the dangers of a stormy element, and a rocky bottom, as well as the attacks of voracious fish. The other remark is upon the property in the animal excretion not only of congealing, but of congealing, or, as a builder would call it, *setting*, in water, and into a cretaceous substance, firm and hard. This property is much more extraordinary, and, chemically speaking, more specific, than that of hardening in the air; which may be reckoned a kind of exsiccation, like the drying of clay into bricks.*

* [In all cases of shell manufacture by snails and other creatures of this class, we find the animal itself playing only, as it were, a secondary part, helping nature by certain motions and actions, while the secreting organs of its body are the efficient agents in the various vestitory changes undergone.

There is a remarkable instance, however, of an insect forming a covering for its body in an entirely different manner. The moth generated in woollen clothes is an exception to the assertion that man is the only animal which is naked, and the only one which clothes itself. This insect *manufactures* for itself, by a process entirely mechanical, a dress of wool or hair, beginning the operation of forming it immediately after birth. The process is thus described by the entomologists Kirby and Spence :—'The shape of the moth's dress is adapted to that of its body—a cylindrical case, open at both ends. The stuff of which it is composed is the manufacture of the *larva* of the *tinea*, which incorporates wool or hair, artfully cut from our clothes or furniture, with silk drawn from its mouth, into a warm and thick tissue; and as this would not be soft enough for its tender skin, it also lines the inside of its coat with a layer of pure silk.

III. In the *bivalve* order of shellfish—cockles, mussels, oysters, &c.—what contrivance can be so simple or so clear as the insertion, at the back, of a tough tendinous substance, that becomes at once the ligament which binds the two shells together, and the *hinge* upon which they open and shut?

IV. The shell of a lobster's tail, in its articulations and overlappings, represents the jointed part of a coat of mail; or rather, which I believe to be the truth, a coat of mail is an imitation of a lobster's shell. The same end is to be answered by both; the same properties, therefore, are required in both—namely, hardness and flexibility, a covering which may guard the part without obstructing its motion. For this double purpose, the art of man, expressly exercised upon the subject, has not been able to devise anything better than what nature presents to his observation. Is not this, therefore, mechanism, which the mechanic, having a similar purpose in view, adopts? Is the structure of a coat of mail to be referred to art? Is the same structure of the lobster, conducing to the same use, to be referred to anything less than art?

Some, who may acknowledge the imitation, and assent to the inference which we draw from it in the instance before us, may be disposed, possibly, to ask why such imitations are not more frequent than they are, if it be true, as we allege, that the same principle of intelligence, design, and mechanical contrivance was exerted in the formation of natural bodies as we employ in the making of the various instruments by which our purposes are served? The answers to this question are—first, that it seldom happens that precisely the same purpose, and no other, is pursued in any work which we compare of nature and of art; secondly, that it still more seldom happens that we *can* imitate nature, if we would. Our materials and our workmanship are equally deficient. Springs and wires, and cork and leather, produce a poor substitute for an arm or a hand. In the example which we have selected—I mean a lobster's shell compared with a coat of mail—these difficulties stand less in the way than in almost any other that can be assigned; and the consequence is, as we have seen, that art gladly borrows from nature her contrivance, and imitates it closely.

But to return to insects. I think it is in this class of animals

But the coat requires to be enlarged as the insect increases in size. This the little occupant accomplishes as dexterously as any tailor. If the case merely require lengthening, the task is easy. All that is needful, is merely to add a new ring of hair, or wool, or silk, to each end. But to enlarge it in width is not so easy a task. Yet it sets to work precisely as we should, slitting the case on the two opposite sides, and then adroitly inserting between them two pieces of the requisite size. It does not, however, cut open the case from one end to the other at once: the sides would separate too far asunder, and the insect be left naked. It therefore first cuts each side about half-way down, and then, after filling up the fissure, proceeds to cut the remaining half; so that, in fact, four enlargements are made, and four separate pieces inserted.']

above all others, especially when we take in the multitude of species which the microscope discovers, that we are struck with what Cicero has called 'the *insatiable* variety of nature.' There are said to be six thousand species of flies; seven hundred and sixty butterflies; each different from all the rest—(St Pierre). The same writer tells us, from his own observation, that thirty-seven species of winged insects, with distinctions well-expressed, visited a single strawberry plant in the course of three weeks. Ray observed, within the compass of a mile or two of his own house, two hundred kinds of butterflies, nocturnal and diurnal.* He likewise asserts, but I think without any grounds of exact computation, that the number of species of insects, reckoning all sorts of them, may not be short of ten thousand. And in this vast variety of animal forms (for the observation is not confined to insects, though more applicable, perhaps, to them than to any other class), we are sometimes led to take notice of the different methods, or rather of the studiously-diversified methods, by which one and the same purpose is attained. In the article of breathing, for example, which was to be provided for in some way or other, besides the ordinary varieties of lungs, gills, and breathing-holes (for insects, in general, respire, not by the mouth, but through holes in the sides), the nymphæ of gnats have an apparatus to raise their *backs* to the top of the water, and so take breath. The hydrocanthari do the like by thrusting their *tails* out of the water. The maggot of the *Eruca labra* has a long tail, one part sheathed within another (but which it can draw out at pleasure), with a starry tuft at the end, by which *tuft*, when expanded upon the surface, the insect both supports itself in the water and draws in the air which is necessary. In the article of natural clothing, we have the skins of animals, invested with scales, hair, feathers, mucus, froth; or itself turned into a shell or crust: in the no less necessary article of offence and defence, we have teeth, talons, beaks, horns, stings, prickles, with (the most singular expedient for the same purpose) the power of giving the electric shock, and, as is credibly related of some animals, of driving away their pursuers by an intolerable fœtor, or of blackening the water through which they are pursued.† The considera-

* [As might be anticipated, the progress made in natural history since the time of Paley has led to great alterations in the numbering of the insect tribes. Instead of seven hundred and sixty species of butterflies, in which number nocturnal as well as diurnal insects—that is, moths as well as butterflies—are included, there have been found to exist between two and three thousand of the diurnal class alone. In Britain, where it is to be supposed Ray made the observation recorded in the text, there have been discovered between seventy and eighty distinct varieties of butterflies (diurnal), and about as many moths, so that in this point the text is nearly correct.]

† [It is probable that our author had in view the polecat, in alluding to the defensive fœtor said to be emitted by some animals. That the creature in question does possess a power of this kind, will not, we believe, admit of a

tion of these appearances might induce us to believe that *variety* itself, distinct from every other reason, was a motive in the mind of the Creator, or with the agents of His will.

To this great variety in organised life, the Deity has given, or perhaps there arises out of it, a corresponding variety of animal *appetites*. For the final cause of this we have not far to seek. Did all animals covet the same element, retreat, or food, it is evident how much fewer could be supplied and accommodated, than what at present live conveniently together, and find a plentiful subsistence. What one nature rejects, another delights in. Food which is nauseous to one tribe of animals, becomes, by that very property which makes it nauseous, an alluring dainty to another tribe. Carrion is a treat to dogs, ravens, vultures, fish. The exhalations of corrupted substances attract flies by crowds. Maggots revel in putrefaction.*

doubt; though whether cunning or fear be the prompter to its exercise, is a point not so well ascertained. Perhaps we should not have noticed this subject, had it not been on account of an instance of a similar kind occurring among the insect tribes, to which this section is more immediately devoted. The Coleopterous family, named Carabus, presents us with one remarkable species—the bombardier, a small insect of a brownish-red colour, with the winged cases of a dark blue. The bombardier does not, or cannot fly much, but moves by a sort of jump; and when touched, it emits a noise resembling the discharge of a musket in miniature, while at the same time a blue smoke may be perceived to proceed from the extremity of its body. This vapour is of a liquid character, and if it touches the eyes, makes them smart as if with brandy. A small bladder is the source of it, and exists apparently for the purpose. When the bombardier is pursued by its great foe—a larger insect of its own class—it lies down in the path, and salutes the foe with a stunning, blinding discharge. As the creature, according to the naturalist Rolander, can repeat the discharge twenty times successively, it is evident that the provision will amply compensate to the bombardier the inefficiency of his wings.]

* [Our author's deprecatory remark, at the commencement of this chapter, that the parts of insects (as bees, beetles, &c.) cannot be so well understood as those of quadrupeds and birds, by reason of their minuteness, almost excites a smile when we think of the immense advance in knowledge which the microscope has enabled us to make since that remark was penned. Not only has it informed us of the *existence* of a new world of animals, each infinitely smaller than the tiniest organ or part of the visible insects, and far too minute to be recognised by our unaided senses, but it has also discriminated these animalcules into classes, and detected in many of them parts and organs which show them to exist under the same laws of being as the elephant and whale. One little drop of water, when examined by the aid of a powerful (solar) microscope, is found to be filled with animalcules of various sizes and shapes, and all in active motion. According to an accurate observer, one drop of water, placed on a glass slide in a solar microscope, and brought into view on a screen placed five feet from the lens, presented so many animalcules, that the head of a pencil could not be placed on one unoccupied spot, though the magnified representation of the drop covered a space twelve feet in diameter! The animalcules, thus magnified, were of all sizes, from one-sixteenth of an inch to thirteen inches. Their numbers exceeded all computation.

The smallest species of these animalcules, which have received the general name of *Infusory*, from their being found in greatest abundance in vegetable or animal infusions, are the Monads, which have the appearance of little *inorganized* points of matter, though incessantly in motion. Ehrenberg, however, has recently shown that the very smallest of the monads, the *Monas termo* (so called from its being the terminating point of visible existence), has digestive organs,

CHAPTER XX.

OF PLANTS.

I think a designed and studied mechanism to be, in general, more evident in animals than in *plants:* and it is unnecessary to dwell upon a weaker argument where a stronger is at hand. There are, however, a few observations upon the vegetable kingdom which lie so directly in our way, that it would be improper to pass by them without notice.

The one great intention of nature in the structure of plants seems to be the perfecting of the *seed;* and, what is part of the same intention, the preserving of it until it be *perfected.* This intention shows itself, in the first place, by the care which appears to be taken to protect and ripen, by every advantage which can be given to them of situation in the plant, those parts which most immediately contribute to fructification—namely, the antheræ, the stamina, and the stigmata.* These parts are usually

and is, in short, a perfectly constituted living creature. That it has contractile fibres, from which its moving power arises, there can be little doubt; for though they have not been detected in the monad, they have been distinctly observed in the Rotiferous or wheel animalcules, the most remarkable, perhaps, of the Infusory tribes. The wheel animalcule derives its name from having one, and frequently two, circular disks placed on the upper part of its body, and fringed so as to resemble a crown wheel. This wheel revolves, to appearance, continually, creating an eddy around the animal. We have said to appearance, because it is inconceivable to us how the wheel can actually revolve, and yet be a part of, or bound to, the stationary body. The whole is, therefore, it has been conjectured, an optical deception, caused by the undulatory movement of the fringes of the disk. Cork-screws, funnels, tobacco-pipes, branches of trees, egg-cups, and tulips, are but a few of the remaining forms in which these animalcules are found. Some of them, indeed, such as the proteus, do not retain one shape for two minutes together, but change from a perfectly globular to the most oddly angular form in an instant.

It is difficult, after reading a description of this kind, to bring back our thoughts to the fact, that we have been directing our attention to living creatures, myriads of which are contained in one drop of water—to them an ample world, in which they live, move, and have their being. In that drop of water they exercise the most extensive powers of locomotion, and yet never is one seen to clash against or interfere with the movements of another. The stronger prey upon the weaker, it is true, but this is the order of nature. Their mode of propagation is *fissiparous*, as it is termed—that is, by spontaneous division of their bodies. The rounded monad, for example, becomes at a certain period of its development like a sand-glass, and separates ultimately into two parts, which possess all the functions of perfect animals.

What is the conclusion to be drawn from the discovery of this microscopic world? Is it not calculated to impress us more deeply than ever with admiration of the benevolence which has made the minutest corner of creation the receptacle and scene of life and enjoyment, and of the inconceivable creative skill requisite to fashion organised bodies for circumstances so infinitely varied and dissimilar?]

* [The stamina, or stamens of plants, are thread-shaped processes, with little

lodged in the centre, the recesses, or the labyrinths of the flower; during their tender and immature state, are shut up in the stalk, or sheltered in the bud; as soon as they have acquired firmness of texture sufficient to bear exposure, and are ready to perform the important office which is assigned to them, they are disclosed to the light and air by the bursting of the stem or the expansion of the petals: after which they have, in many cases, by the very form of the flower during its blow, the light and warmth reflected upon them from the concave side of the cup. What is called also the *sleep* of plants, is the leaves or petals disposing themselves in such a manner as to shelter the young stem, buds, or fruit. They turn up, or they fall down, according as this purpose renders either change of position requisite. In the growth of corn, whenever the plant begins to shoot, the two upper leaves of the stalk join together, embrace the ear, and protect it till the pulp has acquired a certain degree of consistency. In some water-plants the flowering and fecundation are carried on *within* the stem, which afterwards opens to let loose the impregnated seed.* The *pea*, or papilionaceous tribe, enclose the parts of fructification within a beautiful folding of the internal blossom, sometimes called, from its shape, the boat or keel; itself also protected under a penthouse formed by the external petals. This structure is very artificial; and, what adds to the value of it, though it may diminish the curiosity, very general. It has also this further advantage (and it is an advantage strictly mechanical), that all the blossoms turn their *backs* to the wind, whenever the gale blows strong enough to endanger the delicate parts upon which the seed depends. I have observed this a hundred times in a field of peas in blossom. It is an aptitude which results from the figure of the flower, and, as we have said, is strictly mechanical—as much so as the turning of a weather-board or tin cap upon the top of a chimney. Of the *poppy*, and of many similar species of flowers, the head, while it is growing, hangs down, a rigid curva-

tops, generally surrounding the seed-bud, and consisting of three parts—the filament, the anther, and the pollen. The filament is that part which elevates the anther, a little bag containing the pollen, or fecundating powder. Composed as we have mentioned, the stamina constitute the male organs of the plant, and fecundation takes place by the contact of the pollen with the pistil, or female organ of the flower. The pistil consists also of three parts—the germen (germ) or rudiment of the future fruit, the style or shaft, and the stigma or opening at the top of the shaft, through which the pollen passes to the germen. With most plants these organs are united in one flower; with a few they are in separate flowers on the same plant; and in some cases, also, they are on separate plants. The pericarpium is the seed-vessel or developed seed-bud, containing the seeds after fecundation. The calyx or flower-cup is the other covering, generally of a green colour, which encloses the parts of fructification, and the corolla or blossom of the flower. To the leaves of the corolla or blossom the term petals is applied.

The occurrence of these terms in this chapter seemed to render some explanation of this kind necessary.]

* Philos. Transact. part ii. 1796; p. 502.

ture in the upper part of the stem giving to it that position; and in that position it is impenetrable by rain or moisture. When the head has acquired its size, and is ready to open, the stalk *erects* itself, for the purpose, as it should seem, of presenting the flower, and with the flower the instruments of fructification, to the genial influence of the sun's rays. This always struck me as a curious property; and specifically, as well as originally provided for in the constitution of the plant; for if the stem be only bent by the weight of the head, how comes it to straighten itself when the head is the heaviest? These instances show the attention of nature to this principal object—the safety and maturation of the parts upon which the seed depends.

In *trees*, especially in those which are natives of colder climates, this point is taken up earlier. Many of these trees (observe, in particular, the *ash* and the *horse-chestnut*) produce the embryos of the leaves and flowers in one year, and bring them to perfection the following. There is a winter, therefore, to be gotten over. Now what we are to remark is, how nature has prepared for the trials and severities of that season. These tender embryos are, in the first place, wrapped up with a compactness which no art can imitate; in which state they compose what we call the bud. This is not all. The bud itself is enclosed in scales; which scales are formed from the remains of past leaves and the rudiments of future ones. Neither is this the whole. In the coldest climates a third preservative is added, by the bud having a *coat* of gum or resin, which, being congealed, resists the strongest frosts. On the approach of warm weather, this gum is softened, and ceases to be a hindrance to the expansion of the leaves and flowers. All this care is part of that system of provisions which has for its object and consummation the production and perfecting of the seeds.

The *seeds* themselves are packed up in a *capsule*, a vessel composed of coats, which, compared with the rest of the flower, are strong and tough. From this vessel projects a tube, through which tube the farina, or some subtile fecundating effluvium that issues from it, is admitted to the seed. And here also occurs a mechanical variety, accommodated to the different circumstances under which the same purpose is to be accomplished. In flowers which are erect, the pistil is shorter than the stamina; and the pollen, shed from the antheræ into the cup of the flower, is caught in its descent by the head of the pistil, called the stigma. But how is this managed when the flowers hang down (as does the crown imperial, for instance), and in which position the farina, in its fall, would be carried from the stigma, and not towards it? The relative length of the parts is now inverted. The pistil in these flowers is usually longer instead of shorter than the stamina, that its protruding summit may receive the pollen as it drops to the ground. In some cases (as in the *nigella*), where the shafts of

the pistils or styles are disproportionably long, they bend down their extremities upon the antheræ, that the necessary approximation may be effected.

But (to pursue this great work in its progress) the impregnation, to which all this machinery relates, being completed, the other parts of the flower fade and drop off, whilst the *gravid seed-vessel*, on the contrary, proceeds to increase its bulk, always to a great, and in some species (in the gourd, for example, and melon) to a surprising comparative size; assuming in different plants an incalculable variety of forms, but all evidently conducing to the security of the seed. By virtue of this process, so necessary, but so diversified, we have the seed at length, in stone-fruits and nuts, encased in a strong shell, the shell itself enclosed in a pulp or husk, by which the seed within is, or hath been, fed; or, more generally (as in grapes, oranges, and the numerous kinds of berries), plunged overhead in a glutinous sirup, contained within a skin or bladder; at other times (as in apples and pears) imbedded in the heart of a firm fleshy substance; or (as in strawberries) pricked into the surface of a soft pulp.

These and many more varieties exist in what we call *fruits*.* In pulse, and grain, and grasses—in trees, and shrubs, and flowers—the variety of the seed-vessels is incomputable. We have the seeds (as in the pea tribe) regularly disposed in parchment pods, which, though soft and membranous, completely exclude the wet even in the heaviest rains; the pod, also, not seldom (as in the bean) lined with a fine down; at other times (as in the senna)

* From the conformation of fruits alone, one might be led, even without experience, to suppose that part of this provision was destined for the utilities of animals. As limited to the plant, the provision itself seems to go beyond its object. The flesh of an apple, the pulp of an orange, the meat of a plum, the fatness of the olive, appear to be *more* than sufficient for the nourishing of the seed or kernel. The event shows that this redundancy, if it be one, ministers to the support and gratification of animal natures; and when we observe a provision to be more than sufficient for one purpose, yet wanted for another purpose, it is not unfair to conclude that both purposes were contemplated together. It favours this view of the subject to remark, that fruits are not (which they might have been) ready altogether, but that they ripen in succession throughout a great part of the year—some in summer, some in autumn; that some require the slow maturation of the winter and supply the spring; also that the coldest fruits grow in the hottest places. Cucumbers, pine-apples, melons, are the natural produce of warm climates, and contribute greatly, by their coolness, to the refreshment of the inhabitants of those countries.

I will add to this note the following observation communicated to me by Mr Brinkley:—'The eatable part of the cherry or peach first serves the purposes of perfecting the seed or kernel, by means of vessels passing through the stone, and which are very visible in a peach stone. After the kernel is perfected, the stone becomes hard, and the vessels cease their functions. But the substance surrounding the stone is not then thrown away as useless. That which was before only an instrument for perfecting the kernel, now receives and retains to itself the whole of the sun's influence, and thereby becomes a grateful food to man. Also, what an evident mark of design is the stone protecting the kernel! The intervention of the stone prevents the second use from interfering with the first.'

distended like a brown bladder; or we have the seed enveloped in wool (as in the cotton plant), lodged (as in pines) between the hard and compact scales of a cone, or barricadoed (as in the artichoke and thistle) with spikes and prickles; in mushrooms, placed under a penthouse; in ferns, within slits in the back part of the leaf: or (which is the most general organisation of all) we find them covered by strong, close tunicles, and attached to the stem according to an order appropriated to each plant, as is seen in the several kinds of grains and of grasses.

In which enumeration, what we have first to notice is, unity of purpose under variety of expedients. Nothing can be more *single* than the design; more *diversified* than the means. Pellicles, shells, pulps, pods, husks, skin, scales armed with thorns, are all employed in prosecuting the same intention. Secondly, we may observe that in all these cases the purpose is fulfilled within a just and *limited* degree. We can perceive that if the seeds of plants were more strongly guarded than they are, their greater security would interfere with other uses. Many species of animals would suffer, and many perish, if they could not obtain access to them. The plant would overrun the soil, or the seed be wasted for want of room to sow itself. It is sometimes as necessary to destroy particular species of plants as it is at other times to encourage their growth. Here, as in many cases, a balance is to be maintained between opposite uses. The provisions for the preservation of seeds appear to be directed chiefly against the inconstancy of the elements, or the sweeping destruction of inclement seasons. The depredations of animals, and the injuries of accidental violence, are allowed for in the abundance of the increase. The result is, that out of the many thousand different plants which cover the earth, not a single species, perhaps, has been lost since the creation.*

When nature has perfected her seeds, her next care is to disperse them. The seed cannot answer its purpose while it remains confined in the capsule. After the seeds, therefore, are ripened, the pericarpium opens to let them out; and the opening is not like an accidental bursting, but for the most part is according to a certain rule in each plant. What I have always thought very extraordinary, nuts and shells, which we can hardly crack with our teeth, divide and make way for the little tender sprout which proceeds from the kernel. Handling the nut, I could hardly conceive how the plantule was ever to get out of it. There are cases, it is said, in which the seed-vessel, by an elastic jerk at the moment of its explosion, casts the seeds to a distance. We

* [Admitting, as geologists have proved, the extinction of numerous species both of animals and plants, the operation of extrinsic causes is quite sufficient to account for the fact, without any reference to impaired fecundity in the extirpated race, or to defective structural provisions for perpetuation.]

all, however, know that many seeds (those of most composite flowers, as of the thistle, dandelion, &c.) are endowed with what are not improperly called *wings*—that is, downy appendages, by which they are enabled to float in the air, and are carried oftentimes by the wind to great distances from the plant which produces them. It is the swelling also of this downy tuft within the seed-vessel that seems to overcome the resistance of its coats, and to open a passage for the seed to escape.*

But the *constitution* of seeds is still more admirable than either their preservation or their dispersion. In the body of the seed of every species of plant, or nearly of every one, provision is made for two grand purposes: first, for the safety of the *germ;* secondly, for the temporary support of the future plant. The sprout, as folded up in the seed, is delicate and brittle beyond any other substance. Yet cannot be touched without being broken. Yet in beans, peas, grass-seeds, grain, fruits, it is so fenced on all sides, so shut up and protected, that whilst the seed itself is rudely handled, tossed into sacks, shovelled into heaps, the sacred particle, the miniature plant, remains unhurt. It is wonderful, also, how long many kinds of seeds, by the help of their integuments, and perhaps of their oils, stand out against decay. A grain of mustard-seed has been known to lie in the earth for a hundred years; and as soon as it had acquired a favourable situation, to shoot as vigorously as if just gathered from the plant. Then as to the second point—the temporary support of the future plant—the matter stands thus: In grain, and pulse, and kernels, and pippins, the germ composes a very small part of the seed. The rest consists of a nutritious substance, from which the sprout draws its aliment for some considerable time after it is put forth—namely, until the fibres, shot out from the other end of the seed, are able to imbibe juices from the earth in a sufficient

* [In the very form of most fruits, we perceive an evident adaptation to the purpose of dispersing the seeds contained in them. Were the fruits of the apple, the orange, the peach, or the cherry, of an angular instead of a rounded shape, on falling from the tree in their ripe season, they would lie where they fell—immediately below the tree which bore them. The consequence would be, that if they took root in the earth, and became plants, their position below the parent tree would be detrimental to their growth, and might even kill them altogether, from the deprivation of light and heat. The rounded form which the generality of fruits possess prevents such a result, by causing them to roll along the ground, with the impulse of the fall, aided frequently by the wind, till they reach such a distance from the parent tree as gives them free scope for future growth and luxuriance.

This provision, unimportant as it may seem at first sight, assumes immense consequence when we consider that to it may be owing the spread of the vast forests which still exist on the globe, as well as those of primeval growth. Had not the primeval trees been possessed of such facilities for multiplication—had the fir-cone, for example, been so formed as to stick into the ground where it fell—it is far from improbable that the earth would now have been deficient in those rich beds of fuel which are the relics of former forests. How inconceivably grand, in this point of view, are the consequences dependent on so seemingly trifling a matter as the shape of a useless fruit!]

quantity for its demand. It is owing to this constitution that we see seeds sprout, and the sprouts make a considerable progress without any earth at all. It is an economy, also, in which we remark a close analogy between the seeds of plants and the eggs of animals. The same point is provided for in the same manner in both. In the egg, the residence of the living principle, the cicatrix forms a very minute part of the contents. The white, and the white only, is expended in the formation of the chicken. The yoke, very little altered or diminished, is wrapped up in the abdomen of the young bird when it quits the shell, and serves for its nourishment, till it have learned to pick its own food. This perfectly resembles the first nutrition of a plant. In the plant, as well as in the animal, the structure has every character of contrivance belonging to it: in both it breaks the transition from prepared to unprepared aliment; in both it is prospective and compensatory. In animals which suck, this intermediate nourishment is supplied by a different source.

In all subjects, the most common observations are the best, when it is their truth and strength which have made them common. There are, of this sort, *two* concerning plants, which it falls within our plan to notice. The *first* relates to what has already been touched upon—their germination. When a grain of corn is cast into the ground, this is the change which takes place: From one end of the grain issues a green sprout; from the other a number of white fibrous threads. How can this be explained? Why not sprouts from both ends? Why not fibrous threads from both ends? To what is the difference to be referred but to design—to the different uses which the parts are thereafter to serve; uses which discover themselves in the sequel of the process? The sprout or plumule struggles into the air, and becomes the plant, of which, from the first, it contained the rudiments; the fibres shoot into the earth, and thereby both fix the plant to the ground and collect nourishment from the soil for its support. Now, what is not a little remarkable, the parts issuing from the seed take their respective directions, into whatever position the seed itself happens to be cast. If the seed be thrown into the worst possible position—that is, if the ends point in the ground the reverse of what they ought to do—everything, nevertheless, goes on right. The sprout, after being pushed down a little way, makes a bend, and turns upwards; the fibres, on the contrary, after shooting at first upwards, turn down. Of this extraordinary vegetable fact, an account has lately been attempted to be given: 'The plumule (it is said) is stimulated by the *air* into action, and elongates itself when it is thus most excited; the radicle is stimulated by *moisture*, and elongates itself when *it* is thus most excited.* Whence one of these grows upward in quest

* [The plumule is the trunk of the future plant in miniature, and received

of its adapted object, and the other downward.'* Were this account better verified by experiment than it is, it only shifts the contrivance. It does not disprove the contrivance; it only removes it a little farther back. Who, to use our author's own language, '*adapted* the objects?' Who gave such a quality to these connate parts as to be susceptible of *different* 'stimulation;' as to be 'excited' each only by its own element, and precisely by that which the success of the vegetation requires? I say, 'which the success of the vegetation requires:' for the toil of the husbandman would have been in vain—his laborious and expensive preparation of the ground in vain—if the event must, after all, depend upon the position in which the scattered seed was sown. Not one seed out of a hundred would fall in a right direction.

Our *second* observation is upon a general property of climbing plants, which is strictly mechanical. In these plants, from each knot or joint, or, as botanists call it, axilla of the plant, issue, close to each other, two shoots—one bearing the flower and fruit; the other, drawn out into a wire, a long, tapering, spiral tendril, that twists itself round anything which lies within its reach. Considering that in this class two purposes are to be provided for (and together)—fructification and support, the fruitage of the plant and the sustentation of the stalk—what means could be used more effectual, or, as I have said, more mechanical, than what this structure presents to our eyes? Why, or how, without a view to this double purpose, do two shoots, of such different and appropriate forms, spring from the same joint, from contiguous points of the same stalk? It never happens thus in robust plants or in trees. 'We see not (says Ray) so much as one tree, or shrub, or herb that hath a firm and strong stem, and that is able to mount up and stand alone without assistance, *furnished with these tendrils.*' Make only so simple a comparison as that between a pea and a bean. Why does the pea put forth tendrils, the bean not? —but because the stalk of the pea cannot support itself, the stalk of the bean can. We may add also a circumstance not to be overlooked, that in the pea tribe these clasps do not make their appearance till they are wanted—till the plant has grown to a height to stand in need of support.

This word 'support' suggests to us a reflection upon a property of grasses, of corn, and canes. The hollow stems of these classes of plants are set, at certain intervals, with joints. These joints are not found in the trunks of trees, or in the solid stalks of plants. There may be other uses of these joints; but the fact

that name from its consisting in most plants of a stalk and leaves, like a little *plume* or feather; the radicle is the miniature germ of the root. The vessels of these parts, and the image which they present of the full-grown plant, may be seen advantageously in the bean, with the aid of the microscope.]

* Darwin's Phytologia, p. 144.

is, and it appears to be at least one purpose designed by them, that they *corroborate* the stem; which, by its length and hollowness, would otherwise be too liable to break or bend.

Grasses are Nature's care. With these she clothes the earth; with these she sustains its inhabitants. Cattle feed upon their leaves; birds upon their smaller seeds; men upon the larger; for few readers need be told that the plants which produce our bread-corn belong to this class. In those tribes which are more generally considered as grasses, their extraordinary means and powers of preservation and increase, their hardiness, their almost unconquerable disposition to spread, their faculties of revivescence, coincide with the intention of Nature concerning them. They thrive under a treatment by which other plants are destroyed. The more their leaves are consumed, the more their roots increase: the more they are trampled upon, the thicker they grow. Many of the seemingly dry and dead leaves of grasses revive, and renew their verdure in the spring. In lofty mountains, where the summer heats are not sufficient to ripen the seeds, grasses abound, which are viviparous, and consequently able to propagate themselves without seed. It is an observation, likewise, which has often been made, that herbivorous animals attach themselves to the leaves of grasses; and, if at liberty in their pastures to range and choose, leave untouched the straws which support the flowers.*

The *general* properties of vegetable nature, or properties common to large portions of that kingdom, are almost all which the compass of our argument allows to bring forward. It is impossible to follow plants into their several species. We may be allowed, however, to single out three or four of these species as worthy of a particular notice, either by some singular mechanism, or by some peculiar provision, or by both.

I. In Dr Darwin's *Botanic Garden* (i. 395, note) is the following account of the *vallisneria*, as it has been observed in the river Rhone:—'They have roots at the bottom of the Rhone. The flowers of the *female plant* float on the surface of the water, and are furnished with an *elastic spiral stalk*, which extends or contracts as the water rises or falls; this rise or fall, from the torrents which flow into the river, often amounting to many feet in a few hours. The flowers of the *male plant* are produced under water; and as soon as the fecundating farina is mature, they separate themselves from the plant, rise to the surface, and are wafted by the air, or borne by the currents, to the female flowers.' Our attention in this narrative will be directed to two particulars: first, to the mechanism, the 'elastic spiral stalk,' which lengthens or contracts itself according as the water rises or falls;

* Withering, Bot. Arr. vol. i. p. 28, ed. 2d.

secondly, to the provision which is made for bringing the male flower which is produced *under* water, to the female flower which floats upon the surface.

II. My second example I take from Withering's *Arrangement* (vol. ii. p. 209, ed. third):—'The *Cuscuta Europæa* is a parasitical plant. The seed opens, and puts forth a *little spiral body*, which does NOT seek the earth to take root, but *climbs* in a spiral direction, from right to left, up other plants, from which, by means of vessels, it draws its nourishment.' The 'little spiral body' proceeding from the seed, is to be compared with the fibres which seeds send out in ordinary cases; and the comparison ought to regard both the form of the threads and the direction. They are straight; this is spiral. They shoot downwards; this points upwards. In the rule, and in the exception, we equally perceive design.

III. A better known parasitical plant is the evergreen shrub called the *mistletoe*. What we have to remark in it is a singular instance of *compensation*. No art hath yet made these plants take root in the earth. Here, therefore, might seem to be a mortal defect in their constitution. Let us examine how this defect is made up to them. The seeds are endued with an adhesive quality so tenacious, that if they be rubbed upon the smooth bark of almost any tree, they will stick to it. And then what follows? Roots springing from these seeds insinuate their fibres into the woody substance of the tree; and the event is, that a mistletoe plant is produced next winter. Of no other plant do the roots refuse to shoot in the ground; of no other plant do the seeds possess this adhesive, generative quality when applied to the bark of trees.

IV. Another instance of the *compensatory* system is in the autumnal crocus, or meadow saffron (*Colchicum autumnale*). I have pitied this poor plant a thousand times. Its blossom rises out of the ground in the most forlorn condition possible; without a sheath, a fence, a calyx, or even a leaf to protect it; and that not in the spring, not to be visited by summer suns, but under all the disadvantages of the declining year. When we come, however, to look more closely into the structure of this plant, we find that, instead of its being neglected, Nature has gone out of her course to provide for its security, and to make up to it for all its defects. The seed-vessel, which in other plants is situated within the cup of the flower, or just beneath it, in this plant lies buried ten or twelve inches under ground within the bulbous root. The tube of the flower, which is seldom more than a few tenths of an inch long, in this plant extends down to the root. The styles in all cases reach the seed-vessel; but it is in this by an elongation unknown to any other plant. All these singularities contribute to one end. 'As this plant blossoms late in the year, and pro-

bably would not have time to ripen its seeds before the access of winter, which would destroy them, Providence has contrived its structure such, that this important office may be performed at a depth in the earth out of reach of the usual effects of frost.' (*Withering.*) That is to say, in the autumn nothing is done above ground but the business of impregnation; which is an affair between the antheræ and the stigmata, and is probably soon over. The maturation of the impregnated seed, which in other plants proceeds within a capsule, exposed, together with the rest of the flower, to the open air, is here carried on, and during the whole winter, within the heart, as we may say, of the earth—that is, 'out of the reach of the usual effects of frost.' But then a new difficulty presents itself. Seeds, though perfected, are known not to vegetate at this depth in the earth. Our seeds, therefore, though so safely lodged, would, after all, be lost to the purpose for which all seeds are intended. Lest this should be the case, 'a second admirable provision is made to raise them above the surface when they are perfected, and to sow them at a proper distance'—namely, the germ grows up *in the spring*, upon a fruit-stalk, accompanied with leaves. The seeds now, in common with those of other plants, have the benefit of the summer, and are sown upon the surface. The order of vegetation externally is this: the plant produces its flowers in September, its leaves and fruits in the spring following.

V. I give the account of the *Dionæa muscipula*, an extraordinary American plant, as some late authors have related it; but whether we be yet enough acquainted with the plant to bring every part of this account to the test of repeated and familiar observation, I am unable to say. 'Its leaves are jointed, and furnished with two rows of strong prickles; their surfaces covered with a number of minute glands, which secrete a sweet liquor that allures the approach of flies. When these parts are touched by the legs of flies, the two lobes of the leaf instantly spring up, the rows of prickles lock themselves fast together, and squeeze the unwary animal to death.'* Here, under a new model, we recognise the ancient plan of nature—namely, the relation of parts and provisions to one another, to a common office, and to the utility of the organised body to which they belong. The attracting sirup, the rows of strong prickles, their position so as to interlock the joints of the leaves, and, what is more than the rest, that singular irritability of their surfaces, by which they close at a touch—all bear a contributory part in producing an effect connected either with the defence or with the nutrition of the plant.

* Smellie's Phil. of Nat. Hist. vol. i. p. 5.

CHAPTER XXI.

THE ELEMENTS.*

When we come to the Elements, we take leave of our mechanics; because we come to those things of the organisation of which, if they be organised, we are confessedly ignorant. This ignorance is implied by their name. To say the truth, our investigations are stopped long before we arrive at this point. But then it is for our comfort to find that a knowledge of the constitution of the elements is not necessary for us. For instance, as Addison has well observed, 'we know *water* sufficiently when we know how to boil, how to freeze, how to evaporate, how to make it fresh, how to make it run or spout out in what quantity and direction we please, without knowing what water is.' The observation of this excellent writer has more propriety in it now than it had at the time it was made; for the constitution, and the constituent parts of water, appear in some measure to have been lately discovered; yet it does not, I think, appear that we can make any better or greater use of water since the discovery than we did before it.

We can never think of the elements, without reflecting upon the number of distinct uses which are *consolidated* in the same substance. The *air* supplies the lungs, supports fire, conveys sound, reflects light, diffuses smells, gives rain, wafts ships, bears up birds. Ἐξ ὕδατος τα παντα: [From water are all things]: *water*, besides maintaining its own inhabitants, is the universal nourisher of plants, and through them of terrestrial animals; is the basis of their juices and fluids; dilutes their food; quenches their thirst; floats their burdens. *Fire* warms, dissolves, enlightens; is the great promoter of vegetation and life, if not necessary to the support of both.

* [Men of science at the present day apply the term 'elements' only to such substances as have hitherto resisted all attempts to decompose them, or resolve them into other substances differing in character. These indecomposable substances are therefore termed simple or *elementary*. The whole matter of the globe, as far as man can carry his investigations into it, is formed out of fifty-five elements, some of which, in their simple state, are gaseous in form, others fluid, and others solid, at the medium temperature of our globe. Generally, however, the elements are not found in nature in an isolated condition, but in innumerable combinations with each other, forming new bodies with properties altogether different from those of the constituent simples. These new bodies are termed compounds, from their consisting of two or more ingredients; and hence the distinction of all known substances into elementary and compound. It is inconceivable how much simplification has followed the adoption of these terms. Without such changes, however, as would scarcely be justifiable, the misapplication of terms in the text could not be rectified.]

We might enlarge, to almost any length we pleased, upon each of these uses; but it appears to me almost sufficient to state them. The few remarks which I judge it necessary to add are as follow:—

I. *Air* is essentially different from earth. There appears to be no necessity for an atmosphere investing our globe; yet it does invest it; and we see how many, how various, and how important are the purposes which it answers to every order of animated, not to say of organised beings, which are placed upon the terrestrial surface. I think that every one of these uses will be understood upon the first mention of them, except it be that of *reflecting* light, which may be explained thus: If I had the power of seeing only by means of rays coming directly from the sun, whenever I turned my back upon the luminary, I should find myself in darkness. If I had the power of seeing by reflected light, yet by means only of light reflected from solid masses, these masses would shine indeed, and glisten, but it would be in the dark. The hemisphere, the sky, the world, could only be *illuminated*, as it is illuminated, by the light of the sun being from all sides, and in every direction, reflected to the eye by particles, as numerous, as thickly scattered, and as widely diffused, as are those of the air.

Another general quality of the atmosphere is the power of evaporating fluids. The adjustment of this quality to our use is seen in its action upon the sea. In the sea, water and salt are mixed together most intimately; yet the atmosphere raises the water and leaves the salt. Pure and fresh as drops of rain descend, they are collected from brine. If evaporation be solution (which seems to be probable), then the air dissolves the water, and not the salt. Upon whatever it be founded, the distinction is critical; so much so, that when we attempt to imitate the process by art, we must regulate our distillation with great care and nicety, or, together with the water, we get the bitterness, or at least the distastefulness, of the marine substance; and, after all, it is owing to this original elective power in the air that we can effect the separation which we wish by any art or means whatever.

By evaporation, water is carried up into the air; by the converse of evaporation, it falls down upon the earth. And how does it fall? Not by the clouds being all at once reconverted into water, and descending like a sheet; not in rushing down in columns from a spout; but in moderate drops, as from a colander. Our watering-pots are made to imitate showers of rain. Yet, *à priori*, I should have thought either of the two former methods more likely to have taken place than the last.

By respiration, flame, putrefaction, air is rendered unfit for the support of animal life. By the constant operation of these cor-

rupting principles, the whole atmosphere, if there were no restoring causes, would come at length to be deprived of its necessary degree of purity. Some of these causes seem to have been discovered, and their efficacy ascertained, by experiment. And so far as the discovery has proceeded, it opens to us a beautiful and a wonderful economy. *Vegetation* proves to be one of them. A sprig of mint, corked up with a small portion of foul air placed in the light, renders it again capable of supporting life or flame. Here, therefore, is a constant circulation of benefits maintained between the two great provinces of organised nature. The plant purifies what the animal has poisoned; in return, the contaminated air is more than ordinarily nutritious to the plant.* *Agitation with water* turns out to be another of these restoratives. The foulest air, shaken in a bottle with water for a sufficient length of time, recovers a great degree of its purity. Here, then, again, allowing for the scale upon which nature works, we see the salutary effects of *storms* and *tempests*. The yeasty waves which confound the heaven and the sea, are doing the very thing which was done in the bottle. Nothing can be of greater importance to the living creation than the salubrity of their atmosphere. It ought to reconcile us, therefore, to those agitations of the elements of which we sometimes deplore the consequences, to know that they tend powerfully to restore to the air that purity which so many causes are constantly impairing.

II. In water, what ought not a little to be admired, are those negative qualities which constitute its *purity*. Had it been vinous, or oleaginous, or acid; had the sea been filled, or the rivers flowed, with wine or milk—fish, constituted as they are, must have died; plants, constituted as they are, would have withered; the lives of animals which feed upon plants must have perished. Its very *insipidity*, which is one of those negative qualities, renders it the

* [This point is worthy of further illustration. The two living kingdoms, animal and vegetable, fill each of them so important and extensive a place in nature, that it is plainly of the utmost consequence that the arrangements which maintain the existence of the one should not clash and interfere with those which provide for the continuance of the other. Now not only do we find this effected, but, by a most wonderful adaptation, the one is rendered even essential to the other. Oxygen, as was formerly explained, is the elementary principle upon which animal life may be said to depend. Carbon, on the contrary, is a principle noxious to animal bodies, and their existence would terminate, did they not give it off incessantly as it collects in them. To vegetable life, however, this very principle is absolutely indispensable: carbon is the chief nutriment of plants, and they retain it, giving out at the same time the oxygen with which it is connected when absorbed by them from the atmosphere. Thus, by this difference in their nutriment, we have a continual round of mutual benefit conferred by the animal and vegetable worlds on each other—animal bodies giving out the carbon necessary to plants, though noxious to themselves, and plants in their turn paying back the gift by a perpetual supply of the oxygen on which animal life depends. The extent of this reciprocal benefit may be conceived from the fact, that in twenty-four hours, 40,000 cubic inches of carbonic acid gas are given off by the lungs of a man. Forty thousand inches of gas contain *two-thirds* of a pound of carbon or charcoal.]

best of all menstrua. Having no taste of its own, it becomes the sincere vehicle of every other. Had there been a taste in water, be it what it might, it would have infected everything we ate or drank with an importunate repetition of the same flavour.

Another thing in this element not less to be admired, is the constant *round* which it travels; and by which, without suffering either adulteration or waste, it is continually offering itself to the wants of the habitable globe. From the sea are exhaled those vapours which form the clouds; these clouds descend in showers, which, penetrating into the crevices of the hills, supply springs; which springs flow in little streams into the valleys; and there uniting, become rivers; which rivers, in return, feed the ocean. So there is an incessant circulation of the same fluid; and not one drop probably more or less now than there was at the creation. A particle of water takes its departure from the surface of the sea, in order to fulfil certain important offices to the earth; and having executed the service which was assigned to it, returns to the bosom which it left.

[There are other considerations relative to this subject which are well worthy of attention. It must be obvious, for example, that in those quarters of the globe where the atmosphere is at a high temperature, aqueous vapours will have a tendency to rise and accumulate in greater quantities than in regions where the atmosphere is cold.* Thus we have the largest amount of vapours in the very situation where they are most required for the purposes of animal and vegetable life. Without their abundant rains, the countries which lie under the tropics would be incapable of supporting either animal or plant. These rains, it is true, do not fall in the same slow and equalised manner as the rains of more temperate latitudes. But the rapidity of their fall, so far from being an evil, is in reality essential to their utility. An equatorial sun would reconvert a moderate shower to vapour ere it had time to operate the slightest benefit on the soil. With the heavy rains, and the inundations which are chiefly owing to them, this renewed vaporisation, happily, cannot be effected.

When it is considered, moreover, that for a great portion of the year a vast quantity of aqueous vapours float in an uncondensed state in the atmosphere of tropical countries, it becomes evident that they must be of essential service in temperating the ardour of the sun's rays. The retention of these vapours in tropical atmospheres, therefore, for so long a time previous to their fall, must be regarded, in this point of view also, as a beneficent adaptation of natural laws to circumstances.]

* [Mr Dalton calculated that the quantity of rain which falls in England annually is thirty-six inches. From observations made in tropical climates, it appears that the yearly fall there amounts to one hundred and twenty-six inches.]

Some have thought that we have too much water upon the globe, the sea occupying above three-quarters of its whole surface. But the expanse of ocean, immense as it is, may be no more than sufficient to fertilise the earth. Or, independently of this reason, I know not why the sea may not have as good a right to its place as the land. It may proportionably support as many inhabitants; minister to as large an aggregate of enjoyment. The land only affords a habitable surface; the sea is habitable to a great depth.

[The extent of the ocean influences the land in many other respects of importance, besides affording it a perpetual supply of moisture. 'The ocean (says an able geologist) has a tendency to preserve everywhere a mean temperature, which it communicates to the contiguous land, so that it tempers the climate, moderating alike an excess of heat and cold.' Thus we find that those ranges of land which have a large body of water intervening between them and the polar regions, enjoy a less rigorous climate than lands under the same degree of latitude which have narrower belts of intervening seas; while, on the other hand, regions which have waters between them and the equator have the vertical heat of the sun softened by the interposition. Satisfactory explanations can be given of these phenomena; in the latter case, for example, it may be stated, as one reason why the sea should be a bad transmitter of the equatorial heat, that the rays which fall upon its surface are expended in vaporising a portion of the water, whereas land is a good conductor, by absorbing and radiating it. It is enough, however, for the present purpose, that the fact of this aqueous influence should be merely stated, as it affords one reason for the extensive intermixture of ocean with land on the surface of the globe.]

III. Of fire, we have said that it *dissolves*. The only idea, probably, which this term raised in the reader's mind was that of fire melting metals, resins, and some other substances, fluxing ores, running glass, and assisting us in many of our operations, chemical or culinary. Now these are only uses of an occasional kind, and give us a very imperfect notion of what fire does for us. The grand importance of this dissolving power, the great office, indeed, of fire in the economy of nature, is keeping things in a state of solution—that is to say, in a state of fluidity. Were it not for the presence of heat, or of a certain degree of it, all fluids would be frozen. The ocean itself would be a quarry of ice; universal nature stiff and dead.

We see, therefore, that the elements bear not only a strict relation to the constitution of organised bodies, but a relation to each other. Water could not perform its office to the earth without air, nor exist, as water, without fire.

IV. Of light (whether we regard it as of the same substance with fire, or as a different substance) it is altogether superfluous to

expatiate upon the use. No man disputes it. The observations, therefore, which I shall offer, respect that little which we seem to know of its constitution.

Light travels from the sun at the rate of twelve millions of miles in a minute. Urged by such a velocity, with what *force* must its particles drive against (I will not say the eye, the tenderest of animal substances, but) every substance, animate or inanimate, which stands in its way! It might seem to be a force sufficient to shatter to atoms the hardest bodies.

How, then, is this effect, the consequence of such prodigious velocity, guarded against? By a proportionable *minuteness* of the particles of which light is composed.* It is impossible for the human mind to imagine to itself anything so small as a particle of light. But this extreme exility, though difficult to conceive, it is easy to prove. A drop of tallow expended in the wick of a farthing candle, shall send forth rays sufficient to fill a hemisphere of a mile diameter; and to fill it so full of these rays, that an aperture not larger than the pupil of an eye, wherever it be placed within the hemisphere, shall be sure to receive some of them. What floods of light are continually poured from the sun we cannot estimate; but the immensity of the sphere which is filled with its particles, even if it reached no farther than the orbit of the earth we can in some sort compute: and we have reason to believe that throughout this whole region the particles of light lie, in latitude at least, near to one another. The spissitude of the sun's rays at the earth is such, that the number which falls upon a burning-glass of an inch diameter is sufficient, when concentrated, to set wood on fire.

The tenuity and the velocity of particles of light, as ascertained by separate observations, may be said to be proportioned to each other; both surpassing our utmost stretch of comprehension; but

* [Light, according to the opinion of many distinguished philosophers, is not a *body* consisting of minute luminous particles, as our author believed it to be, but simply an *effect* resulting from the propagation of vibrations through a highly subtile and elastic ether. In the present imperfect state of our knowledge on this subject, it would be injurious to the cause of natural religion to attempt to deduce any arguments in its support from either of these theories, as it seems extremely likely that the progress of our acquaintance with the nature of light may give rise to entirely new views, and consequently render such arguments worse than useless. We allude here more particularly to that mysterious chain, of which only a link here and there is yet seen, which seems to bind together all the most important powers or principles with which man is acquainted—namely, electricity, heat, light, galvanism, magnetism, and, though last, not of least importance, the vital or nervous energy. As regards the first of these principles, and the last, in especial, the dawn of a glorious day is glimmering on the paths of human knowledge, and there can be little doubt that the other principles in question will be also brought more clearly into view when that day attains its noontide splendour. It is possible that these anticipated discoveries may, for a time, engender darkness and doubt; but those who fear that the elucidation of truth can ultimately injure any good cause, hold opinions altogether at variance with reason and experience, and most degrading to truth's divine and immaculate Fount.]

proportioned. And it is this proportion alone which converts a tremendous element into a welcome visitor.

It has been observed to me by a learned friend, as having often struck his mind, that if light had been made by a common artist, it would have been of one uniform *colour;* whereas, by its present composition, we have that variety of colours which is of such infinite use to us for the distinguishing of objects; which adds so much to the beauty of the earth, and augments the stock of our innocent pleasures.

With which may be joined another reflection—namely, that, considering light as compounded of rays of seven different colours (of which there can be no doubt, because it can be resolved into these rays by simply passing it through a prism), the constituent parts must be well mixed and blended together, to produce a fluid as clear and colourless as a beam of light is when received from the sun.*

[In considering the general aspect of the globe, one of the first and most striking circumstances which attract the attention of the inquirer, is the existence of great undulations and inequalities in its surface. From the observation of this fact, the question naturally arises—Is this diversity of character, this alternation of mountain and vale, of ridge and plain, calculated to render the earth a fitter habitation for man, and the myriads of animal and vegetable existences associated with him in position? This question has already, in some measure, been answered, in describing the utility of the ocean in fertilising the land. Without extensive irregularities of surface, such as those which actually exist, it is impossible to conceive how that perpetual circulation of liquids could go on which is essential to the very maintenance of all organic life, whether animal or vegetable. The sun might still raise vapours in abundance from the surface of the deep, and they might be condensed in the atmosphere, and fall in showers on the surface of the land; but that surface, being smooth and level, would present no channel whereby these waters might be recon-

* [The geological remarks that follow at this part of the text have been introduced here as bearing more relation to the subject-matter of this chapter than to that of any other. By the word 'Elements,' Paley understands external nature generally; and it is probable that he himself would have referred at this point to the structure of the earth, had the science of geology been far enough advanced in his day to afford any satisfactory basis for drawing conclusions favourable to his theme.

In these remarks in the text, it is assumed, in accordance with the opinions of the most eminent modern geologists, that the earth is of great antiquity. If the forces that have moulded the earth's surface into its present form are *now* acting with the same degree of intensity as they have formerly done, and there is every reason to believe this to be the case, then the earth must be regarded as immensely old. One of the most striking arguments in favour of this position is afforded by the absence of all traces of man's existence at the time of these early changes, though both animals and vegetables of certain classes were beyond doubt abundant. This single fact goes far of itself to *prove* the earth to have existed at a period long antecedent to the creation of man.]

ducted to the sea; and the result of such a state of things, as far as we can form any idea of it, would be one universal stagnant marsh over the planetary surface. To man, and the greater part at least of the creatures now existing on it, the earth, in such circumstances, would be a most unfit dwelling-place; and the reduction of its surface, therefore, to its present form before their introduction into it, may justly be held as a proof of benevolent foresight and design.

These latter words imply that the surface of the globe has undergone changes. This is undeniably the case; and the consideration of this point carries us from the observation of the mere shape of the earth's surface, to the examination of the substances composing the planetary crust, as far as it is laid open to us in chasms, cliffs, and mountainous ravines, or in mines excavated by man's hands. In the structure and arrangement of these substances, or masses of matter—and both structure and arrangement are infinitely varied—we are able to trace the signs of a great succession of changes, and even to discover the agents which have effected them. These agents are Fire and Water: to the action of these for a long period of time upon it, the crust of the globe owes its existing form and disposition. Into a detailed account of the operation of these agencies it would be out of place to enter here: we hope only to show, in the remarks that follow, that the result of their action has been to originate and maintain that condition of the surface of our planet which best fits it for the habitation of that infinitude of sentient beings whose enjoyment seems to have been the final cause of this portion of the divine creation.

Fire and water are in some measure antagonising forces, the latter struggling continually to reduce the surface of the globe to a perfect level, and the former, by its expansive and eruptive power, labouring as constantly to create and maintain inequalities. At first view, the two forces would seem unequal in power; the fall of rain, the flow of brooks and rivers, the waves, currents, and tides of the sea, appear to be capable of abrading or wearing away the land only to a very inconsiderable extent; while the capability of igneous forces to elevate masses of matter, as exhibited to us in volcanoes, is evidently very great. But the aqueous forces alluded to are incessant, though slow in their operation, and this has maintained the balance even, the operation of igneous forces on the earth's crust being much less general and constant. The view, therefore, in which we ought to regard these forces, and their relation to each other, is this: the moving waters of the earth are indispensable to the maintenance of the planet in a state fit for its purposes as the inhabitation of organised existences; but these waters, while fulfilling this great end, are at the same time unavoidably the agents of decay, in wearing down the

continents, to whose fertilisation they contribute. Had no counteracting power existed, to stand in the way of this destructive process, the whole surface of the globe must, in the lapse of ages, have been washed down to a level, and covered with water. But an antagonist power *has* been provided, which not only obviates this tendency to decay, but renders the very process of destruction the instrument of the most efficient renovation. When the action of water has worn or washed down a continent, and strewn its constituent materials at the bottom of the deep, by the expansive force of subterranean fire or heat, these materials are lifted again above the waters, to form new lands, and to be again the scene of enjoyment to myriads of sentient beings who breathe the air of heaven. Can we doubt that this central heat, which opposes thus effectually the course of decay on the globe, was a power introduced *designedly* into the order of terrestrial things?

The greater part of our existing continents bears marks of having undergone the action both of water and fire in the manner described. All parts of these continents, without exception, seem to have been elevated into their present position by the expansive power of fire or heat, but there are many differences and modifications in other respects. For example, some rocks (a general term, comprising both the hard and soft matters of the earth's crust) appear to have been molten by heat, and thrown toward the surface in a state of fusion; these are called rocks of igneous origin. Other rocks seem to have been deposited from water, either chemically or mechanically, in beds or strata, and to have been elevated, or cast into their existing situation, by the expansive power of heat, without having undergone any alteration of structure from the influence of the heat; these are called rocks of aqueous origin. A third order of rocks appears to have both characters mingled — to have been deposited, like ordinary aqueous formations, at the bottom of the sea in beds, but to have been afterwards so modified by the contact of heat, or heated matters, as to resemble partly the igneous classes of rocks. Leaving out of sight minor distinctions, these are the three great divisions into which the substances composing the earth's crust are found to have been arranged, through the agency of fire and water, in the manner pointed out. There is no proof, it ought to be mentioned, of their having exerted this agency in great uniform paroxysms, or eras of convulsion. Extensive, or rather universal, as the symptoms of convulsive movements and changes in the crust are, and though comparative ages can be assigned with probability to many of the aqueous and igneous formations, there seems every reason to believe that no great portion of the surface of the globe was ever in a state of disturbance at one and the same time, but that things assumed their present form by a series

of partial and irregular actions, continued unceasingly through a very long period of time. This we shall afterwards find to have had a great and important purpose, or at least to have been attended with great and important results.

Let us now pursue our inquiry into the structure of the earth's crust, and its adaptation to the necessities of its inhabitants, by examining the mere surface—the soil on which we tread. The substance of which mountains and elevated portions of land are composed, is almost uniformly found to be hard and impermeable to water. On this quality depends the formation of rivers, and the maintenance, in short, of that equable and perpetual circulation of liquids which has been already alluded to as of such paramount utility and importance. For if hills were porous, they would absorb the rains which now run down their sides; and if they were soft and friable, they would soon be washed down and obliterated. The hardness and durability, therefore, of the substance of mountains—and it is among the hardest substances found on the globe—are wisely adapted to secure the permanency of the existing order of things on the planetary surface.

It is obvious that the matters composing the flat portions of the globe require to possess a very different character, in order to suit the wants of animal and vegetable life. Passing over what is termed the *vegetable* soil, from its power of supporting vegetable existence, and which happily covers, more or less extensively, the greater portion of the earth, we find an underlying bed of gravel present also nearly everywhere over the world. Now the distinguishing characteristic of gravel-beds is their porousness; they become readily charged with the water, which sinks into them through the soil above. This quality of gravel-beds is the source of springs, wells, &c.; by which, either naturally or artificially, man, and those animals whom it is of importance for him to preserve, are supplied with never-failing reservoirs of water, where that necessary of life cannot be procured from other sources. This great object, however, could not be answered, did not a layer or stratum of a substance of opposite qualities exist below the gravel-beds — a substance, that is to say, impermeable to water. But we do find a stratum with this property almost always present in the position in question. *Clay* is impenetrable by water, and a very thin layer of it is sufficient to enable the gravel to retain the liquid with which it is charged. Is it to chance that we are to ascribe the almost uniform alternation of beds of these substances on the face of the globe?

When we investigate into the deeper-seated portions of the earth's crust, we find, as has been said, great masses of rocky matter bearing marks of the operation of fire and water. The deepest-seated mass, and that which appears to dip everywhere

below the rest, is called, from its position and understood age, the primary formation, and appears to have been once in a state of igneous fusion. But though this species of rock is believed to underlie all the others, it also rises to a greater height than all of them on the surface of the globe—being the hard rock of which mountains are generally composed. Indeed igneous rocks, of a character resembling the granitic, are found to pierce, jut through, and break up the aqueous strata in the most irregular manner, and in all quarters of the earth's crust. For example, a mass or hill composed of igneous rock is commonly observed to have aqueous strata leaning in an inclined position against its sides. The nature of these strata proves clearly that they must have been formed or deposited in a *horizontal* position. Besides, if the central mass of igneous rock could be removed, the aqueous strata of each side would form one continuous horizontal bed, by falling down and meeting each other. It is obvious, therefore, that a disruption by means of the rocky igneous masses has caused their inclined position. In truth, the fact of strata undeniably formed at the bottom of seas being found on the highest parts of our existing continents, is sufficient to lead us to anticipate that the crust would show numerous traces of violent eruptive action.

All the irregularities resulting from this cause have essentially conduced to the fitness of the globe for the wants of its inhabitants, and of civilised man in particular. Had the matters carried down by the action of moving water, and deposited at the bottom of the early seas in the form of chalk-beds, limestone-beds, coal-beds, with all the treasures of mineral salt, metallic ores, &c. —had all these important substances remained where they were first accumulated, man would have wanted all the most essential elements of industry and civilisation. But by the extensive disturbance which has taken place in the earth's crust, all these hidden riches have been brought to the surface, and exposed to his sight in the sides of valleys, cliffs, and chasms. As it is impossible to enter here into a detail of all the benefits resulting to man from the physical changes undergone by the earth at a remote period of time, we shall confine our attention to one particular point—the coal strata found in our planet's crust. 'The trees of the primeval forests,' says Buckland, 'have not, like modern trees, undergone decay, yielding back their elements to the soil and atmosphere by which they had been nourished; but, treasured up in subterranean storehouses, have been transformed into enduring beds of coal, which in these later ages have become to man the sources of heat, and light, and wealth. My fire now burns with fuel, and my lamp is shining with the light of gas, derived from coal that has been buried countless ages in the deep and dark recesses of the earth.' In allusion to the iron ore found

frequently in connection with carboniferous or coal-beds, the same eminent geologist observes in continuation—'Thus, from the wreck of forests that waved upon the surface of the primeval lands, and from ferruginous mud that was lodged at the bottom of the primeval waters, we derive our chief supplies of coal and iron, those fundamental elements of art and industry.'

Such is one example of the benefits resulting from the changes which the earth has undergone. These changes seem to have been effected slowly, in the lapse of ages; and in this, as has already been noticed, a great purpose is apparent. The earth has had many inhabitants. Though *man* was not introduced into it until it had undergone mutations sufficient to fit it for his residence, it appears to have been, from a very remote point of time, the scene of life and enjoyment to myriads of sentient beings. This is shown by the remains of animals which are found imbedded in the various strata of the crust. These organic remains, being for the most part changed into stone, or petrified, are called *fossils*, and from them geologists are enabled not only to assign relative ages to the various rocky formations, but also to determine the condition of the earth at the time of their being formed. In the deepest-seated or primary formations, no organic remains have ever been observed; and it is therefore inferred, that when this class of rocks was formed, the globe was unfit for sustaining either animal or vegetable life. In the two classes of rocks (termed transition and secondary) held to be next in point of age, we find abundance of organic remains, both vegetable and animal, the latter chiefly of shell or marine animals not now known to exist; and from this it is conjectured that water at this time covered the globe extensively, though it was capable of supporting life. In the next or latest groups of strata, called the tertiary, we meet with still more abundant traces of organic life, approaching in character to, and indeed partly the same with, that now flourishing on the earth. To what extent life had been prevalent on the globe at some of these periods, may be conceived from the fact, that some of the great limestone beds seem to be almost entirely composed of the shells of molluscs, others of corals, and not a few of the siliceous coverings of animalcules scarcely visible to the unaided eye. Into a minute description of these early inhabitants of the earth it is not necessary to enter; it is sufficient for our present purpose to know that they did exist, and from this fact we draw food for the admiration of that Power which could render all the mutations of our planet compatible with the existence and enjoyment of countless numbers of organised beings!

It would not be difficult, in fine, to adduce many more illustrations to show that the changes which an examination of the earth's crust proves it to have undergone, have been productive of the

most beneficial consequences as far as the wellbeing of its inhabitants, and of man especially, is concerned. As our knowledge of the subject advances, our perception of this truth will become, it is probable, more and more clear. Even with our present imperfect insight into the structure of the earth, however, we see abundant traces, in its formation and arrangement, of the hand of a great Designer.]

CHAPTER XXII.

ASTRONOMY.*

My opinion of astronomy has always been, that it is *not* the best medium through which to prove the agency of an intelligent Creator; but that this being proved, it shows, beyond all other sciences, the magnificence of His operations. The mind which is once convinced, it raises to sublimer views of the Deity than any other subject affords; but it is not so well adapted, as some other subjects are, to the purpose of argument. We are destitute of the means of examining the constitution of the heavenly bodies. The very simplicity of their appearance is against them. We see nothing but bright points, luminous circles, or the phases of spheres reflecting the light which falls upon them. Now, we deduce design from relation, aptitude, and correspondence of *parts*. Some degree, therefore, of *complexity* is necessary to render a subject fit for this species of argument. But the heavenly bodies do not, except perhaps in the instance of Saturn's ring, present themselves to our observation as compounded of parts at all. This, which may be a perfection in them, is a disadvantage to us, as inquirers after their nature. They do not come within our mechanics.

And what we say of their forms is true of their *motions*. Their motions are carried on without any sensible intermediate apparatus; whereby we are cut off from one principal ground of argumentation and analogy. We have nothing wherewith to compare them—no invention, no discovery, no operation or resource of art, which in this respect resembles them. Even those things which are made to imitate and represent them, such as orreries, planetaria, celestial globes, &c. bear no affinity to them in the cause

* For the articles in this chapter marked with an asterisk, I am indebted to some obliging communications received (through the hands of the Lord Bishop of Elphin) from the Rev. J. Brinkley, M. A., Andrew's Professor of Astronomy in the University of Dublin.

and principle by which their motions are actuated. I can assign for this difference a reason of utility—namely, a reason why, though the action of *terrestrial* bodies upon each other be, in almost all cases, through the intervention of solid or fluid substances, yet central attraction does not operate in this manner. It was necessary that the intervals between the planetary orbs should be devoid of any *inert* matter either fluid or solid, because such an intervening substance would, by its resistance, destroy those very motions which attraction is employed to preserve. This may be a final cause of the difference; but still the difference destroys the analogy.

Our ignorance, moreover, of the *sensitive* natures by which other planets are inhabited, necessarily keeps from us the knowledge of numberless utilities, relations, and subserviencies which we perceive upon our own globe.

After all, the real subject of admiration is, that we understand so much of astronomy as we do. That an animal confined to the surface of one of the planets, bearing a less proportion to it than the smallest microscopic insect does to the plant it lives upon; that this little, busy, inquisitive creature, by the use of senses which were given to it for its domestic necessities, and by means of the assistance of those senses which it has had the art to procure, should have been enabled to observe the whole system of worlds to which its own belongs; the changes of place of the immense globes which compose it; and with such accuracy, as to mark out beforehand the situation in the heavens in which they will be found at any future point of time; and that these bodies, after sailing through regions of void and trackless space, should arrive at the place where they were expected, not within a minute, but within a few seconds of a minute, of the time prefixed and predicted—all this is wonderful, whether we refer our admiration to the constancy of the heavenly motions themselves, or to the perspicacity and precision with which they have been noticed by mankind. Nor is this the whole, nor indeed the chief part of what astronomy teaches. By bringing reason to bear upon observation (the acutest reasoning upon the exactest observation), the astronomer has been able, out of the 'mystic dance,' and the confusion (for such it is) under which the motions of the heavenly bodies present themselves to the eye of a mere gazer upon the skies, to elicit their order and their real paths.

Our knowledge, therefore, of astronomy is admirable, though imperfect; and amidst the confessed desiderata and desideranda which impede our investigation of the wisdom of the Deity in these the grandest of His works, there are to be found, in the phenomena, ascertained circumstances and laws sufficient to indicate an intellectual agency in three of its principal operations—namely, in choosing, in determining, in regulating: in *choosing*, out of a

boundless variety of suppositions which were equally possible, that which is beneficial; in *determining*, what, left to itself, had a thousand chances against conveniency for one in its favour; in *regulating* subjects, as to quantity and degree, which, by their nature, were unlimited with respect to either. It will be our business to offer, under each of these heads, a few instances such as best admit of a popular explication.

I. Amongst proofs of choice, one is fixing the source of light and heat in the *centre* of the system. The sun is ignited and luminous; the planets which move round him cold and dark. There seems to be no antecedent necessity for this order. The sun might have been an opaque mass; some one, or two, or more, or any, or all the planets, globes of fire. There is nothing in the nature of the heavenly bodies which requires that those which are stationary should be on fire, that those which move should be cold; for, in fact, comets are bodies on fire, or at least capable of the most intense heat, yet revolve round a centre; nor does this order obtain between the primary planets and their secondaries, which are all opaque. When we consider, therefore, that the sun is one, that the planets going round it are at least seven, that it is indifferent to their nature which are luminous and which are opaque, and also in what order, with respect to each other, these two kinds of bodies are disposed, we may judge of the improbability of the present arrangement taking place by chance.

If, by way of accounting for the state in which we find the solar system, it be alleged (and this is one amongst the guesses of those who reject an intelligent Creator) that the planets themselves are only cooled or cooling masses, and were once, like the sun, many thousand times hotter than red-hot iron; then it follows that the sun also himself must be in his progress towards growing cold; which puts an end to the possibility of his having existed as he is from eternity. This consequence arises out of the hypothesis with still more certainty, if we make a part of it, what the philosophers who maintain it have usually taught—that the planets were originally masses of matter, struck off in a state of fusion from the body of the sun by the percussion of a comet, or by a shock from some other cause with which we are not acquainted: for if these masses, partaking of the nature and substance of the sun's body, have in process of time lost their heat, that body itself, in time likewise, no matter in how much longer time, must lose its heat also, and therefore be incapable of an eternal duration in the state in which we see it, either for the time to come or the time past.*

* [Buffon was the philosopher who chiefly maintained the idea that the planets had once formed part of the sun, and that they had been struck off from it *in a state of fusion* by the percussion of a comet. Laying aside the disengaging

The preference of the present to any other mode of distributing luminous and opaque bodies, I take to be evident. It requires

cause assigned by Buffon, the hypothesis, in other respects, is countenanced by the whole economy of the planets, by their relations to each other, and by their mutual dependence on the luminary round which they revolve. Nor is there anything in the hypothesis at all at variance with the supposition of an 'intelligent Creator,' as Paley seems inclined to believe. No one would have admitted more readily than our author that the world is not eternal or self-existent, but had a beginning. Is it, in any respect, inconsistent with our knowledge of the Creator's operations, to suppose that he should so have prearranged the materials of the sun's body, as to permit the planets to be evolved from it? This mode demands an exercise of Divine power as clearly as any other, and accordingly we do not conceive, that by adopting the hypothesis alluded to, we lay ourselves open to the charge of disbelieving the existence of an 'intelligent Creator.' For the adoption of this hypothesis, in preference to any other view of the origin of the planets, there are, moreover, several very strong reasons. These we shall briefly state, and in doing so, we shall have occasion to notice striking evidences of design in the institution of the planetary arrangements.

The planets present, as we have said, the strongest marks of having had one common origin; they show, as an eminent astronomer phrases it, 'a true family likeness.' There are nineteen of these bodies in our system, and to these are attached thirteen subsidiary bodies or satellites, with an indeterminate number of comets. Now the motions of all these bodies, planets and satellites, are *in one direction*—from west to east. This consentaneity of motion points strikingly to some common originating cause; but what is more to the present purpose, it is also in the highest degree indicative of design. For it has been calculated (and the calculation was made at a time when only forty-three of the motions round the sun were known) that there were four millions of millions to one against the probability of their all *accidentally* taking the same direction—a chance so small, as to render the occurrence next to impossible. Another general feature in the solar system is, that the planets revolve round the sun in nearly one plane or level, and that this plane or level corresponds with the rotatory motion of the sun on its axis. This correspondence of plane affords another strong reason for believing in the solar origin of the planetary masses; and the beautiful harmony of motion, the nice adjustment of mutual attraction arising from it, it is impossible to attribute to *chance*. In point of size the planets are very unequal; yet excluding from view the six very small planets or asteroids placed between Mars and Jupiter, which are believed to have originally been one mass, there is a progression to a certain degree regular, the smallest planets being nearest to the sun, and the larger ones situated in the extremity of the system. There is also a perfectly regular progression, in respect of density, in the planetary masses, the heaviest being nearest the sun, and the lightest farthest from him. Between the times respectively required by the planets for their revolutions, and their various distances from the sun, there is likewise an exact relation, as made manifest by a calculation of Kepler. In all these points—and were this the place to enter into an examination of the complex laws regulating the motions of the planets, many other points of a similar kind might be noticed—a resemblance is found between the constituents of the planetary system, 'which (says Sir J. Herschel) is perceived to be a true family likeness: they are bound up in one chain—interwoven in one web of mutual relation and harmonious agreement—subjected to one pervading influence, which extends from the centre to the farthest limits of the system.'

We shall take notice of another fact which is held to give countenance to the belief that the planets had a common origin—in the sun—as the points of family likeness already alluded to tend to confirm. Though the planets differ in density, the component materials of them and their satellites may be the same, but in different states of condensation: and if they could be proved to be the same, a great step, it is evident, in favour of their common solar origin would be gained. This proof, it is to be feared, never will be in our power as far as regards the planets in general; but we have some slight evidence respecting the composition of one satellite of the system—the moon. Meteorites,

more astronomy than I am able to lay before the reader to show, in its particulars, what would be the effect to the system of a dark body at the centre, and of one of the planets being luminous; but I think it manifest, without either plates or calculation —first, that supposing the necessary proportion of magnitude between the central and the revolving bodies to be preserved, the ignited planet would not be sufficient to illuminate and warm the rest of the system; secondly, that its light and heat would be imparted to the other planets much more irregularly than light and heat are now received from the sun.

(*) II. Another thing in which a choice appears to be exercised, and in which, amongst the possibilities out of which the choice was to be made, the number of those which were wrong bore an infinite proportion to the number of those which were right, is in what geometricians call the *axis of rotation*. This matter I will endeavour to explain. The earth, it is well known, is not an exact globe, but an oblate spheroid, something like an orange. Now the axes of rotation, or the diameters upon which such a body may be made to turn round, are as many as can be drawn through its centre to opposite points upon its whole surface; but of these axes none are *permanent*, except either its shortest diameter—that is, that which passes through the heart of the orange from the place where the stalk is inserted into it, and which is but one; or its longest diameters, at right angles with the former, which must all terminate in the single circumference which goes round the thickest part of the orange. The shortest diameter is that upon which, in fact, the earth turns; and it is, as the reader sees, what it ought to be—a permanent axis; whereas had blind chance, had a casual impulse, had a stroke or push at random set the earth a-spinning, the odds were infinite but that they had sent it round upon a wrong axis. And what would have been the consequence? The difference between a perma-

or the stones which fall from the heavens, it is now generally believed must come from that body; and they are found to consist, with one exception, of substances entering into the composition of our own planet. This fact, therefore, which is all the evidence that we probably ever will have respecting the composition of the other bodies of our system, tends to support the hypothesis of their common solar origin.

The supposition of the solar origin of the planets is in no respect, as we have already said, adverse to the existence of an 'intelligent Creator.' What power so prearranged the materials of the sun, as to permit the evolution of such bodies from it? What lawgiver decreed the law of attraction, on which the stability of all depended from the very beginning? After our earth, since of it only we can speak with certainty, was established in its orbit, what agency clothed it with a living garment, and produced its numberless varieties of animated inhabitants, with all the wonders of mechanism which their structure presents? By referring the origin of the planets to the sun, we move one step farther in tracing out the creative arrangements, but we receive no answer to such questions as the preceding. We come in this view of the matter, as in every other, to a point where the existence of a creating designing hand is wanted to account for all!]

nent axis and another axis is this: When a spheroid in a state of rotatory motion gets upon a permanent axis, it keeps there; it remains steady and faithful to its position; its poles preserve their direction with respect to the plane and to the centre of its orbit; but whilst it turns upon an axis which is *not* permanent (and the number of those, we have seen, infinitely exceeds the number of the other), it is always liable to shift and vacillate from one axis to another, with a corresponding change in the inclination of its poles. Therefore, if a planet once set off revolving upon any other than its shortest, or one of its longest axes, the poles on its surface would keep perpetually changing, and it never would attain a permanent axis of rotation. The effect of this unfixedness and instability would be, that the equatorial parts of the earth might become the polar, or the polar the equatorial; to the utter destruction of plants and animals which are not capable of interchanging their situations, but are respectively adapted to their own. As to ourselves, instead of rejoicing in our temperate zone, and annually preparing for the moderate vicissitude, or rather the agreeable succession of seasons which we experience and expect, we might come to be locked up in the ice and darkness of the arctic circle, with bodies neither inured to its rigours nor provided with shelter or defence against them. Nor would it be much better if the trepidation of our pole, taking an opposite course, should place us under the heats of a vertical sun. But if it would fare so ill with the human inhabitant, who can live under greater varieties of latitude than any other animal, still more noxious would this translation of climate have proved to life in the rest of the creation, and most, perhaps, of all in plants. The habitable earth, and its beautiful variety, might have been destroyed by a simple mischance in the axis of rotation.

(*) III. All this, however, proceeds upon a supposition of the earth having been formed at first an oblate spheroid. There is another supposition; and perhaps our limited information will not enable us to decide between them. The second supposition is, that the earth, being a mixed mass somewhat fluid, took, as it might do, its present form by the joint action of the mutual gravitation of its parts and its rotatory motion. This, as we have said, is a point in the history of the earth which our observations are not sufficient to determine. For a very small depth below the surface (but extremely small—less, perhaps, than an eight-thousandth part compared with the depth of the centre), we find vestiges of ancient fluidity. But this fluidity must have gone down many hundred times farther than we can penetrate, to enable the earth to take its present oblate form; and whether any traces of this kind exist to that depth, we are ignorant. Calculations were made a few years ago of the mean density of the earth, by comparing the force of its attraction with the force of attraction of a

rock of granite, the bulk of which could be ascertained; and the result of the calculation was, that the earth upon an average, through its whole sphere, has twice the density of granite, or about five times that of water. Therefore it cannot be a hollow shell, as some have formerly supposed; nor can its internal parts be occupied by central fire, or by water. The solid parts must greatly exceed the fluid parts: and the probability is, that it is a solid mass throughout, composed of substances more ponderous the deeper we go. Nevertheless, we may conceive the present face of the earth to have originated from the revolution of a sphere, covered by a surface of a compound mixture; the fluid and solid parts separating, as the surface becomes quiescent. Here, then, comes in the *moderating* hand of the Creator. If the water had exceeded its present proportion even but by a trifling quantity compared with the whole globe, all the land would have been covered: had there been much less than there is, there would not have been enough to fertilise the continent. Had the exsiccation been progressive, such as we may suppose to have been produced by an evaporating heat, how came it to stop at the point at which we see it? Why did it not stop sooner? Why at all? The mandate of the Deity will account for this; nothing else will.

IV. Of CENTRIPETAL FORCES.—By virtue of the simplest law that can be imagined—namely, that a body *continues* in the state in which it is, whether of motion or rest; and if in motion, goes on in the line in which it was proceeding, and with the same velocity, *unless* there be some cause for change: by virtue, I say, of this law, it comes to pass (what may appear to be a strange consequence) that cases arise in which attraction, incessantly drawing a body towards a centre, never brings, nor ever will bring, the body to that centre, but keep it in eternal circulation round it. If it were possible to fire off a cannon ball with a velocity of five miles in a second, and the resistance of the air could be taken away, the cannon ball would for ever wheel round the earth, instead of falling down upon it. This is the principle which sustains the heavenly motions. The Deity, having appointed this law to matter (than which, as we have said before, no law could be more simple), has turned it to a wonderful account in constructing planetary systems.

The actuating cause in these systems, is an attraction which varies reciprocally as the square of the distance—that is, at double the distance, has a quarter of the force; at half the distance, four times the strength; and so on. Now, concerning this law of variation we have three things to observe: First, that attraction, for anything we know about it, was just as capable of one law of variation as of another: Secondly, that out of an infinite number of possible laws, those which were admissible for the

purpose of supporting the heavenly motions lay within certain narrow limits: Thirdly, that of the admissible laws, or those which come within the limits prescribed, the law that actually prevails is the most beneficial. So far as these propositions can be made out, we may be said, I think, to prove *choice* and *regulation:* choice out of boundless variety; and regulation of that which, by its own nature, was, in respect of the property regulated, indifferent and indefinite.

I. First, then, attraction, for anything we know about it, was originally indifferent to all laws of variation depending upon change of distance—that is, just as susceptible of one law as of another. It might have been the same at all distances; it might have increased as the distance increased; or it might have diminished with the increase of the distance, yet in ten thousand different proportions from the present; it might have followed no stated law at all. If attraction be what Cotes, with many other Newtonians, thought it to be—a primordial property of matter, not dependent upon, or traceable to, any other material cause—then, by the very nature and definition of a primordial property, it stood indifferent to all laws. If it be the agency of something immaterial, then also, for anything we know of it, it was indifferent to all laws. If the revolution of bodies round a centre depend upon vortices, neither are these limited to one law more than another.

There is, I know, an account given of attraction which should seem, in its very cause, to assign to it the law which we find it to observe, and which therefore makes that law a law not of choice, but of necessity; and it is the account which ascribes attraction to an *emanation* from the attracting body. It is probable that the influence of such an emanation will be proportioned to the spissitude of the rays of which it is composed; which spissitude, supposing the rays to issue in right lines on all sides from a point, will be reciprocally as the square of the distance. The mathematics of this solution we do not call in question; the question with us is, whether there be any sufficient reason for believing that attraction is produced by an emanation. For my part, I am totally at a loss to comprehend how particles streaming *from* a centre should draw a body *towards* it. The impulse, if impulse it be, is all the other way. Nor shall we find less difficulty in conceiving a conflux of particles, incessantly flowing to a centre, and carrying down all bodies along with it, that centre also itself being in a state of rapid motion through absolute space; for by what source is the stream fed, or what becomes of the accumulation? Add to which, that it seems to imply a contrariety of properties, to suppose an ethereal fluid to *act*, but not to *resist;* powerful enough to carry down bodies with great force towards a centre, yet, inconsistently with the nature of inert matter, power-

less and perfectly yielding with respect to the motions which result from the projectile impulse. By calculations drawn from ancient notices of eclipses of the moon, we can prove that, if such a fluid exist at all, its resistance has had no sensible effect upon the moon's motion for two thousand five hundred years.* The

* [This assertion of our author requires explanation. On comparing the records of the most ancient lunar eclipses of the Chaldean astronomers with those of modern times, it is found that the period of the moon's revolution *is* sensibly *shorter* than at that remote epoch. This satellite of earth is about four times her own breadth in advance of the place which she would have occupied if no acceleration of her motion had taken place; in other words, the rate of her motion has increased at the rate of nearly eleven seconds per century. This is precisely the effect which the existence of a resisting medium would tend to produce. Resistance of this kind would *cause* the moon to *move* more slowly, but at the same time she would *perform her revolutions* more quickly; because, by moving more slowly, she would be drawn more rapidly to the centre, and her orbit would thus be to a certain extent circumscribed.

Still, though incorrect in asserting the moon's motion to have undergone no change, the text is right, accidentally it would seem, in describing the terrestrial satellite's motion as affording no evidence of the existence of a resisting medium; for Laplace showed clearly that the acceleration of the moon's motion alluded to was caused not by any resistance it met with, but by the variation in the eccentricity of the earth's orbit. This variation is the result of the *perturbative* influence of the planets on the earth's motions, and the moon's orbit is indirectly affected by the propagation of this influence through the sun. Though the period may be of immense length, the earth's orbital eccentricity *is periodic;* and it follows, therefore, that the accelerated motion of the moon is also of a temporary character, which it would not be if caused by a permanent resisting medium.

However, whether or not the phenomena of gravitation or attraction be dependent on an *emanation* from the attracting body, certain it is that philosophers at the present day are inclined to believe in the existence of an ethereal fluid, filling all space, and resisting to a certain extent the motions of the heavenly bodies. As this is a point of infinite importance, the principal grounds, independent of mere abstract reasoning, for believing in the existence of a resisting medium may be briefly stated. The comet now called Encke's comet was first seen in 1786. It is a body of such extreme apparent tenuity, that the stars shine through it without any diminution of their brightness. Nevertheless it moves in a regular and rapid, though very eccentric, orbit round the sun, and, vapoury as it seems to be, is acted on by the same attractive influences which affect the denser bodies of the system, performing its revolution in twelve hundred and eight days. Now it has been found, by accurate observation of this comet's later revolutions, that the time in which it performs its orbit is less by two days than when it was first observed. Astronomers have therefore concluded, and with some appearance of probability, that the orbit of the comet has been narrowed by some obstructing force, and that this force is an ether or fluid filling all space. The question of such a medium, however, will shortly be decided by a more rigid observance of its effects upon the revolutions of the comets, which are so light, that the slightest resistance would soon show itself in contracting their orbits.

The inference drawn from this fact is, that the same resistance must be affecting, in a similar manner, the motions of every heavenly body in our system, and, by precipitating them into the sun, must finally efface them from the universe. The existence of a resisting medium once ascertained, the conclusion in question is inevitable. But how immense a period of time must elapse, as far as man can estimate it, before that termination ensues! The planet Jupiter, if acted on in the same manner as Encke's comet, will not lose one-millionth of his velocity in a million years. Remote as the day is, however, it is certain, if a resisting medium exists, that a day *is* assigned for the extinction of the solar system. It follows, then, that that system is not self-existent and eternal; as it

truth is, that, except this one circumstance of the variation of the attracting force at different distances agreeing with the variation of the spissitude, there is no reason whatever to support the hypothesis of an emanation; and, as it seems to me, almost insuperable reasons against it.

(*) II. Our second proposition is, that whilst the possible laws of variation were infinite, the *admissible* laws, or the laws compatible with the preservation of the system, lie within narrow limits. If the attracting force had varied according to any *direct* law of the distance, let it have been what it would, great destruction and confusion would have taken place. The direct simple proportion of the distance would, it is true, have produced an ellipse; but the perturbing forces would have acted with so much advantage, as to be continually changing the dimensions of the ellipse, in a manner inconsistent with our terrestrial creation. For instance, if the planet Saturn, so large and so remote, had attracted the earth, both in proportion to the quantity of matter contained in it, which it does, and also in any proportion to its distance—that is, if it had pulled the harder for being the farther off (instead of the reverse of it)—it would have dragged out of its course the globe which we inhabit, and have perplexed its motions to a degree incompatible with our security, our enjoyments, and probably our existence. Of the *inverse* laws, if the centripetal force had changed as the cube of the distance, or in any higher proportion—that is (for I speak to the unlearned), if, at double the distance, the attractive force had been diminished to an eighth part, or to less than that, the consequence would have been, that the planets, if they once began to approach the sun, would have fallen into his body; if they once, though by ever so little, increased their distance from the centre, would for ever have receded from it. The laws, therefore, of attraction, by which a system of revolving bodies could be upholden in their motions, lie within narrow limits compared with the possible laws. I much underrate the restriction, when I say that, in a scale of a mile, they are confined to an inch. All direct ratios of the distance are excluded, on account of danger from perturbing forces; all reciprocal ratios, except what lie beneath the cube of the distance, by the demonstrable consequence, that every the least change of distance would, under the operation of such laws, have been fatal to the repose and order of the system. We do not know—that is, we seldom reflect—how interested we are in this matter. Small irregularities may be endured; but changes within these limits

is, in the time to come, to exist no more, so, in the time which was, it must have had a beginning. And who, or what was its Beginner? Speculations upon this point might be endlessly multiplied; but, as a distinguished philosopher remarks, 'we can obtain no answer of which the meaning corresponds with our questions, till we rest in the conclusion of a most provident and most powerful Creating Intelligence.']

being allowed for, the permanency of our ellipse is a question of life and death to our whole sensitive world.

(*) III. That the subsisting law of attraction falls within the limits which utility requires, when these limits bear so small a proportion to the range of possibilities upon which chance might equally have cast it, is not, with any appearance of reason, to be accounted for by any other cause than a regulation proceeding from a designing mind. But our next proposition carries the matter somewhat farther. We say, in the third place, that out of the different laws which lie within the limits of admissible laws, the *best* is made choice of; that there are advantages in this particular law which cannot be demonstrated to belong to any other law, and concerning some of which it can be demonstrated that they do not belong to any other.

(*) 1. Whilst this law prevails between each particle of matter, the *united* attraction of a sphere, composed of that matter, observes the same law. This property of the law is necessary, to render it applicable to a system composed of spheres, but it is a property which belongs to no other law of attraction that is admissible. The law of variation of the united attraction is in no other case the same as the law of attraction of each particle, one case excepted, and that is, of the attraction varying directly as the distance; the inconveniency of which law, in other respects, we have already noticed.

We may follow this regulation somewhat farther, and still more strikingly perceive that it proceeded from a designing mind. A law both admissible and convenient was requisite. In what way is the law of the attracting globes obtained? Astronomical observations, and terrestrial experiments, show that the attraction of the globes of the system is made up of the attraction of their parts, the attraction of each globe being compounded of the attractions of its parts. Now, the admissible and convenient law which exists, could not be obtained in a system of bodies gravitating by the united gravitation of their parts, unless each particle of matter were attracted by a force varying by one particular law —namely, varying inversely as the square of the distance; for if the action of the particles be according to any other law whatever, the admissible and convenient law which is adopted could not be obtained. Here, then, are clearly shown regulation and design. A law both admissible and convenient was to be obtained: the mode chosen for obtaining that law was by making *each* particle of matter act. After this choice was made, then further attention was to be given to each particle of matter, and one, and one only, particular law of action to be assigned to it. No other law would have answered the purpose intended.

(*) 2. All systems must be liable to *perturbations*. And therefore, to guard against these perturbations, or rather to guard

against their running to destructive lengths, is perhaps the strongest evidence of care and foresight that can be given. Now we are able to demonstrate of our law of attraction, what can be demonstrated of no other, and what qualifies the dangers which arise from cross but unavoidable influences, that the action of the parts of our system upon one another will not cause permanently increasing irregularities, but merely periodical or vibratory ones; that is, they will come to a limit, and then go back again. This we can demonstrate only of a system in which the following properties concur—namely, that the force shall be inversely as the square of the distance; the masses of the revolving bodies small compared with that of the body at the centre; the orbits not much inclined to one another; and their eccentricity little. In such a system the grand points are secure. The mean distances and periodic times, upon which depend our temperature and the regularity of our year, are constant. The eccentricities, it is true, will still vary; but so slowly, and to so small an extent, as to produce no inconveniency from fluctuation of temperature and season. The same as to the obliquity of the planes of the orbits. [For instance, the inclination of the ecliptic to the equator will never change above two degrees (out of ninety), and that will require many thousand years in performing.

It has been also rightly remarked, that if the great planets, Jupiter and Saturn, had moved in lower spheres, their influences would have had much more effect, as to disturbing the planetary motions, than they now have. While they revolve at so great distances from the rest, they act almost equally on the sun and on the inferior planets; which has nearly the same consequence as not acting at all upon either.

If it be said that the planets might have been sent round the sun in exact circles, in which case no change of distance from the centre taking place, the law of variation of the attracting power would have never come in question, one law would have served as well as another; an answer to the scheme may be drawn from the consideration of these same perturbing forces. The system retaining in other respects its present constitution, though the planets had been at first sent round in exact circular orbits, they could not have kept them; and if the law of attraction had not been what it is, or at least if the prevailing law had transgressed the limits above assigned, every evagation would have been fatal; the planet once drawn, as drawn it necessarily must have been, out of its course, would have wandered in endless error.

(*) IV. What we have seen in the law of the centripetal force—namely, a choice guided by views of utility, and a choice of one law out of thousands which might equally have taken place—we see no less in the *figures* of the planetary orbits. It was not enough to fix the law of the centripetal force, though by the wisest

choice; for even under that law it was still competent to the planets to have moved in paths possessing so great a degree of eccentricity, as in the course of every revolution to be brought very near to the sun, and carried away to immense distances from him. The comets actually move in orbits of this sort; and had the planets done so, instead of going round in orbits nearly circular, the change from one extremity of temperature to another must, in ours at least, have destroyed every animal and plant upon its surface. Now the distance from the centre at which a planet sets off, and the absolute force of attraction at that distance being fixed, the figure of his orbit, its being a circle, or nearer to or farther off from a circle—namely, a rounder or a longer oval—depends upon two things—the velocity with which, and the direction in which, the planet is projected. And these, in order to produce a right result, must be both brought within certain narrow limits. One, and only one, velocity, united with one, and only one, direction, will produce a perfect circle. And the velocity must be near to this velocity, and the direction also near to this direction, to produce orbits, such as the planetary orbits are, nearly circular; that is, ellipses with small eccentricities. The velocity and the direction must *both* be right. If the velocity be wrong, no direction will cure the error; if the direction be in any considerable degree oblique, no velocity will produce the orbit required. Take, for example, the attraction of gravity at the surface of the earth. The force of that attraction being what it is, out of all the degrees of velocity, swift and slow, with which a ball might be shot off, none would answer the purpose of which we are speaking, but what was nearly that of five miles in a second. If it were less than that, the body would not get round at all, but would come to the ground; if it were in any considerable degree more than that, the body would take one of those eccentric courses, those long ellipses, of which we have noticed the inconveniency. If the velocity reached the rate of seven miles in a second, or went beyond that, the ball would fly off from the earth, and never be heard of more. In like manner, with respect to the *direction;* out of the innumerable angles in which the ball might be sent off (I mean angles formed with a line drawn to the centre), none would serve but what was nearly a right one; out of the various directions in which the cannon might be pointed, upwards and downwards, every one would fail but what was exactly or nearly horizontal. The same thing holds true of the planets—of our own amongst the rest. We are entitled, therefore, to ask, and to urge the question, Why did the projectile velocity and projectile direction of the earth happen to be nearly those which would retain it in a *circular* form? Why not one of the infinite number of velocities, one of the infinite number of directions, which would have made it approach much nearer to, or recede much farther from, the sun?

The planets going round, all in the same direction, and all nearly in the same plane, afforded to Buffon a ground for asserting that they had all been shivered from the sun by the same stroke of a comet, and by that stroke projected into their present orbits. Now, besides that this is to attribute to chance the fortunate concurrence of velocity and direction which we have been here noticing, the hypothesis, as I apprehend, is inconsistent with the physical laws by which the heavenly motions are governed. If the planets were struck off from the surface of the sun, they would return to the surface of the sun again. Nor will this difficulty be got rid of by supposing that the same violent blow which shattered the sun's surface, and separated large fragments from it, pushed the sun himself out of his place; for the consequence of this would be, that the sun and system of shattered fragments would have a progressive motion, which indeed may possibly be the case with our system; but then each fragment would, in every revolution, return to the surface of the sun again. The hypothesis is also contradicted by the vast difference which subsists between the *diameters* of the planetary orbits. The distance of Saturn from the sun (to say nothing of the Georgium Sidus) is nearly five-and-twenty times that of Mercury; a disparity which it seems impossible to reconcile with Buffon's scheme. Bodies starting from the same place, with whatever difference of direction or velocity they set off, could not have been found at these different distances from the centre still retaining their nearly circular orbits. They must have been carried to their proper distances before they were projected.*

To conclude: In astronomy, the great thing is to raise the imagination to the subject, and that oftentimes in opposition to the impression made upon the senses. An illusion, for example, must be gotten over, arising from the distance at which we view the heavenly bodies—namely, the apparent *slowness* of their motions. The moon shall take some hours in getting half a yard from a star which it touched. A motion so deliberate, we may think easily guided. But what is the fact? The moon, in fact, is all this while driving through the heavens at the rate of considerably more than two thousand miles in an hour; which is more than double of that with which a ball is shot off from the mouth of a

* 'If we suppose the matter of the system to be accumulated in the centre by its gravity, *no* mechanical principles, with the assistance of this power of gravity, could separate the vast mass into such parts as the sun and planets; and after carrying them to their different distances, project them in their several directions, preserving still the quality of action and reaction, or the state of the centre of gravity of the system. Such an exquisite structure of things could only arise from the contrivance and powerful influences of an intelligent, free, and most potent agent. The same powers, therefore, which at present govern the material universe, and conduct its various motions, are *very different* from those which were necessary to have produced it from nothing, or to have disposed it in the admirable form in which it now proceeds.'—*Maclaurin's Account of Newton's Philos.* p. 407, ed. 3d.

cannon. Yet is this prodigious rapidity as much under government as if the planet proceeded ever so slowly, or were conducted in its course inch by inch. It is also difficult to bring the imagination to conceive (what yet, to judge tolerably of the matter, it is necessary to conceive) how *loose*, if we may so express it, the heavenly bodies are. Enormous globes, held by nothing, confined by nothing, are turned into free and boundless space, each to seek its course by the virtue of an invisible principle; but a principle, one, common, and the same in all, and ascertainable. To preserve such bodies from being lost, from running together in heaps, from hindering and distracting one another's motions, in a degree inconsistent with any continuing order; that is, to cause them to form planetary systems, systems that, when formed, can be upheld, and, most especially, systems accommodated to the organised and sensitive natures which the planets sustain, as we know to be the case, where alone we can know what the case is, upon our earth—all this requires an intelligent interposition, because it can be demonstrated concerning it, that it requires an adjustment of force, distance, direction, and velocity, out of the reach of chance to have produced—an adjustment, in its view to utility, similar to that which we see in ten thousand subjects of nature which are nearer to us, but in power, and in extent of space through which that power is exerted, stupendous.

But many of the heavenly bodies, as the sun and fixed stars, are *stationary*.* Their rest must be the effect of an absence or of

* It must here, however, be stated that many astronomers deny that any of the heavenly bodies are absolutely stationary. Some of the brightest of the fixed stars have certainly small motions; and of the rest the distance is too great, and the intervals of our observation too short, to enable us to pronounce with certainty that they may not have the same. The motions in the fixed stars which have been observed, are considered either as proper to each of them, or as compounded of the motion of our system and of motions proper to each star.[1] By a comparison of these motions, a motion in our system is supposed to be discovered. By continuing this analogy to other and to all systems, it is possible to suppose that attraction as unlimited, and that the whole material universe is revolving round some fixed point within its containing sphere of space. The situation of this point, according to Dr Mädler of Dorpat, lies in the small group of stars called the Pleiades. The distance of our sun from that point is calculated at 34,000,000 of times that of the earth from the sun. Dr Mädler considers that the stars are crowded immediately round the centre; then a belt of comparatively vacant space; then again a crowded belt; and so on alternately to the extremity. Our sun is supposed to revolve round a central sun at the rate of 130,000 miles a minute, yet the whole revolution requires 18,200,000 of our years!

[1] [Immense as the distance of the nearest of the fixed stars from our system is, man has been able to make such observations upon them as puts their true character beyond doubt. To regard them, as was formerly done, as bodies scattered through the heavens merely for the purpose of illuminating *our* nights, is an idea at once presumptuous and absurd. The brightest of the fixed stars—Sirius—has been calculated by Dr Wollaston to emit fourteen times more light than our sun. That there are many among the countless hosts of stars visible

an equilibrium of attractions. It proves, also, that a projectile impulse was originally given to some of the heavenly bodies, and not to others. But further; if attraction act at all distances, there can only be one quiescent centre of gravity in the universe; and all bodies whatever must be approaching this centre, or revolving round it. According to the first of these suppositions, if the duration of the world had been long enough to allow of it, all its parts, all the great bodies of which it is composed, must have been gathered together in a heap round this point. No changes, however, which have been observed, afford us the smallest reason for believing that either the one supposition or the other is true: and then it will follow that attraction itself is controlled or suspended by a superior agent; that there is a power above the highest of the powers of material nature; a will which restrains and circumscribes the operations of the most extensive.

from our earth much larger than even Sirius, is highly probable; but one instance, such as that alluded to, is in itself sufficient to overthrow the idea that the stars are appendages of our system. What, then, can these immense bodies, these vast centres of light, be? Suns all of them, doubtless, if we may judge from analogy; and all of them the presiding centres of systems like our own, with planets and their satellites circulating round them, and deriving from them light and all the other benefits which our own planets owe to the luminary that shines in the midst of them.

But analogical reasoning is not all that we have to guide us in determining the true nature of the stars. Several of them have been observed to follow the law of periodicity, which is the most characteristic feature of our own system. The large star called Algol continues visible, at its greatest brightness, during a period of sixty-two hours, when it suddenly begins to lose its splendour, and in the course of three hours and a half is shorn of more than one-half of its original brightness and apparent magnitude. It then begins again to increase, and in three and a half hours it resumes its wonted lustre, to retain it for sixty-two hours, and to be again obscured. Another star, called Omicron, presents phenomena of a similar kind. For a fortnight Omicron is visible at its greatest brightness, and decreases gradually during a period of three months, when it disappears altogether for five months; it then reappears, continues increasing in lustre for three months, and shines at its height for a fortnight, to be obscured and lost anew. Eleven other stars present analogous phenomena. Astronomy has but one way of explaining these remarkable periodicities or phases. They must arise from the passage of opaque bodies over the faces of the stars in question; and what can these opaque bodies be but planets?—planets, like those in our own system, revolving around a sun, and receiving from it similar advantages.

As it would be vain in the extreme for man to suppose that his own globe alone was made to be the scene of life and enjoyment, what sublime views of the creative power arise from the contemplation of a universe filled with systems similar to that of which our earth forms a part! Every star a sun, with vast inhabited globes around it! If anything could add to the sublimity of such an idea, it is the belief that astronomers now generally entertain, that, besides their individual movements, all the systems of creation have one great general motion—that all the innumerable orbs of heaven, clothed in light, and encircled by their planets, teeming with life, are ever wheeling in grand procession around the centre of gravity of the universe, where dwells the Uncreate Power—the Author of All.

CHAPTER XXIII.

OF THE PERSONALITY OF THE DEITY.

Contrivance, if established, appears to me to prove everything which we wish to prove. Amongst other things, it proves the *personality* of the Deity, as distinguished from what is sometimes called nature, sometimes called a principle: which terms, in the mouths of those who use them philosophically, seem to be intended to admit and to express an efficacy, but to exclude and to deny a personal agent. Now, that which can contrive, which can design, must be a person. These capacities constitute personality, for they imply consciousness and thought. They require that which can perceive an end or purpose; as well as the power of providing means, and of directing them to their end.* They require a centre in which perceptions unite, and from which volitions flow; which is mind. The acts of a mind prove the existence of a mind: and in whatever a mind resides, is a person. The seat of intellect is a person. We have no authority to limit the properties of mind to any particular corporeal form, or to any particular circumscription of space. These properties subsist in created nature under a great variety of sensible forms. Also every animated being has its *sensorium*—that is, a certain portion of space, within which perception and volition are exerted. This sphere may be enlarged to an indefinite extent—may comprehend the universe; and being so imagined, may serve to furnish us with as good a notion as we are capable of forming of the *immensity* of the Divine Nature—that is, of a Being infinite, as well in essence as in power; yet nevertheless a person.

'No man hath seen God at any time.' And this, I believe, makes the great difficulty. Now it is a difficulty which chiefly arises from our not duly estimating the state of our faculties. The Deity, it is true, is the object of none of our senses: but reflect what limited capacities animal senses are. Many animals seem to have but one sense, or perhaps two at the most: touch and taste. Ought such an animal to conclude against the existence of odours, sounds, and colours? To another species is given the sense of smelling. This is an advance in the knowledge of the powers and properties of nature: but if this favoured animal should infer from its superiority over the class last described, that it perceived everything which was perceptible in nature, it is known to us, though perhaps not suspected by the animal itself, that it proceeded upon a false and presumptuous estimate of its

* Priestley's Letters to a Philosophical Unbeliever, p. 153, ed. 2d.

faculties. To another is added the sense of hearing; which lets in a class of sensations entirely unconceived by the animal before spoken of; not only distinct, but remote from any which *it* had ever experienced, and greatly superior to them. Yet this last animal has no more ground for believing that its senses comprehend all things, and all properties of things, which exists, than might have been claimed by the tribes of animals beneath it; for we know that it is still possible to possess another sense—that of sight—which shall disclose to the percipient a new world. This fifth sense makes the animal what the human animal is: but to infer that possibility stops here; that either this fifth sense is the last sense, or that the five comprehend all existence, is just as unwarrantable a conclusion as that which might have been made by any of the different species which possessed fewer, or even by that, if such there be, which possessed only one. The conclusion of the one-sense animal, and the conclusion of the five-sense animal, stand upon the same authority. There may be more and other senses than those which we have. There may be senses suited to the perception of the powers, properties, and substance of spirits. These may belong to higher orders of rational agents: for there is not the smallest reason for supposing that we are the highest, or that the scale of creation stops with us.

The great *energies* of nature are known to us only by their effects. The substances which produce them are as much concealed from our senses as the Divine Essence itself. *Gravitation*, though constantly present, though constantly exerting its influence, though everywhere around us, near us, and within us—though diffused throughout all space, and penetrating the texture of all bodies with which we are acquainted—depends, if upon a fluid, upon a fluid which, though both powerful and universal in its operation, is no object of sense to us; if upon any other kind of substance or action, upon a substance and action from which *we* receive no distinguishable impressions. Is it then to be wondered at that it should in some measure be the same with the Divine Nature?

Of this, however, we are certain, that whatever the Deity be, neither the *universe*, nor any part of it which we see, can be He. The universe itself is merely a collective name: its parts are all which are real: or which are *things*. Now, inert matter is out of the question: and organised substances include marks of contrivance. But whatever includes marks of contrivance, whatever, in its constitution, testifies design, necessarily carries us to something beyond itself, to some other being, to a designer prior to, and out of, itself. No animal, for instance, can have contrived its own limbs and senses; can have been the author to itself of the design with which they were constructed. That supposition involves all the absurdity of self-creation—that is, of acting without existing.

Nothing can be God which is ordered by a wisdom and a will which itself is void of; which is indebted for any of its properties to contrivance *ab extra*. The *not* having that in his nature which requires the exertion of another prior being (which property is sometimes called self-sufficiency, and sometimes self-comprehension), appertains to the Deity, as His essential distinction, and removes His nature from that of all things which we see. Which consideration contains the answer to a question that has sometimes been asked—namely, Why, since something or other must have existed from eternity, may not the present universe be that something? The contrivance perceived in it proves that to be impossible. Nothing contrived can, in a strict and proper sense, be eternal, forasmuch as the contriver must have existed before the contrivance.

Wherever we see marks of contrivance, we are led for its cause to an *intelligent* author. And this transition of the understanding is founded upon uniform experience. We see intelligence constantly contriving—that is, we see intelligence constantly producing effects, marked and distinguished by certain properties; not certain particular properties, but by a kind and class of properties such as relation to an end, relation of parts to one another, and to a common purpose. We see, wherever we are witnesses to the actual formation of things, nothing except intelligence producing effects so marked and distinguished. Furnished with this experience, we view the productions of nature. We observe *them* also marked and distinguished in the same manner. We wish to account for their origin. Our experience suggests a cause perfectly adequate to this account. No experience, no single instance or example, can be offered in favour of any other. In this cause, therefore, we ought to rest; in this cause the common sense of mankind has, in fact, rested, because it agrees with that which, in all cases, is the foundation of knowledge—the undeviating course of their experience. The reasoning is the same as that by which we conclude any ancient appearances to have been the effects of volcanoes or inundations—namely, because they resemble the effects which fire and water produce before our eyes; and because we have never known these effects to result from any other operation. And this resemblance may subsist in so many circumstances, as not to leave us under the smallest doubt in forming our opinion. Men are not deceived by this reasoning: for whenever it happens, as it sometimes does happen, that the truth comes to be known by direct information, it turns out to be what was expected. In like manner, and upon the same foundation (which in truth is that of experience), we conclude that the works of nature proceed from intelligence and design, because, in the properties of relation to a purpose, subserviency to a use, they resemble what intelligence and design are

constantly producing, and what nothing except intelligence and design ever produce at all. Of every argument which would raise a question as to the safety of this reasoning, it may be observed, that if such argument be listened to, it leads to the inference not only that the present order of nature is insufficient to prove the existence of an intelligent Creator, but that no imaginable order would be sufficient to prove it—that *no* contrivance, were it ever so mechanical, ever so precise, ever so clear, ever so perfectly like those which we ourselves employ, would support this conclusion—a doctrine to which I conceive no sound mind can assent.

The force, however, of the reasoning is sometimes sunk by our taking up with mere names. We have already noticed (Ch. i. sect. vii.), and we must here notice again, the misapplication of the term 'law,' and the mistake concerning the idea which that term expresses in physics, whenever such idea is made to take the place of power, and still more of an intelligent power, and as such, to be assigned for the cause of anything, or of any property of anything, that exists. This is what we are secretly apt to do when we speak of organised bodies (plants, for instance, or animals) owing their production, their form, their growth, their qualities, their beauty, their use, to any law or laws of nature; and when we are contented to sit down with that answer to our inquiries concerning them. I say once more, that it is a perversion of language to assign any law as the efficient operative cause of anything. A law presupposes an agent, for it is only the mode according to which an agent proceeds; it implies a power, for it is the order according to which that power acts. Without this agent, without this power, which are both distinct from itself, the 'law' does nothing, is nothing.

What has been said concerning 'law,' holds true of *mechanism*. Mechanism is not itself power. Mechanism, without power, can do nothing. Let a watch be contrived and constructed ever so ingeniously; be its parts ever so many, ever so complicated, ever so finely wrought or artificially put together, it cannot *go* without a weight or spring—that is, without a force independent of, and ulterior to, its mechanism. The spring acting at the centre, will produce different motions and different results, according to the variety of the intermediate mechanism. One and the self-same spring, acting in one and the same manner—namely, by simply expanding itself—may be the cause of a hundred different and all-useful movements, if a hundred different and well-devised sets of wheels be placed between it and the final effect: for example, it may point out the hour of the day, the day of the month, the age of the moon, the position of the planets, the cycle of the years, and many other serviceable notices; and these movements may fulfil their purposes with more or less perfection, according

as the mechanism is better or worse contrived, or better or worse executed, or in a better or worse state of repair; *but in all cases it is necessary that the spring act at the centre.* The course of our reasoning upon such a subject would be this: By inspecting the watch, even when standing still, we get a proof of contrivance, and of a contriving mind having been employed about it. In the form and obvious relation of its parts, we see enough to convince us of this. If we pull the works in pieces, for the purpose of a closer examination, we are still more fully convinced. But when we see the watch *going*, we see proof of another point—namely, that there is a power somewhere, and somehow or other applied to it; a power in action—that there is more in the subject than the mere wheels of the machine—that there is a secret spring, or a gravitating plummet—in a word, that there is force and energy as well as mechanism.

So, then, the watch in motion establishes to the observer two conclusions: one, that thought, contrivance, and design have been employed in the forming, proportioning, and arranging of its parts; and that whoever or wherever he be, or were, such a contriver there is, or was: the other, that force or power distinct from mechanism is at this present time acting upon it. If I saw a hand-mill even at rest, I should see contrivance; but if I saw it grinding, I should be assured that a hand was at the windlass, though in another room. It is the same in nature. In the works of nature we trace mechanism; and this alone proves contrivance; but living, active, moving, productive nature, proves also the exertion of a power at the centre; for wherever the power resides, may be denominated the centre.

The intervention and disposition of what are called '*second causes*' fall under the same observation. This disposition is or is not mechanism, according as we can or cannot trace it by our senses and means of examination. That is all the difference there is; and it is a difference which respects our faculties, not the things themselves. Now where the order of second causes is mechanical, what is here said of mechanism strictly applies to it. But it would be always mechanism (natural chemistry, for instance, would be mechanism) if our senses were acute enough to descry it. Neither mechanism, therefore, in the works of nature, nor the intervention of what are called second causes (for I think that they are the same thing), excuses the necessity of an agent distinct from both.

If, in tracing these causes, it be said that we find certain general properties of matter which have nothing in them that bespeaks intelligence, I answer that still the *managing* of these properties, the pointing and directing them to the uses which we see made of them, demands intelligence in the highest degree. For example, suppose animal secretions to be elective attractions, and

that such and such attractions universally belong to such and such substances; in all which there is no intellect concerned; still the choice and collocation of these substances, the fixing upon right substances, and disposing them in right places, must be an act of intelligence. What mischief would follow were there a single transposition of the secretory organs—a single mistake in arranging the glands which compose them!

There may be many second causes, and many courses of second causes, one behind another, between what we observe of nature and the Deity: but there must be intelligence somewhere, there must be more in nature than what we see; and amongst the things unseen, there must be an intelligent, designing Author. The philosopher beholds with astonishment the production of things around him. Unconscious particles of matter take their stations, and severally range themselves in an order so as to become collectively plants or animals—that is, organised bodies, with parts bearing strict and evident relation to one another, and to the utility of the whole: and it should seem that these particles could not move in any other way than as they do; for they testify not the smallest sign of choice, or liberty, or discretion. There may be particular intelligent beings guiding these motions in each case: or they may be the result of trains of mechanical dispositions, fixed beforehand by an intelligent appointment, and kept in action by a power at the centre. But in either case there must be intelligence.

The minds of most men are fond of what they call a *principle*, and of the appearance of simplicity, in accounting for phenomena. Yet this principle, this simplicity, resides merely in the *name;* which name, after all, comprises, perhaps, under it a diversified, multifarious, or progressive operation, distinguishable into parts. The power in organised bodies of producing bodies like themselves, is one of these principles. Give a philosopher this, and he can get on. But he does not reflect what this mode of production, this principle (if such he choose to call it) requires; how much it presupposes; what an apparatus of instruments, some of which are strictly mechanical, is necessary to its success; what a train it includes of operations and changes, one succeeding another, one related to another, one ministering to another; all advancing by intermediate, and frequently by sensible, steps to their ultimate result! Yet because the whole of this complicated action is wrapped up in a single term—*generation*—we are to set it down as an elementary principle; and to suppose that, when we have resolved the things which we see into this principle, we have sufficiently accounted for their origin without the necessity of a designing, intelligent Creator. The truth is, generation is not a principle, but a *process*. We might as well call the casting of metals a principle; we might, so far as appears to me, as well

call spinning and weaving principles: and then, referring the texture of cloths, the fabric of muslins and calicoes, the patterns of diapers and damasks, to these as principles, pretend to dispense with intention, thought, and contrivance on the part of the artist; or to dispense, indeed, with the necessity of any artist at all, either in the manufacturing of the article, or in the fabrication of the machinery by which the manufacture was carried on.

And after all, how, or in what sense, is it true that animals produce their *like?* A butterfly, with a proboscis instead of a mouth, with four wings and six legs, produces a hairy caterpillar, with jaws, and teeth, and fourteen feet. A frog produces a tadpole. A black beetle, with gauze wings and a crusty covering, produces a white, smooth, soft worm; an ephemeron-fly, a cod-bait maggot. These, by a progress through different stages of life, and action, and enjoyment (and in each state provided with implements and organs appropriated to the temporary nature which they bear), arrive at last at the form and fashion of the parent animal. But all this is process, not principle; and proves, moreover, that the property of animated bodies of producing their like, belongs to them, not as a primordial property, not by any blind necessity in the nature of things, but as the effect of economy, wisdom, and design; because the property itself assumes diversities, and submits to deviations dictated by intelligible utilities, and serving distinct purposes of animal happiness.

The opinion which would consider 'generation' as a *principle* in nature, and which would assign this principle as the cause, or endeavour to satisfy our minds with such a cause, of the existence of organised bodies, is confuted, in my judgment, not only by every mark of contrivance discoverable in those bodies, for which it gives us no contriver, offers no account whatever, but also by the farther consideration that things generated possess a clear relation to things *not* generated. If it were merely one part of a generated body bearing a relation to another part of the same body, as the mouth of an animal to the throat, the throat to the stomach, the stomach to the intestines, those to the recruiting of the blood, and by means of the blood to the nourishment of the whole frame; or if it were only one generated body bearing a relation to another generated body, as the sexes of the same species to each other, animals of prey to their prey, herbivorous and granivorous animals to the plants or seeds upon which they feed—it might be contended that the whole of this correspondency was attributable to generation, the common origin from which these substances proceeded. But what shall we say to agreements which exist between things generated and things *not generated?* Can it be doubted, was it ever doubted, but that the *lungs of animals* bear a relation to the *air*, as a permanently elastic

fluid? They act in it and by it; they cannot act without it. Now if generation produced the animal, it did not produce the air: yet their properties correspond. The *eye* is made for *light*, and light for the eye. The eye would be of no use without light, and light perhaps of little without eyes; yet one is produced by generation, the other not. The *ear* depends upon *undulations* of air. Here are two sets of motions: first, of the pulses of the air; secondly, of the drum, bones, and nerves of the ear; sets of motions bearing an evident reference to each other: yet the one, and the apparatus for the one, produced by the intervention of generation; the other altogether independent of it.

If it be said that the air, the light, the elements, the world itself, is *generated;* I answer that I do not comprehend the proposition. If the term mean anything similar to what it means when applied to plants or animals, the proposition is certainly without proof; and I think draws as near to absurdity as any proposition can do which does not include a contradiction in its terms. I am at a loss to conceive how the formation of the world can be compared to the generation of an animal. If the term generation signify something quite different from what it signifies on ordinary occasions, it may, by the same latitude, signify anything. In which case a word or phrase taken from the language of Otaheite, would convey as much theory concerning the origin of the universe as it does to talk of its being generated.

We know a cause (intelligence) adequate to the appearances which we wish to account for; we have this cause continually producing similar appearances; yet rejecting this cause, the sufficiency of which we know, and the action of which is constantly before our eyes, we are invited to resort to suppositions destitute of a single fact for their support, and confirmed by no analogy with which we are acquainted. Were it necessary to inquire into the *motives* of men's opinions, I mean their motives separate from their arguments, I should almost suspect, that because the proof of a Deity drawn from the constitution of nature is not only popular, but vulgar (which may arise from the cogency of the proof, and be indeed its highest recommendation), and because it is a species almost of *puerility* to take up with it; for these reasons, minds which are habitually in search of invention and originality feel a resistless inclination to strike off into other solutions and other expositions. The truth is, that many minds are not so indisposed to anything which can be offered to them, as they are to the *flatness* of being content with common reasons; and, what is most to be lamented, minds conscious of superiority are the most liable to this repugnancy.

The suppositions here alluded to all agree in one character: they all endeavour to dispense with the necessity in nature of a particular, personal intelligence—that is to say, with the

exertion of an intending, contriving mind, in the structure and formation of the organised constitutions which the world contains. They would resolve all productions into *unconscious* energies, of a like kind, in that respect, with attraction, magnetism, electricity, &c. without anything further.

In this the old system of atheism and the new agree. And I much doubt whether the new schemes have advanced anything upon the old, or done more than changed the terms of the nomenclature. For instance, I could never see the difference between the antiquated system of atoms and Buffon's organic molecules. This philosopher, having made a planet by knocking off from the sun a piece of melted glass, in consequence of the stroke of a comet; and having set it in motion by the same stroke, both round its own axis and the sun, finds his next difficulty to be, how to bring plants and animals upon it. In order to solve this difficulty, we are to suppose the universe replenished with particles endowed with life, but without organisation or senses of their own; and endowed also with a tendency to marshal themselves into organised forms.* The concourse of these particles, by virtue of this tendency, but without intelligence, will, or direction (for I do not find that any of these qualities are ascribed to them), has produced the living forms which we now see.

Very few of the conjectures which philosophers hazard upon these subjects have more of pretension in them than the challenging you to show the direct impossibility of the hypothesis. In

* [A great sensation was excited some years since in the philosophical world by an eminent naturalist's (Mr Brown) announcement of the discovery of the existence of active molecules, or animated particles, not in organised matter, but in *minerals*, and other substances hitherto supposed to be void of all vitality. On the repetition, however, of Mr Brown's experiments by other persons, it appeared that that gentleman had come to his conclusions too hastily. Mr Bakewell, for example, was one of the persons led to inquire into this subject, and after examining many pounded minerals, he satisfied himself that no molecules existed, but that Mr Brown had mistaken the vibrations arising from extraneous causes for animation in the particles. The experiments were made by mixing a small portion of the powdered mineral with a drop of distilled water. Mr Bakewell was at first deceived by the appearance of motion in the particles, but on observing the increased agitation caused by his breathing, and even the pulsation of his body, when his hand touched the table, he became convinced that external causes were the sole cause of the motions. In London, he observes, there is no possibility of avoiding the effects of vibration, as may be seen when particles of dust fall into a basin of mercury. Were there a possibility of keeping the drop of water *perfectly steady*, the particles, he is convinced, would be quiescent. We are disposed to think Mr Bakewell in the right, and that Mr Brown's discovery is founded on a deception. If it should be otherwise, how stupendous are the views of nature which it opens! Life everywhere —even in the stones we tread! Mr Cross's experiments, in which he succeeded in evolving animals by electrical agency from siliceous solutions, may be held to bear on this subject; but we are not aware that he regards all the particles of minerals as animated, as Mr Brown supposed. Mr Cross, we believe, only conceived that he had revived vitality in animalcular germs which had lain dormant for ages. Man's opinions have yet to be matured by experience on these points.]

the present example, there seemed to be a positive objection to the whole scheme upon the very face of it; which was, that if the case were as here represented, *new* combinations ought to be perpetually taking place—new plants and animals, or organised bodies which were neither, ought to be starting up before our eyes every day. For this, however, our philosopher has an answer. Whilst so many forms of plants and animals are already in existence, and consequently so many 'internal moulds,' as he calls them, are prepared and at hand, the organic particles run into these moulds, and are employed in supplying an accession of substance to them, as well for their growth as for their propagation. By which means, things keep their ancient course. But, says the same philosopher, should any general loss or destruction of the present constitution of organised bodies take place, the particles, for want of 'moulds' into which they might enter, would run into different combinations, and replenish the waste with new species of organised substances.

Is there any history to countenance this notion? Is it known that any destruction has been so repaired?—any desert thus repeopled?

So far as I remember, the only natural appearance mentioned by our author, by way of fact whereon to build his hypothesis, is the formation of *worms* in the intestines of animals, which is here ascribed to the coalition of superabundant organic particles, floating about in the first passages; and which have combined themselves into these simple animal forms, for want of internal moulds, or of vacancies in those moulds, into which they might be received. The thing referred to is rather a species of facts than a single fact; as some other cases may, with equal reason, be included under it. But to make it a fact at all, or in any sort applicable to the question, we must begin with asserting an *equivocal* generation, contrary to analogy, and without necessity—contrary to an analogy which accompanies us to the very limits of our knowledge or inquiries; for wherever, either in plants or animals, we are able to examine the subject, we find procreation from a parent form: without necessity, for I apprehend that it is seldom difficult to suggest methods by which the eggs, or spawn, or yet invisible rudiments of these vermin, may have obtained a passage into the cavities in which they are found.* Add to this, that their *constancy to their species*, which, I believe, is as regular in these as in the other vermes, decides the question against our philosopher, if in truth any question remained upon the subject.

* I trust I may be excused for not citing, as another fact which is to confirm the hypothesis, a grave assertion of this writer, that the branches of trees upon which the stag feeds break out again in his horns. Such *facts* merit no discussion.

Lastly, these wonder-working instruments, these 'internal moulds,' what are they after all?—what, when examined, but a name without signification; unintelligible, if not self-contradictory; at the best differing in nothing from the 'essential forms' of the Greek philosophy? One short sentence of Buffon's work exhibits his scheme as follows:—'When this nutritious and prolific matter, which is diffused throughout all nature, passes through the *internal mould* of an animal or vegetable, and finds a proper matrix or receptacle, it gives rise to an animal or vegetable of the same species.' Does any reader annex a meaning to the expression 'internal mould' in this sentence? Ought it then to be said, that though we have little notion of an internal mould, we have not much more of a designing mind? The very contrary of this assertion is the truth. When we speak of an artificer or an architect, we talk of what is comprehensible to our understanding and familiar to our experience. We use no other terms than what refer us for their meaning to our consciousness and observation—what express the constant objects of both; whereas names, like that we have mentioned, refer us to nothing; excite no idea; convey a sound to the ear, but I think do no more.

Another system, which has lately been brought forward, and with much ingenuity, is that of *appetencies*. The principle, and the short account of the theory, is this: pieces of soft, ductile matter, being endued with propensities or appetencies for particular actions, would, by continual endeavours, carried on through a long series of generations, work themselves gradually into suitable forms, and at length acquire, though perhaps by obscure and almost imperceptible improvements, an organisation fitted to the action which their respective propensities led them to exert. A piece of animated matter, for example, that was endued with a propensity to *fly*, though ever so shapeless, though no other, we will suppose, than a round ball to begin with, would, in a course of ages—if not in a million of years, perhaps in a hundred millions of years (for our theorists, having eternity to dispose of, are never sparing in time)—acquire *wings*. The same tendency to locomotion in an aquatic animal, or rather in an animated lump which might happen to be surrounded by water, would end in the production of *fins:* in a living substance confined to the solid earth, would put out *legs* and *feet;* or if it took a different turn, would break the body into ringlets, and conclude by *crawling* upon the ground.

Although I have introduced the mention of this theory into this place, I am unwilling to give to it the name of an *atheistic* scheme, for two reasons: first, because, so far as I am able to understand it, the original propensities, and the numberless varieties of them (so different, in this respect, from the laws of mechanical nature, which are few and simple), are, in the plan itself, attributed to

the ordination and appointment of an intelligent and designing Creator; secondly, because, likewise, that large postulatum, which is all along assumed and presupposed—the faculty in living bodies of producing other bodies organised like themselves—seems to be referred to the same cause, at least is not attempted to be accounted for by any other. In one important respect, however, the theory before us coincides with atheistic systems—namely, that, in the formation of plants and animals, in the structure and use of their parts, it does away with final causes. Instead of the parts of a plant or animal, or the particular structure of the parts, having been intended for the action or the use to which we see them applied, according to this theory, they have themselves grown out of that action, sprung from that use. The theory, therefore, dispenses with that which we insist upon—the necessity, in each particular case, of an intelligent designing mind for the contriving and determining of the forms which organised bodies bear. Give our philosopher these appetencies; give him a portion of living irritable matter (a nerve, or the clipping of a nerve) to work upon; give also to his incipient or progressive forms the power, in every stage of their alteration, of propagating their like; and, if he is to be believed, he could replenish the world with all the vegetable and animal productions which we at present see in it.

The scheme under consideration is open to the same objection with other conjectures of a similar tendency—namely, a total defect of evidence. No changes, like those which the theory requires, have ever been observed. All the changes in Ovid's Metamorphoses might have been effected by these appetencies, if the theory were true: yet not an example, nor the pretence of an example, is offered of a single change being known to have taken place. Nor is the order of generation obedient to the principle upon which this theory is built. The mammæ* of the male have not vanished by inusitation; *nec curtorum, per multa sæcula, Judæorum propagini deest præputium.* It is easy to say, and it has been said, that the alterative process is too slow to be perceived; that it has been carried on through tracts of immeasurable time; and that the present order of things is the result of a gradation of which no human record can trace the steps. It is easy to say this; and yet it is still true that the hypothesis remains destitute of evidence.

The *analogies* which have been alleged are of the following kind: the *bunch* of a camel is said to be no other than the effect of carrying burdens; a service in which the species has been em-

* I confess myself totally at a loss to guess at the reason, either final or efficient, for this part of the animal frame, unless there be some foundation for an opinion, of which I draw the hint from a paper of Mr Everard Home (Phil. Transact. 1799, p. 2)—namely, that the mammæ of the fœtus may be formed before the sex is determined.

ployed from the most ancient times of the world. The first race, by the daily loading of the back, would probably find a small grumous tumour to be formed in the flesh of that part. The next progeny would bring this tumour into the world with them. The life to which they were destined would increase it. The cause which first generated the tubercle being continued, it would go on, through every succession, to augment its size, till it attained the form and the bulk under which it now appears. This may serve for one instance; another, and that also of the passive sort, is taken from certain species of birds. Birds of the *crane* kind, as the crane itself, the heron, bittern, stork, have in general their thighs bare of feathers. This privation is accounted for from the habit of wading in water, and from the effect of that element to check the growth of feathers upon these parts: in consequence of which, the health and vegetation of the feathers declined through each generation of the animal; the tender down, exposed to cold and wetness, became weak, and thin, and rare, till the deterioration ended in the result which we see, of absolute nakedness. I will mention a third instance, because it is drawn from an active habit, as the two last were from passive habits; and that is the *pouch* of the pelican. The description which Goldsmith gives of this organ is as follows:—'From the lower edges of the under chap hangs a bag, reaching from the whole length of the bill to the neck, which is said to be capable of containing fifteen quarts of water. This bag the bird has a power of wrinkling up into the hollow of the under chap. When the bag is empty, it is not seen; but when the bird has fished with success, it is incredible to what an extent it is often dilated. The first thing the pelican does in fishing is to fill the bag; and then it returns to digest its burden at leisure. The bird preys upon the large fishes, and hides them by dozens in its pouch. When the bill is opened to its widest extent, a person may run his head into the bird's mouth, and conceal it in this monstrous pouch, thus adapted for very singular purposes.' Now this extraordinary conformation is nothing more, say our philosophers, than the result of habit; not of the habit or effort of a single pelican, or of a single race of pelicans, but of a habit perpetuated through a long series of generations. The pelican soon found the conveniency of reserving in its mouth, when its appetite was glutted, the remainder of its prey, which is fish. The fulness produced by this attempt of course stretched the skin which lies between the under chaps, as being the most yielding part of the mouth. Every distension increased the cavity. The original bird, and many generations which succeeded him, might find difficulty enough in making the pouch answer this purpose; but future pelicans, entering upon life with a pouch derived from their progenitors, of considerable capacity, would more readily accelerate its advance to

perfection, by frequently pressing down the sac with the weight of fish which it might now be made to contain.

These, or of this kind, are the analogies relied upon. Now, in the first place, the instances themselves are unauthenticated by testimony; and in theory, to say the least of them, open to great objections. Who ever read of camels without bunches, or with bunches less than those with which they are at present usually formed? A bunch, not unlike the camel's, is found between the shoulders of the buffalo; of the origin of which it is impossible to give the account here given. In the second example—Why should the application of water, which appears to promote and thicken the growth of feathers upon the bodies and breasts of geese and swans, and other water-fowls, have divested of this covering the thighs of cranes? The third instance, which appears to me as plausible as any that can be produced, has this against it, that it is a singularity restricted to the species; whereas, if it had its commencement in the cause and manner which have been assigned, the like conformation might be expected to take place in other birds which fed upon fish. How comes it to pass that the pelican alone was the inventress, and her descendants the only inheritors, of this curious resource?

But it is the less necessary to controvert the instances themselves, as it is a straining of analogy beyond all limits of reason and credibility to assert that birds, and beasts, and fish, with all their variety and complexity of organisation, have been brought into their forms, and distinguished into their several kinds and natures, by the same process (even if that process could be demonstrated, or had it ever been actually noticed) as might seem to serve for the gradual generation of a camel's bunch, or a pelican's pouch.

The solution, when applied to the works of nature *generally*, is contradicted by many of the phenomena, and totally inadequate to others. The *ligaments* or strictures by which the tendons are tied down at the angles of the joints, could by no possibility be formed by the motion or exercise of the tendons themselves; by any appetency exciting these parts into action; or by any tendency arising therefrom. The tendency is all the other way; the *conatus* in constant opposition to them. Length of time does not help the case at all, but the reverse. The *valves* also in the blood-vessels could never be formed in the manner which our theorist proposes. The blood, in its right and natural course, has no tendency to form them. When obstructed or refluent, it has the contrary. These parts could not grow out of their use, though they had eternity to grow in.

The *senses* of animals appear to me altogether incapable of receiving the explanation of their origin which this theory affords. Including under the word 'sense' the organ and the perception,

we have no account of either. How will our philosopher get at *vision*, or make an eye? How should the blind animal affect sight, of which blind animals, we know, have neither conception nor desire? Affecting it, by what operation of its will, by what endeavour to see, could it so determine the fluids of its body as to inchoate the formation of an eye?—or, suppose the eye formed, would the perception follow. The same of the other senses. And this objection holds its force, ascribe what you will to the hand of time, to the power of habit, to changes too slow to be observed by man, or brought within any comparison which he is able to make of past things with the present: concede what you please to these arbitrary and unattested suppositions, how will they help you? Here is no inception. No laws, no course, no powers of nature which prevail at present, nor any analogous to these, would give commencement to a new sense. And it is in vain to inquire how that might proceed which could never *begin*.

I think the senses to be the most inconsistent with the hypothesis before us of any part of the animal frame. But other parts are sufficiently so. The solution does not apply to the parts of animals which have little in them of motion. If we could suppose joints and muscles to be gradually formed by action and exercise, what action or exercise could form a skull, or fill it with brains? No effort of the animal could determine the clothing of its skin. What *conatus* could give prickles to the porcupine or hedgehog, or to the sheep its fleece?

In the last place, What do these appetencies mean when applied to plants? I am not able to give a signification to the term which can be transferred from animals to plants, or which is common to both. Yet a no less successful organisation is found in plants than what obtains in animals. A solution is wanted for one as well as the other.

Upon the whole, after all the schemes and struggles of a reluctant philosophy, the necessary resort is to a Deity. The marks of *design* are too strong to be gotten over. Design must have had a designer. That designer must have been a person. That person is GOD.

CHAPTER XXIV.

OF THE NATURAL ATTRIBUTES OF THE DEITY.

It is an immense conclusion, that there is a GOD—a perceiving, intelligent, designing Being—at the head of creation, and from whose will it proceeded. The *attributes* of such a Being, suppose *his* reality to be proved, must be adequate to the magnitude,

extent, and multiplicity of his operations: which are not only vast beyond comparison with those performed by any other power, but, so far as respects our conceptions of them, infinite, because they are unlimited on all sides. Yet the contemplation of a nature so exalted, however surely we arrive at the proof of its existence, overwhelms our faculties. The mind feels its powers sink under the subject. One consequence of which is, that from painful abstraction, the thoughts seek relief in sensible images; whence may be deduced the ancient, and almost universal, propensity to idolatrous substitutions. They are the resources of a labouring imagination. False religions usually fall in with the natural propensity; true religions, or such as have derived themselves from the true, resist it.

It is one of the advantages of the revelations which we acknowledge, that whilst they reject idolatry, with its many pernicious accompaniments, they introduce the Deity to human apprehension under an idea more personal, more determinate, more within its compass, than the theology of nature can do. And this they do by representing him exclusively under the relation in which he stands to ourselves; and, for the most part, under some precise character, resulting from that relation, or from the history of his providences. Which method suits the span of our intellects much better than the universality which enters into the idea of God as deduced from the views of nature. When, therefore, these representations are well founded in point of authority (for all depends upon that), they afford a condescension to the state of our faculties, of which they who have most reflected on the subject, will be the first to acknowledge the want and the value.

Nevertheless, if we be careful to imitate the documents of our religion, by confining our explanations to what concerns ourselves, and do not affect more precision in our ideas than the subject allows of, the several terms which are employed to denote the attributes of the Deity may be made, even in natural religion, to bear a sense consistent with truth and reason, and not surpassing our comprehension.

These terms are—omnipotence, omniscience, omnipresence, eternity, self-existence, necessary existence, spirituality.

'Omnipotence,' 'omniscience,' 'infinite' power, 'infinite' knowledge, are *superlatives;* expressing our conception of these attributes in the strongest and most elevated terms which language supplies. We ascribe power to the Deity under the name of 'omnipotence,' the strict and correct conclusion being, that a power which could create such a world as this is, must be, beyond all comparison, greater than any which we experience in ourselves, than any which we observe in other visible agents; greater also than any which we can want for our individual protection and

preservation, in the Being upon whom we depend. It is a power, likewise, to which we are not authorised, by our observation or knowledge, to assign any limits of space or duration.

Very much of the same sort of remark is applicable to the term 'omniscience,' infinite knowledge or infinite wisdom. In strictness of language, there is a difference between knowledge and wisdom; wisdom always supposing action, and action directed by it. With respect to the first—namely, *knowledge*—the Creator must know intimately the constitution and properties of the things which he created; which seems also to imply a foreknowledge of their action upon one another, and of their changes; at least so far as the same result from trains of physical and necessary causes. His omniscience also, as far as respects things present, is deducible from his nature, as an intelligent being, joined with the extent, or rather the universality, of his operations. Where he acts, he is; and where he is, he perceives. The *wisdom* of the Deity, as testified in the works of creation, surpasses all idea we have of wisdom, drawn from the highest intellectual operations of the highest class of intelligent beings with whom we are acquainted; and, which is of the chief importance to us, whatever be its compass or extent, which it is evidently impossible that we should be able to determine, it must be adequate to the conduct of that order of things under which we live. And this is enough. It is of very inferior consequence by what terms we express our notion, or rather our admiration, of this attribute. The terms which the piety and the usage of language have rendered habitual to us, may be as proper as any other. We can trace this attribute much beyond what is necessary for any conclusion to which we have occasion to apply it. The degree of knowledge and power requisite for the formation of created nature cannot, with respect to us, be distinguished from infinite.

The Divine 'omnipresence' stands, in natural theology, upon this foundation. In every part and place of the universe with which we are acquainted, we perceive the exertion of a power, which we believe, mediately or immediately, to proceed from the Deity. For instance, in what part or point of space that has ever been explored do we not discover attraction? In what regions do we not find light? In what accessible portion of our globe do we not meet with gravity, magnetism, electricity; together with the properties also, and powers of organised substances, of vegetable or of animated nature? Nay, further, we may ask, What kingdom is there of nature, what corner of space, in which there is anything that can be examined by us, where we do not fall upon contrivance and design? The only reflection, perhaps, which arises in our minds from this view of the world around us is, that the laws of nature everywhere prevail—that they are uniform and universal. But what do we mean by the laws of nature, or

by any law? Effects are produced by power, not by laws. A law cannot execute itself. A law refers us to an agent. Now an agency so general as that we cannot discover its absence, or assign the place in which some effect of its continued energy is not found, may, in popular language at least, and perhaps without much deviation from philosophical strictness, be called universal: and with not quite the same, but with no inconsiderable propriety, the person or being in whom that power resides, or from whom it is derived, may be taken to be *omnipresent*. He who upholds all things by his power, may be said to be everywhere present.

This is called a virtual presence. There is also what metaphysicians denominate an essential ubiquity; and which idea the language of Scripture seems to favour: but the former, I think, goes as far as natural theology carries us.

'Eternity' is a negative idea, clothed with a positive name. It supposes, in that to which it is applied, a present existence; and is the negation of a beginning or an end of that existence. As applied to the Deity, it has not been controverted by those who acknowledge a Deity at all. Most assuredly there never was a time in which nothing existed, because that condition must have continued. The universal *blank* must have remained; nothing could rise up out of it; nothing could ever have existed since; nothing could exist now. In strictness, however, we have no concern with duration prior to that of the visible world. Upon this article, therefore, of theology, it is sufficient to know that the Contriver necessarily existed before the contrivance.

'Self-existence' is another negative idea—namely, the negation of a preceding cause, as of a progenitor, a maker, an author, a creator.

'Necessary existence' means demonstrable existence.

'Spirituality' expresses an idea made up of a negative part and of a positive part. The negative part consists in the exclusion of some of the known properties of matter, especially of solidity, of the *vis inertiæ*, and of gravitation. The positive part comprises perception, thought, will, power, *action*, by which last term is meant the origination of motion; the quality, perhaps, in which resides the essential superiority of spirit over matter, 'which cannot move, unless it be moved; and cannot but move, when impelled by another.'* I apprehend that there can be no difficulty in applying to the Deity both parts of this idea.

* Bishop Wilkins's Principles of Natural Religion, p. 106.

CHAPTER XXV.

THE UNITY OF THE DEITY.

Of the 'Unity of the Deity,' the proof is the *uniformity* of plan observable in the universe. The universe itself is a system; each part either depending upon other parts, or being connected with other parts by some common law of motion, or by the presence of some common substance. One principle of gravitation causes a stone to drop towards the earth, and the moon to wheel round it. One law of attraction carries all the different planets about the sun. This philosophers demonstrate. There are also other points of agreement amongst them, which may be considered as marks of the identity of their origin and of their intelligent author. In all are found the conveniency and stability derived from gravitation. They all experience vicissitudes of days and nights, and changes of season. They all, at least Jupiter, Mars, and Venus, have the same advantages from their atmosphere as we have. In all the planets the axes of rotation are permanent. Nothing is more probable than that the same attracting influence, acting according to the same rule, reaches to the fixed stars; but if this be only probable, another thing is certain—namely, that the same element of light does. The light from a fixed star affects our eyes in the same manner, is refracted and reflected according to the same laws, as the light of a candle. The velocity of the light of the fixed stars is also the same as the velocity of the light of the sun, reflected from the satellites of Jupiter. The heat of the sun, in kind, differs nothing from the heat of a coal fire.

In our own globe the case is clearer. New countries are continually discovered, but the old laws of nature are always found in them; new plants, perhaps, or animals, but always in company with plants and animals which we already know, and always possessing many of the same general properties. We never get amongst such original, or totally different, modes of existence, as to indicate that we are come into the province of a different Creator, or under the direction of a different will. In truth, the same order of things attend us wherever we go. The elements act upon one another, electricity operates, the tides rise and fall, the magnetic needle elects its position in one region of the earth and sea as well as in another. One atmosphere invests all parts of the globe, and connects all; one sun illuminates; one moon exerts its specific attraction upon all parts. If there be a variety in natural effects—as, for example, in the tides of different seas—that very variety is the result of the same cause, acting under

different circumstances. In many cases this is proved; in all, is probable.

The inspection and comparison of *living* forms add to this argument examples without number. Of all large terrestrial animals, the structure is very much alike; their senses nearly the same; their natural functions and passions nearly the same; their viscera nearly the same both in substance, shape, and office; digestion, nutrition, circulation, secretion, go on in a similar manner in all; the great circulating fluid is the same; for I think no difference has been discovered in the properties of *blood*, from whatever animal it be drawn. The experiment of transfusion proves that the blood of one animal will serve for another. The *skeletons* also of the larger terrestrial animals show particular varieties, but still under a great general affinity. The resemblance is somewhat less, yet sufficiently evident, between quadrupeds and birds. They are all alike in five respects for one in which they differ.

In *fish*, which belong to another department, as it were, of nature, the points of comparison become fewer. But we never lose sight of our analogy: for example, we still meet with a stomach, a liver, a spine; with bile and blood; with teeth; with eyes (which eyes are only slightly varied from our own, and which variation, in truth, demonstrates not an interruption, but a continuance of the same exquisite plan; for it is the adaptation of the organ to the element—namely, to the different refraction of light passing into the eye out of a denser medium). The provinces also, themselves of water and earth, are connected by the species of animals which inhabit both; and also by a large tribe of aquatic animals, which closely resemble the terrestrial in their internal structure; I mean the cetaceous tribe, which have hot blood, respiring lungs, bowels, and other essential parts like those of land animals. This similitude, surely, bespeaks the same creation and the same Creator.

Insects and *shellfish* appear to me to differ from other classes of animals the most widely of any. Yet even here, beside many points of particular resemblance, there exists a general relation of a peculiar kind. It is the relation of inversion; the law of contrariety—namely, that whereas in other animals the bones to which the muscles are attached lie *within* the body, in insects and shellfish they lie on the *outside* of it. The shell of a lobster performs to the animal the office of a *bone*, by furnishing to the tendons that fixed basis or immovable fulcrum without which, mechanically, they could not act. The crust of an insect is its shell, and answers the like purpose. The shell also of an oyster stands in the place of a *bone*; the bases of the muscles being fixed to it in the same manner as in other animals they are fixed to the bones. All which (under wonderful varieties, indeed, and

adaptations of form) confesses an imitation, a remembrance, a carrying on of the same plan.

The observations here made are equally applicable to plants, but I think unnecessary to be pursued. It is a very striking circumstance, and alone sufficient to prove all which we contend for, that in this part likewise of organised nature we perceive a continuation of the *sexual* system.

Certain, however, it is, that the whole argument for the Divine unity goes no further than to a unity of counsel.

It may likewise be acknowledged that no arguments which we are in possession of exclude the ministry of subordinate agents. If such there be, they act under a presiding, a controlling will; because they act according to certain general restrictions, by certain common rules, and, as it should seem, upon a general plan; but still such agents, and different ranks, and classes, and degrees of them, may be employed.

CHAPTER XXVI.

THE GOODNESS OF THE DEITY.

The proof of the *Divine goodness* rests upon two propositions, each, as we contend, capable of being made out by observations drawn from the appearances of nature.

The first is, 'that in a vast plurality of instances in which contrivance is perceived, the design of the contrivance is *beneficial*.'

The second, 'that the Deity has superadded *pleasure* to animal sensations, beyond what was necessary for any other purpose, or when the purpose, so far as it was necessary, might have been effected by the operation of pain.'

First, 'In a vast plurality of instances in which contrivance is perceived, the design of the contrivance is *beneficial*.'

No production of nature displays contrivance so manifestly as the parts of animals; and the parts of animals have all of them, I believe, a real, and, with very few exceptions, all of them a known and intelligible subserviency to the use of the animal. Now when the multitude of animals is considered, the number of parts in each, their figure and fitness, the faculties depending upon them, the variety of species, the complexity of structure, the success, in so many cases, and felicity of the result, we can never reflect, without the profoundest adoration, upon the character of that Being from whom all these things have proceeded—we

cannot help acknowledging what an exertion of benevolence creation was—of a benevolence how minute in its care, how vast in its comprehension!

When we appeal to the parts and faculties of animals, and to the limbs and senses of animals in particular, we state, I conceive, the proper medium of proof for the conclusion which we wish to establish. I will not say that the insensible parts of nature are made solely for the sensitive parts; but this I say, that when we consider the benevolence of the Deity, we can only consider it in relation to sensitive being. Without this reference, or referred to anything else, the attribute has no object; the term has no meaning. Dead matter is nothing. The parts, therefore, especially the limbs and senses of animals, although they constitute, in mass and quantity, a small portion of the material creation, yet since they alone are instruments of perception, they compose what may be called the whole of visible nature, estimated with a view to the disposition of its author. Consequently, it is in *these* that we are to seek his character. It is by these that we are to prove that the world was made with a benevolent design.

Nor is the design abortive. It is a happy world after all. The air, the earth, the water, teem with delighted existence. In a spring noon, or a summer evening, on whichever side I turn my eyes, myriads of happy beings crowd upon my view. 'The insect youth are on the wing.' Swarms of new-born *flies* are trying their pinions in the air. Their sportive motions, their wanton mazes, their gratuitous activity, their continual change of place without use or purpose, testify their joy, and the exultation which they feel in their lately discovered faculties. A *bee* amongst the flowers in spring is one of the most cheerful objects that can be looked upon. Its life appears to be all enjoyment—so busy and so pleased: yet it is only a specimen of insect life with which, by reason of the animal being half domesticated, we happen to be better acquainted than we are with that of others. The *whole winged* insect tribe, it is probable, are equally intent upon their proper employments, and, under every variety of constitution, gratified, and perhaps equally gratified, by the offices which the Author of their nature has assigned to them. But the atmosphere is not the only scene of enjoyment for the insect race. Plants are covered with aphides, greedily sucking their juices, and constantly, as it should seem, in the act of sucking. It cannot be doubted but that this is a state of gratification: what else should fix them so close to the operation, and so long? Other species are *running about*, with an alacrity in their motions, which carries with it every mark of pleasure. Large patches of ground are sometimes half covered with these brisk and sprightly natures. If we look to what the *waters* produce, shoals of the fry of fish

frequent the margins of rivers, of lakes, and of the sea itself. These are so happy, that they know not what to do with themselves. Their attitudes, their vivacity, their leaps out of the water, their frolics in it (which I have noticed a thousand times with equal attention and amusement), all conduce to show their excess of spirits, and are simply the effects of that excess. Walking by the sea-side in a calm evening, upon a sandy shore, and with an ebbing tide, I have frequently remarked the appearance of a dark cloud, or rather very thick mist, hanging over the edge of the water, to the height perhaps of half a yard, and of the breadth of two or three yards, stretching along the coast as far as the eye could reach, and always retiring with the water. When this cloud came to be examined, it proved to be nothing else than so much space filled with young *shrimps*, in the act of bounding into the air from the shallow margin of the water, or from the wet sand. If any motion of a mute animal could express delight, it was this: if they had meant to make signs of their happiness, they could not have done it more intelligibly. Suppose, then, what I have no doubt of, each individual of this number to be in a state of positive enjoyment; what a sum, collectively, of gratification and pleasure have we here before our view!

The *young* of all animals appear to me to receive pleasure simply from the exercise of their limbs and bodily faculties, without reference to any end to be attained, or any use to be answered by the exertion. A child, without knowing anything of the use of language, is in a high degree delighted with being able to speak. Its incessant repetition of a few articulate sounds, or perhaps of the single word which it has learned to pronounce, proves this point clearly. Nor is it less pleased with its first successful endeavours to walk, or rather to run (which precedes walking), although entirely ignorant of the importance of the attainment to its future life, and even without applying it to any present purpose. A child is delighted with speaking, without having anything to say; and with walking, without knowing where to go. And prior to both these, I am disposed to believe that the waking hours of infancy are agreeably taken up with the exercise of vision, or perhaps, more properly speaking, with learning to see.

But it is not for youth alone that the great Parent of creation hath provided. Happiness is found with the purring cat no less than with the playful kitten; in the arm-chair of dozing age, as well as in either the sprightliness of the dance or the animation of the chase. To novelty, to acuteness of sensation, to hope, to ardour of pursuit, succeeds what is in no inconsiderable degree an equivalent for them all—'perception of ease.' Herein is the exact difference between the young and the old. The young are not happy but when enjoying pleasure; the old are happy when

free from pain. And this constitution suits with the degrees of animal power which they respectively possess. The vigour of youth was to be stimulated to action by impatience of rest; whilst to the imbecility of age, quietness and repose become positive gratifications. In one important respect the advantage is with the old. A state of ease is, generally speaking, more attainable than a state of pleasure. A constitution, therefore, which can enjoy ease, is preferable to that which can taste only pleasure. This same perception of ease oftentimes renders old age a condition of great comfort, especially when riding at its anchor after a busy or tempestuous life. It is well described by Rousseau to be the interval of repose and enjoyment between the hurry and the end of life. How far the same cause extends to other animal natures, cannot be judged of with certainty. The appearance of satisfaction with which most animals, as their activity subsides, seek and enjoy rest, affords reason to believe that this source of gratification is appointed to advanced life, under all or most of its various forms. In the species with which we are best acquainted —namely, our own—I am far, even as an observer of human life, from thinking that youth is its happiest season, much less the only happy one; as a Christian, I am willing to believe that there is a great deal of truth in the following representation given by a very pious writer as well as excellent man:* 'To the intelligent and virtuous, old age presents a scene of tranquil enjoyment, of obedient appetite, of well-regulated affections, of maturity in knowledge, and of calm preparation for immortality. In this serene and dignified state, placed as it were on the confines of two worlds, the mind of a good man reviews what is past with the complacency of an approving conscience; and looks forward with humble confidence in the mercy of God, and with devout aspirations towards his eternal and ever-increasing favour.'

What is seen in different stages of the same life, is still more exemplified in the lives of different animals. Animal enjoyments are infinitely *diversified*. The modes of life to which the organisation of different animals respectively determines them, are not only of various, but of opposite kinds. Yet each is happy in its own. For instance, animals of prey live much alone; animals of a milder constitution, in society. Yet the herring, which lives in shoals, and the sheep, which lives in flocks, are not more happy in a crowd, or more contented amongst their companions, than is the pike or the lion with the deep solitudes of the pool or the forest.

But it will be said that the instances which we have here brought forward, whether of vivacity or repose, or of apparent enjoyment derived from either, are picked and favourable in-

* Father's Instructions, by Dr Percival of Manchester, p. 317.

stances. We answer, first, that they are instances, nevertheless, which comprise large provinces of sensitive existence; that every case which we have described is the case of millions. At this moment, in every given moment of time, how many myriads of animals are eating their food, gratifying their appetites, ruminating in their holes, accomplishing their wishes, pursuing their pleasures, taking their pastimes! In each individual, how many things must go right for it to be at ease; yet how large a proportion out of every species is so in every assignable instant! Secondly, we contend, in the terms of our original proposition, that throughout the whole of life, as it is diffused in nature, and as far as we are acquainted with it, looking to the average of sensations, the plurality and the preponderancy is in favour of happiness by a vast excess. In our own species, in which perhaps the assertion may be more questionable than in any other, the prepollency of good over evil—of health, for example, and ease, over pain and distress—is evinced by the very notice which calamities excite. What inquiries does the sickness of our friends produce! what conversation their misfortunes! This shows that the common course of things is in favour of happiness; that happiness is the rule, misery the exception. Were the order reversed, our attention would be called to examples of health and competency, instead of disease and want.

One great cause of our insensibility to the goodness of the Creator is, the very *extensiveness* of his bounty. We prize but little what we share only in common with the rest, or with the generality of our species. When we hear of blessings, we think forthwith of successes, of prosperous fortunes, of honours, riches, preferments—that is, of those advantages and superiorities over others which we happen either to possess, or to be in pursuit of, or to covet. The common benefits of our nature entirely escape us. Yet these are the great things. These constitute what most properly ought to be accounted blessings of Providence; what alone, if we might so speak, are worthy of its care. Nightly rest and daily bread, the ordinary use of our limbs, and senses, and understandings, are gifts which admit of no comparison with any other. Yet because almost every man we meet with possesses these, we leave them out of our enumeration. They raise no sentiment; they move no gratitude. Now herein is our judgment perverted by our selfishness. A blessing ought, in truth, to be the *more* satisfactory—the bounty, at least, of the donor is rendered more conspicuous by its very diffusion, its commonness, its cheapness—by its falling to the lot, and forming the happiness, of the great bulk and body of our species, as well as of ourselves. Nay, even when we do not possess it, it ought to be matter of thankfulness that others do. But we have a different way of thinking. We court distinction. That is not the worst: we *see* nothing but

what has distinction to recommend it. This necessarily contracts our views of the Creator's beneficence within a narrow compass; and most unjustly. It is in those things which are so common as to be no distinction, that the amplitude of the Divine benignity is perceived.

But pain, no doubt, and privations, exist in numerous instances, and to a degree which, collectively, would be very great, if they were compared with any other thing than with the mass of animal fruition. For the application, therefore, of our proposition to that *mixed* state of things which these exceptions induce, two rules are necessary, and both, I think, just and fair rules. One is, that we regard those effects alone which are accompanied with proofs of intention; the other, that when we cannot resolve all appearances into benevolence of design, we make the few give place to the many; the little to the great; that we take our judgment from a large and decided preponderancy, if there be one.

I crave leave to transcribe into this place what I have said upon this subject in my Moral Philosophy:—

'When God created the human species, either he wished their happiness, or he wished their misery, or he was indifferent and unconcerned about either.

'If he had wished our misery, he might have made sure of his purpose by forming our senses to be so many sores and pains to us, as they are now instruments of gratification and enjoyment; or by placing us amidst objects so ill suited to our perceptions, as to have continually offended us, instead of ministering to our refreshment and delight. He might have made, for example, everything we tasted bitter; everything we saw loathsome; everything we touched a sting; every smell a stench; and every sound a discord.

'If he had been indifferent about our happiness or misery, we must impute to our good fortune (as all design by this supposition is excluded) both the capacity of our senses to receive pleasure, and the supply of external objects fitted to produce it.

'But either of these, and still more both of them, being too much to be attributed to accident, nothing remains but the first supposition—that God, when he created the human species, wished their happiness, and made for them the provision which he has made with that view and for that purpose.

'The same argument may be proposed in different terms—*thus:* Contrivance proves design; and the predominant tendency of the contrivance indicates the disposition of the designer. The world abounds with contrivances; and all the contrivances which we are acquainted with are directed to beneficial purposes. Evil no doubt exists, but is never, that we can perceive, the *object* of contrivance. Teeth are contrived to eat, not to ache; their aching

now and then is incidental to the contrivance, perhaps inseparable from it; or even, if you will, let it be called a defect in the contrivance—but it is not the object of it. This is a distinction which well deserves to be attended to. In describing implements of husbandry, you would hardly say of the sickle that it is made to cut the reaper's hand; though, from the construction of the instrument, and the manner of using it, this mischief often follows. But if you had occasion to describe instruments of torture or execution, this engine, you would say, is to extend the sinews, this to dislocate the joints, this to break the bones, this to scorch the soles of the feet. Here pain and misery are the very objects of the contrivance. Now nothing of this sort is to be found in the works of nature. We never discover a train of contrivance to bring about an evil purpose. No anatomist ever discovered a system of organisation calculated to produce pain and disease; or in explaining the parts of the human body, ever said this is to irritate; this to inflame; this duct is to convey the gravel to the kidneys; this gland to secrete the humour which forms the gout: if by chance he come at a part of which he knows not the use, the most he can say is, that it is useless; no one ever suspects that it is put there to incommode, to annoy, or to torment.'

The TWO CASES which appear to me to have the most of difficulty in them, as forming the most of the appearance of exception to the representation here given, are those of *venomous* animals, and of animals *preying* upon one another. These properties of animals, wherever they are found, must, I think, be referred to design; because there is, in all cases of the first, and in most cases of the second, an express and distinct organisation provided for the producing of them. Under the first head, the fangs of vipers, the sting of wasps and scorpions, are as clearly intended for their purpose as any animal structure is for any purpose the most incontestibly beneficial. And the same thing must, under the second head, be acknowledged of the talons and beak of birds, of the tusks, teeth, and claws of beasts of prey, of the shark's mouth, of the spider's web, and of numberless weapons of offence belonging to different tribes of voracious insects. We cannot, therefore, avoid the difficulty by saying that the effect was not intended. The only question open to us is—whether it be ultimately evil. From the confessed and felt imperfection of our knowledge, we ought to presume that there may be consequences of this economy which are hidden from us; from the benevolence which pervades the general designs of nature, we ought also to presume that these consequences, if they could enter into our calculation, would turn the balance on the favourable side. Both these I contend to be reasonable presumptions. Not reasonable presumptions, if these two cases were the only cases which nature presented to our observation; but reasonable presumptions under the reflection

that the cases in question are combined with a multitude of intentions, all proceeding from the same author, and all, except these, directed to ends of undisputed utility. Of the vindications, however, of this economy, which we are able to assign, such as most extenuate the difficulty, are the following:—

With respect to *venomous* bites and stings, it may be observed—

1. That the animal itself being regarded, the faculty complained of is *good:* being conducive, in all cases, to the defence of the animal; in some cases to the subduing of its prey; and in some probably to the killing of it when caught, by a mortal wound inflicted in the passage to the stomach, which may be no less merciful to the victim than salutary to the devourer. In the viper, for instance, the poisonous fang may do that which, in other animals of prey, is done by the crush of the teeth. Frogs and mice might be swallowed alive without it.

2. But it will be said that this provision, when it comes to the case of bites, deadly even to human bodies and to those of large quadrupeds, is greatly *overdone;* that it might have fulfilled its use, and yet have been much less deleterious than it is. Now I believe the case of bites which produce death in large animals (of stings I think there are none) to be very few. The experiments of the Abbé Fontana, which were numerous, go strongly to the proof of this point. He found that it required the action of five exasperated vipers to kill a dog of a moderate size; but that to the killing of a mouse or a frog a single bite was sufficient; which agrees with the use which we assign to the faculty. The abbé seemed to be of opinion that the bite even of the rattlesnake would not usually be mortal; allowing, however, that in certain particularly unfortunate cases—as when the puncture had touched some very tender part, pricked a principal nerve, for instance, or, as it is said, some more considerable lymphatic vessel—death might speedily ensue.

3. It has been, I think, very justly remarked concerning serpents, that whilst only a few species possess the venomous property, that property guards the whole tribe. The most innocuous snake is avoided with as much care as a viper. Now the terror with which large animals regard this class of reptiles is its protection; and this terror is found in the formidable revenge which a few of the number, compared with the whole, are capable of taking. The species of serpents described by Linnæus amount to two hundred and eighteen, of which thirty-two only are poisonous.

4. It seems to me that animal constitutions are provided not only for each element, but for each state of the elements—that is, for every climate, and for every temperature; and that part of the mischief complained of arises from animals (the human ani-

mal most especially) occupying situations upon the earth which do not belong to them, nor were ever intended for their habitation. The folly and wickedness of mankind, and necessities proceeding from these causes, have driven multitudes of the species to seek a refuge amongst burning sands, whilst countries blessed with hospitable skies, and with the most fertile soils, remain almost without a human tenant. We invade the territories of wild beasts and venomous reptiles, and then complain that we are infested by their bites and stings. Some accounts of Africa place this observation in a strong point of view. 'The deserts,' says Adanson, 'are entirely barren, except where they are found to produce serpents; and in such quantities, that some extensive plains are almost entirely covered with them.' These are the natures appropriated to the situation. Let them enjoy their existence; let them have their country. Surface enough will be left to man, though his numbers were increased a hundredfold, and left to him, where he might live exempt from these annoyances.

The SECOND CASE—namely, that of animals *devouring* one another—furnishes a consideration of much larger extent. To judge whether, as a general provision, this can be deemed an *evil*, even so far as we understand its consequences, which probably is a partial understanding, the following reflections are fit to be attended to:—

1. Immortality upon this earth is out of the question. Without death there could be no generation, no sexes, no parental relation —that is, as things are constituted—no animal happiness. The particular duration of life, assigned to different animals, can form no part of the objection; because, whatever that duration be, whilst it remains finite and limited, it may always be asked why it is no longer. The natural age of different animals varies from a single day to a century of years. No account can be given of this; nor could any be given, whatever other proportion of life had obtained amongst them.

The term, then, of life in different animals being the same as it is, the question is—What mode of taking it away is the best even for the animal itself?

Now, according to the established order of nature (which we must suppose to prevail, or we cannot reason at all upon the subject), the three methods by which life is usually put an end to are acute diseases, decay, and violence. The simple and natural life of *brutes* is not often visited by acute distempers; nor could it be deemed an improvement of their lot if they were. Let it be considered, therefore, in what a condition of suffering and misery a brute animal is placed, which is left to perish by *decay*. In human sickness or infirmity, there is the assistance of man's rational fellow-creatures, if not to alleviate his pains, at least to

minister to his necessities, and to supply the place of his own activity. A brute, in his wild and natural state, does everything for himself. When his strength, therefore, or his speed, or his limbs, or his senses, fail him, he is delivered over either to absolute famine, or to the protracted wretchedness of a life slowly wasted by the scarcity of food. Is it then to see the world filled with drooping, superannuated, half-starved, helpless, and unhelped animals that you would alter the present system of pursuit and prey?

2. Which system is also to them the spring of motion and activity on both sides. The pursuit of its prey forms the employment, and appears to constitute the pleasure, of a considerable part of the animal creation. The using of the means of defence, or flight, or precaution, forms also the business of another part. And even of this latter tribe, we have no reason to suppose that their happiness is much molested by their fears. Their danger exists continually; and in some cases they seem to be so far sensible of it, as to provide in the best manner they can against it; but it is only when the attack is actually made upon them that they appear to suffer from it. To contemplate the insecurity of their condition with anxiety and dread, requires a degree of reflection which (happily for themselves) they do not possess. A *hare*, notwithstanding the number of its dangers and its enemies, is as playful an animal as any other.

3. But to do justice to the question, the system of animal *destruction* ought always to be considered in strict connection with another property of animal nature—namely, *superfecundity*. They are countervailing qualities. One subsists by the correction of the other. In treating, therefore, of the subject under this view (which is, I believe, the true one), our business will be, first, to point out the advantages which are gained by the powers in nature of a superabundant multiplication; and then to show that these advantages are so many reasons for appointing that system of national hostilities which we are endeavouring to account for.

In almost all cases nature produces her supplies with profusion. A single cod-fish spawns in one season a greater number of eggs than all the inhabitants of England amount to. A thousand other instances of prolific generation might be stated, which, though not equal to this, would carry on the increase of the species with a rapidity which outruns calculation, and to an immeasurable extent. The advantages of such a constitution are two: first, that it tends to keep the world always full; whilst, secondly, it allows the proportion between the several species of animals to be differently modified, as different purposes require, or as different situations may afford for them room and food. Where this vast fecundity meets with a vacancy fitted to receive

the species, there it operates with its whole effect; there it pours in its numbers, and replenishes the waste. We complain of what we call the exorbitant multiplication of some troublesome insects; not reflecting that large portions of nature might be left void without it. If the accounts of travellers may be depended upon, immense tracts of forest in North America would be nearly lost to sensitive existence if it were not for *gnats*. 'In the thinly inhabited regions of America, in which the waters stagnate, and the climate is warm, the whole air is filled with crowds of these insects.' Thus it is, that where we looked for solitude and death-like silence, we meet with animation, activity, enjoyment—with a busy, a happy, and a peopled world. Again: hosts of *mice* are reckoned amongst the plagues of the north-east part of Europe; whereas vast plains in Siberia, as we learn from good authority, would be lifeless without them. The Caspian deserts are converted by their presence into crowded warrens. Between the Volga and the Yaik, and in the country of Hyrcania, the ground, says Pallas, is in many places *covered* with little hills, raised by the earth cast out in forming the burrows. Do we so envy these blissful abodes as to pronounce the fecundity by which they are supplied with inhabitants to be an evil; a subject of complaint, and not of praise? Further, by virtue of this same superfecundity, what we term destruction becomes almost instantly the parent of life. What we call blights are oftentimes legions of animated beings, claiming their portion in the bounty of nature. What corrupts the produce of the earth to us, prepares it for them. And it is by means of their rapid multiplication that they take possession of their pasture: a slow propagation would not meet the opportunity.

But in conjunction with the occasional use of this fruitfulness, we observe also that it allows the proportion between the several species of animals to be differently modified, as different purposes of utility may require. When the forests of America come to be cleared, and the swamps drained, our gnats will give place to other inhabitants. If the population of Europe should spread to the north and the east, the mice will retire before the husbandman and the shepherd, and yield their station to herds and flocks. In what concerns the human species, it may be a part of the scheme of Providence that the earth should be inhabited by a shifting, or perhaps a circulating population. In this economy, it is possible that there may be the following advantages:—When old countries are become exceedingly corrupt, simpler modes of life, purer morals, and better institutions may rise up in new ones, whilst fresh soils reward the cultivator with more plentiful returns. Thus the different portions of the globe come into use in succession as the residence of man; and in his absence entertain other guests, which, by their sudden multiplica-

tion, fill the chasm. In domesticated animals, we find the effect of their fecundity to be, that we can always command *numbers;* we can always have as many of any particular species as we please, or as we can support. Nor do we complain of its excess; it being much more easy to regulate abundance than to supply scarcity.

But then this *superfecundity*, though of great occasional use and importance, exceeds the ordinary capacity of nature to receive or support its progeny. All superabundance supposes destruction, or must destroy itself. Perhaps there is no species of terrestrial animals whatever which would not overrun the earth, if it were permitted to multiply in perfect safety; or of fish, which would not fill the ocean; at least if any single species were left to their natural increase without disturbance or restraint, the food of other species would be exhausted by their maintenance. It is necessary, therefore, that the effects of such prolific faculties be curtailed. In conjunction with other checks and limits, all subservient to the same purpose, are the *thinnings* which take place among animals by their action upon one another. In some instances we ourselves experience, very directly, the use of these hostilities. One species of insects rids us of another species, or reduces their ranks. A third species, perhaps, keeps the second within bounds; and birds or lizards are a fence against the inordinate increase by which even these last might infest us. In other more numerous, and possibly more important instances, this disposition of things, although less necessary or useful to us, and of course less observed by us, may be necessary and useful to certain other species, or even for the preventing of the loss of certain species from the universe—a misfortune which seems to be studiously guarded against. Though there may be the appearance of failure in some of the details of Nature's works, in her great purposes there never are. Her species never fail. The provision which was originally made for continuing the replenishment of the world, has proved itself to be effectual through a long succession of ages.

What further shows that the system of destruction amongst animals holds an express relation to the system of fecundity—that they are parts, indeed, of one compensatory scheme—is that in each species the fecundity bears a proportion to the smallness of the animal, to the weakness, to the shortness of its natural term of life, and to the dangers and enemies by which it is surrounded. An elephant produces but one calf; a butterfly lays six hundred eggs. Birds of prey seldom produce more than two eggs; the sparrow tribe and the duck tribe frequently sit upon a dozen. In the rivers, we meet with a thousand minnows for one pike; in the sea, a million of herrings for a single shark. Compensation obtains throughout. Defencelessness and devastation are repaired by fecundity.

We have dwelt the longer on these considerations, because the

subject to which they apply—namely, that of animals *devouring* one another—forms the chief, if not the only instance, in the works of the Deity of an economy, stamped by marks of design, in which the character of utility can be called in question. The case of *venomous* animals is of much inferior consequence to the case of prey, and in some degree is also included under it. To both cases it is probable that many more reasons belong than those of which we are in possession.

Our FIRST PROPOSITION, and that which we have hitherto been defending was, 'that in a vast plurality of instances in which *contrivance* is perceived, the design of the contrivance is beneficial.'

Our SECOND PROPOSITION is, 'that the Deity has added *pleasure* to animal sensations, beyond what was necessary for any other purpose, or when the purpose, so far as it was necessary, might have been effected by the operation of pain.'

This proposition may be thus explained: The capacities which, according to the established course of nature, are *necessary* to the support or preservation of an animal, however manifestly they may be the result of an organisation contrived for the purpose, can only be deemed an act or a part of the same will as that which decreed the existence of the animal itself; because, whether the creation proceeded from a benevolent or a malevolent being, these capacities must have been given if the animal existed at all. Animal properties, therefore, which fall under this description, do not strictly prove the goodness of God: they may prove the existence of the Deity; they may prove a high degree of power and intelligence; but they do not prove his goodness, forasmuch as they must have been found in any creation which was capable of continuance, although it is possible to suppose that such a creation might have been produced by a being whose views rested upon misery.

But there is a class of properties which may be said to be superadded from an intention expressly directed to happiness—an intention to give a happy existence distinct from the general intention of providing the means of existence; and that is, of capacities for pleasure, in cases wherein, so far as the conservation of the individual or of the species is concerned, they were not wanted, or wherein the purpose might have been secured by the operation of pain. The provision which is made of a variety of objects not necessary to life, and ministering only to our pleasures; and the properties given to the necessaries of life themselves, by which they contribute to pleasure as well as preservation, show a farther design than that of giving existence.*

* See this topic considered in Dr Balguy's Treatise upon the Divine Benevolence. This excellent author first, I think, proposed it; and nearly in the terms in which it is here stated. Some other observations also under this head are taken from that treatise.

A single instance will make all this clear. Assuming the necessity of food for the support of animal life, it is requisite that the animal be provided with organs fitted for the procuring, receiving, and digesting of its food. It may be also necessary that the animal be impelled by its sensations to exert its organs. But the pain of hunger would do all this. Why add pleasure to the act of eating?—sweetness and relish to food? Why a new and appropriate sense for the perception of the pleasure? Why should the juice of a peach, applied to the palate, affect the part so differently from what it does when rubbed upon the palm of the hand? This is a constitution which, so far as appears to me, can be resolved into nothing but the pure benevolence of the Creator. Eating is necessary; but the pleasure attending it is not necessary: and that this pleasure depends not only upon our being in possession of the sense of taste, which is different from every other, but upon a particular state of the organ in which it resides—a felicitous adaptation of the organ to the object—will be confessed by any one who may happen to have experienced that vitiation of taste which frequently occurs in fevers, when every taste is irregular, and every one bad.

In mentioning the gratifications of the palate, it may be said that we have made choice of a trifling example. I am not of that opinion. They afford a share of enjoyment to man; but to brutes, I believe that they are of very great importance. A horse at liberty passes a great part of his waking hours in eating. To the ox, the sheep, the deer, and other ruminating animals, the pleasure is doubled. Their whole time almost is divided between browsing upon their pasture and chewing their cud. Whatever the pleasure be, it is spread over a large portion of their existence. If there be animals, such as the lupous fish, which swallow their prey whole and at once, without any time, as it should seem, for either drawing out or relishing the taste in the mouth, is it an improbable conjecture that the seat of taste with them is in the stomach; or at least that a sense of pleasure, whether it be taste or not, accompanies the dissolution of the food in that receptacle, which dissolution in general is carried on very slowly? If this opinion be right, they are more than repaid for the defect of palate. The feast lasts as long as the digestion.

In seeking for argument, we need not stay to insist upon the comparative importance of our example; for the observation holds equally of all, or of three at least of the other senses. The necessary purposes of hearing might have been answered without harmony; of smell without fragrance; of vision without beauty. Now 'if the Deity had been indifferent about our happiness or misery, we must impute to our good fortune (as all design by this supposition is excluded) both the capacity of our senses to receive pleasure, and the supply of external objects fitted to

excite it. I allege these as *two* felicities, for they are different things, yet both necessary: the sense being formed, the objects which were applied to it might not have suited it; the objects being fixed, the sense might not have agreed with them. A coincidence is here required which no accident can account for. There are three possible suppositions upon the subject, and no more. The first, that the sense, by its original constitution, was made to suit the object: the second, that the object, by its original constitution, was made to suit the sense: the third, that the sense is so constituted as to be able, either universally, or within certain limits, by habit and familiarity, to render every object pleasant. Whichever of these suppositions we adopt, the effect evinces, on the part of the Author of nature, a studious benevolence. If the pleasures which we derive from any of our senses depend upon an original congruity between the sense and the properties perceived by it, we know by experience that the adjustment demanded, with respect to the qualities which were conferred upon the objects that surround us, not only choice and selection out of a boundless variety of possible qualities with which these objects might have been endued, but a *proportioning also of degree*, because an excess or defect of intensity spoils the perception as much almost as an error in the kind and nature of the quality. Likewise the degree of dulness or acuteness in the sense itself is no arbitrary thing; but in order to preserve the congruity here spoken of, requires to be in an exact or near correspondency with the strength of the impression. The dulness of the senses forms the complaint of old age. Persons in fevers, and I believe in most maniacal cases, experience great torment from their preternatural acuteness. An increased, no less than an impaired sensibility, induces a state of disease and suffering.

The doctrine of a specific congruity between animal senses and their objects, is strongly favoured by what is observed of insects in the election of their food. Some of these will feed upon one kind of plant or animal, and upon no other: some caterpillars upon the cabbage alone; some upon the black currant alone. The species of caterpillar which eats the vine, will starve upon the elder; nor will that which we find upon fennel touch the rose-bush. Some insects confine themselves to two or three kinds of plants or animals. Some, again, show so strong a preference, as to afford reason to believe that, though they may be driven by hunger to others, they are led by the pleasure of taste to a few particular plants alone; and all this, as it should seem, independently of habit or imitation.

But should we accept the third hypothesis, and even carry it so far as to ascribe everything which concerns the question to habit (as in certain species, the human species most particularly, there is reason to attribute something), we have then before us an ani-

mal capacity not less perhaps to be admired than the native congruities which the other scheme adopts. It cannot be shown to result from any fixed necessity in nature, that what is frequently applied to the senses should of course become agreeable to them. It is, so far as it subsists, a power of accommodation provided in these senses by the Author of their structure, and forms a part of their perfection.

In whichever way we regard the senses, they appear to be specific gifts, ministering not only to preservation but to pleasure. But what we usually call the *senses*, are probably themselves far from being the only vehicles of enjoyment, or the whole of our constitution which is calculated for the same purpose. We have many internal sensations of the most agreeable kind, hardly referable to any of the five senses. Some physiologists have holden that all secretion is pleasurable; and that the complacency which in health, without any external assignable object to excite it, we derive from life itself, is the effect of our secretions going on well within us. All this may be true: but if true, what reason can be assigned for it except the will of the Creator? It may reasonably be asked—Why is anything a pleasure? And I know no answer which can be returned to the question but that which refers it to appointment.

We can give no account whatever of our pleasures in the simple and original perception; and even when physical sensations are assumed, we can seldom account for them in the secondary and complicated shapes in which they take the name of diversions. I never yet met with a sportsman who could tell me in what the sport consisted; who could resolve it into its principle, and state that principle. I have been a great follower of fishing myself, and in its cheerful solitude have passed some of the happiest hours of a sufficiently happy life; but to this moment I could never trace out the source of the pleasure which it afforded me.

The 'quantum in rebus inane!' whether applied to our amusements or to our graver pursuits (to which, in truth, it sometimes equally belongs), is always an unjust complaint. If trifles engage, and if trifles make us happy, the true reflection suggested by the experiment is upon the tendency of nature to gratification and enjoyment; which is, in other words, the goodness of its Author towards his sensitive creation.

Rational natures also, as such, exhibit qualities which help to confirm the truth of our position. The degree of understanding found in mankind is usually much greater than what is necessary for mere preservation. The pleasure of choosing for themselves, and of prosecuting the object of their choice, should seem to be an original source of enjoyment. The pleasures received from things great, beautiful, or new, from imitation or from the liberal arts, are in some measure not only super-

added, but unmixed gratifications, having no pains to balance them.*

I do not know whether our attachment to *property* be not something more than the mere dictate of reason, or even than the mere effect of association. Property communicates a charm to whatever is the object of it. It is the first of our abstract ideas; it cleaves to us the closest and the longest. It endears to the child its plaything, to the peasant his cottage, to the landholder his estate. It supplies the place of prospect and scenery. Instead of coveting the beauty of distant situations, it teaches every man to find it in his own. It gives boldness and grandeur to plains and fens, tinge and colouring to clays and fallows.

All these considerations come in aid of our *second* proposition. The reader will now bear in mind what our two propositions were. They were, firstly, that in a vast plurality of instances in which contrivance is perceived, the design of the contrivance is beneficial: secondly, that the Deity has added pleasure to animal sensations beyond what was necessary for any other purpose; or when the purpose, so far as it was necessary, might have been effected by the operation of pain.

Whilst these propositions can be maintained, we are authorised to ascribe to the Deity the character of benevolence: and what is benevolence at all, must in him be *infinite* benevolence, by reason of the infinite—that is to say, the incalculably great number of objects upon which it is exercised.

Of the ORIGIN OF EVIL no universal solution has been discovered; I mean no solution which reaches to all cases of complaint. The most comprehensive is that which arises from the consideration of *general rules*. We may, I think, without much difficulty, be brought to admit the four following points: first, that important advantages may accrue to the universe from the order of nature proceeding according to general laws: secondly, that general laws, however well set and constituted, often thwart and cross one another: thirdly, that from these thwartings and crossings frequent particular inconveniences will arise: and fourthly, that it agrees with our observation to suppose that some degree of these inconveniences takes place in the works of nature. These points may be allowed; and it may also be asserted that the general laws with which we are acquainted are directed to beneficial ends. On the other hand, with many of these laws we are not acquainted at all, or we are totally unable to trace them in their branches and in their operation; the effect of which ignorance is, that they cannot be of importance to us as measures by which to regulate our conduct. The conservation

* Balguy on the Divine Benevolence.

of them may be of importance in other respects, or to other beings; but we are uninformed of their value or use; uninformed, consequently, when, and how far, they may or may not be suspended, or their effects turned aside, by a presiding and benevolent will, without incurring greater evils than those which would be avoided. The consideration therefore of general laws, although it may concern the question of the origin of evil very nearly (which I think it does), rests in views disproportionate to our faculties, and in a knowledge which we do not possess. It serves rather to account for the obscurity of the subject, than to supply us with distinct answers to our difficulties. However, whilst we assent to the above-stated propositions as principles, whatever uncertainty we may find in the application, we lay a ground for believing that cases of apparent evil, for which *we* can suggest no particular reason, are governed by reasons which are more general, which lie deeper in the order of second causes, and which on that account are removed to a greater distance from us.

The doctrine of *imperfections*, or, as it is called, of evils of imperfection, furnishes an account, founded, like the former, in views of universal nature. The doctrine is briefly this:—It is probable that creation may be better replenished by sensitive beings of different sorts, than by sensitive beings all of one sort. It is likewise probable that it may be better replenished by different orders of beings rising one above another in gradation, than by beings possessed of equal degrees of perfection. Now a gradation of such beings implies a gradation of imperfections. No class can justly complain of the imperfections which belong to its place in the scale, unless it were allowable for it to complain that a scale of being was appointed in nature; for which appointment there appear to be reasons of wisdom and goodness.

In like manner *finiteness*, or what is resolvable into finiteness, in inanimate subjects, can never be a just subject of complaint; because if it were ever so, it would be always so: we mean that we can never reasonably demand that things should be larger or more, when the same demand might be made whatever the quantity or number was.

And to me it seems that the sense of mankind has so far acquiesced in these reasons, as that we seldom complain of evils of this class when we clearly perceive them to be such. What I have to add, therefore, is, that we ought not to complain of some other evils which stand upon the same footing of vindication as evils of confessed imperfection. We never complain that the globe of our earth is too small; nor should we complain if it were even much smaller. But where is the difference to us between a less globe and part of the present being uninhabitable? The inhabitants of an island may be apt enough to murmur at the sterility

of some parts of it, against its rocks, or sands, or swamps; but no one thinks himself authorised to murmur simply because the island is not larger than it is. Yet these are the same griefs.

The above are the two metaphysical answers which have been given to this great question. They are not the worse for being metaphysical, provided they be founded (which I think they are) in right reasoning: but they are of a nature too wide to be brought under our survey, and it is often difficult to apply them in the detail. Our speculations, therefore, are perhaps better employed when they confine themselves within a narrower circle.

The observations which follow are of this more limited but more determinate kind.

Of *bodily pain*, the principal observation, no doubt, is that which we have already made, and already dwelt upon—namely, 'that it is seldom the object of contrivance; that when it is so, the contrivance rests ultimately in good.'

To which, however, may be added, that the annexing of pain to the means of destruction is a salutary provision, inasmuch as it teaches vigilance and caution: both give notice of danger, and excite those endeavours which may be necessary to preservation. The evil consequence which sometimes arises from the want of that timely intimation of danger which pain gives, is known to the inhabitants of cold countries by the example of frost-bitten limbs. I have conversed with patients who have lost toes and fingers by this cause. They have in general told me that they were totally unconscious of any local uneasiness at the time. Some I have heard declare, that whilst they were about their employment, neither their situation nor the state of the air was unpleasant. They felt no pain; they suspected no mischief; till, by the application of warmth, they discovered too late the fatal injury which some of their extremities had suffered. I say that this shows the use of pain, and that we stand in need of such a monitor. I believe also that the use extends further than we suppose, or can now trace; that to disagreeable sensations we, and all animals, owe, or have owed, many habits of action which are salutary, but which have become so familiar, as not easily to be referred to their origin.

PAIN also itself is not without its *alleviations*. It may be violent and frequent, but it is seldom both violent and long-continued; and its pauses and intermissions become positive pleasures. It has the power of shedding a satisfaction over intervals of ease, which I believe few enjoyments exceed. A man resting from a fit of the stone or gout, is for the time in possession of feelings which undisturbed health cannot impart. They may be dearly bought, but still they are to be set against the price: and indeed it depends upon the duration and urgency of the pain, whether

they be dearly bought or not. I am far from being sure that a man is not a gainer by suffering a moderate interruption of bodily ease for a couple of hours out of the four-and-twenty. Two very common observations favour this opinion: one is, that remissions of pain call forth, from those who experience them, stronger expressions of satisfaction and of gratitude towards both the author and the instruments of their relief, than are excited by advantages of any other kind; the second is, that the spirits of sick men do not sink in proportion to the acuteness of their sufferings, but rather appear to be roused and supported, not by pain, but by the high degree of comfort which they derive from its cessation, or even its subsidency, whenever that occurs; and which they taste with a relish that diffuses some portion of mental complacency over the whole of that mixed state of sensations in which disease has placed them.

In connection with bodily pain may be considered bodily *disease*, whether painful or not. Few diseases are fatal. I have before me the account of a dispensary in the neighbourhood, which states six years' experience as follows:—

Admitted,	6420
Cured,	5476
Dead,	234

And this I suppose nearly to agree with what other similar institutions exhibit. Now in all these cases some disorder must have been felt, or the patients would not have applied for a remedy; yet we see how large a proportion of the maladies which were brought forward have either yielded to proper treatment, or, what is more probable, ceased of their own accord. We owe these frequent recoveries, and where recovery does not take place, this patience of the human constitution under many of the distempers by which it is visited, to two benefactions of our nature. One is, that she works within certain limits; allows of a certain latitude within which health may be preserved, and within the confines of which it only suffers a graduated diminution. Different quantities of food, different degrees of exercise, different portions of sleep, different states of the atmosphere, are compatible with the possession of health. So likewise is it with the secretions and excretions, with many internal functions of the body, and with the state, probably, of most of its internal organs. They may vary considerably, not only without destroying life, but without occasioning any high degree of inconveniency. The other property of our nature, to which we are still more beholden, is its constant endeavour to restore itself, when disordered, to its regular course. The fluids of the body appear to possess a power of separating and expelling any noxious substance which may have mixed itself with them. This they do, in eruptive fevers,

by a kind of despumation, as Sydenham calls it, analogous in some measure to the intestine action by which fermenting liquors work the yeast to the surface. The solids, on their part, when their action is obstructed, not only resume that action as soon as the obstruction is removed, but they struggle with the impediment. They take an action as near to the true one as the difficulty and the disorganisation with which they have to contend will allow of.

Of *mortal* diseases, the great use is to reconcile us to death. The horror of death proves the value of life. But it is in the power of disease to abate, or even extinguish this horror; which it does in a wonderful manner, and oftentimes by a mild and imperceptible gradation. Every man who has been placed in a situation to observe it, is surprised with the change which has been wrought in himself, when he compares the view which he entertains of death upon a sick-bed, with the heart-sinking dismay with which he should some time ago have met it in health. There is no similitude between the sensations of a man led to execution, and the calm expiring of a patient at the close of his disease. Death to him is only the last of a long train of changes; in his progress through which, it is possible that he may experience no shocks or sudden transitions.

Death itself, as a mode of removal and of succession, is so connected with the whole order of our animal world, that almost everything in that world must be changed, to be able to do without it. It may seem likewise impossible to separate the fear of death from the enjoyment of life, or the perception of that fear from rational natures. Brutes are in a great measure delivered from all anxiety on this account by the inferiority of their faculties; or rather they seem to be armed with the apprehensions of death just sufficiently to put them upon the means of preservation, and no further. But would a human being wish to purchase this immunity at the expense of those mental powers which enable him to look forward to the future?

Death implies *separation:* and the loss of those whom we love must necessarily, so far as we can conceive, be accompanied with pain. To the brute creation, nature seems to have stepped in with some secret provision for their relief under the rupture of their attachments. In their instincts towards their offspring, and of their offspring to them, I have often been surprised to observe how ardently they love, and how soon they forget. The pertinacity of human sorrow (upon which time also at length lays its softening hand) is probably, therefore, in some manner connected with the qualities of our rational or moral nature. One thing, however, is clear—namely, that it is better that we should possess affections, the sources of so many virtues and so many joys, although they be exposed to the incidents of life, as well as the

interruptions of mortality, than, by the want of them, be reduced to a state of selfishness, apathy, and quietism.

Of other external evils (still confining ourselves to what are called physical or natural evils), a considerable part come within the scope of the following observation:—The great principle of human satisfaction is *engagement*. It is a most just distinction, which the late Mr Tucker has dwelt upon so largely in his works, between pleasures in which we are passive, and pleasures in which we are active. And I believe every attentive observer of human life will assent to his position, that however grateful the sensations may occasionally be in which we are passive, it is not these, but the latter class of our pleasures, which constitute satisfaction; which supply that regular stream of moderate and miscellaneous enjoyments in which happiness, as distinguished from voluptuousness, consists. Now for rational occupation, which is, in other words, for the very material of contented existence, there would be no place left, if either the things with which we had to do were absolutely impracticable to our endeavours, or if they were too obedient to our uses. A world furnished with advantages on one side, and beset with difficulties, wants, and inconveniences on the other, is the proper abode of free, rational, and active natures, being the fittest to stimulate and exercise their faculties. The very *refractoriness* of the objects they have to deal with contributes to this purpose. A world in which nothing depended upon ourselves, however it might have suited an imaginary race of beings, would not have suited mankind. Their skill, prudence, industry; their various arts, and their best attainments, from the application of which they draw, if not their highest, their most permanent gratifications, would be insignificant, if things could be either moulded by our volitions, or of their own accord conformed themselves to our views and wishes. Now it is in this refractoriness that we discern the seed and principle of *physical* evil, as far as it arises from that which is external to us.

Civil evils, or the evils of civil life, are much more easily disposed of than physical evils; because they are, in truth, of much less magnitude, and also because they result, by a kind of necessity, not only from the constitution of our nature, but from a part of that constitution which no one would wish to see altered. The case is this: mankind will in every country *breed up* to a certain point of distress. That point may be different in different countries or ages, according to the established usages of life in each. It will also shift upon the scale, so as to admit of a greater or less number of inhabitants, according as the quantity of provision, which is either produced in the country, or supplied to it from other countries, may happen to vary. But there must always be such a point, and the species will always breed up to it. The order of generation proceeds by something like a geometrical

progression. The increase of provision, under circumstances even the most advantageous, can only assume the form of an arithmetic series. Whence it follows, that the population will always overtake the provision, will pass beyond the line of plenty, and will continue to increase till checked by the difficulty of procuring subsistence. Such difficulty, therefore, along with its attendant circumstances, *must* be found in every old country; and these circumstances constitute what we call poverty, which necessarily imposes labour, servitude, restraint.

It seems impossible to people a country with inhabitants who shall be all easy in circumstances. For suppose the thing to be done, there would be such marrying and giving in marriage amongst them, as would in a few years change the face of affairs entirely; that is, as would increase the consumption of those articles which supplied the natural or habitual wants of the country, to such a degree of scarcity, as must leave the greater part of the inhabitants unable to procure them without toilsome endeavours, or out of the different kinds of these articles to procure any kind except that which was most easily produced. And this, in fact, describes the condition of the mass of the community in all countries—a condition unavoidably, as it should seem, resulting from the provision which is made in the human, in common with all animal constitutions, for the perpetuity and multiplication of the species.

It need not, however, dishearten any endeavours for the public service to know that population naturally treads upon the heels of improvement. If the condition of a people be meliorated, the consequence will be, either that the *mean* happiness will be increased, or a greater number partake of it; or, which is most likely to happen, that both effects will take place together. There may be limits fixed by nature to both, but they are limits not yet attained, nor even approached, in any country of the world.

And when we speak of limits at all, we have respect only to provisions for animal wants. There are sources, and means, and auxiliaries, and augmentations of human happiness, communicable without restriction of numbers; as capable of being possessed by a thousand persons as by one. Such are those which flow from a mild, contrasted with a tyrannic government, whether civil or domestic; those which spring from religion; those which grow out of a sense of security; those which depend upon habits of virtue, sobriety, moderation, order; those, lastly, which are found in the possession of well-directed tastes and desires, compared with the dominion of tormenting, pernicious, contradictory, unsatisfied, and unsatisfiable passions.

The *distinctions* of civil life are apt enough to be regarded as evils by those who sit under them; but in my opinion with very little reason.

In the first place, the advantages which the higher conditions of life are supposed to confer, bear no proportion in value to the advantages which are bestowed by nature. The gifts of nature always surpass the gifts of fortune. How much, for example, is activity better than attendance; beauty than dress; appetite, digestion, and tranquil bowels, than all the studies of cookery, or than the most costly compilation of forced or far-fetched dainties!

Nature has a strong tendency to equalisation. Habit, the instrument of nature, is a great leveller; the familiarity which it induces, taking off the edge both of our pleasures and our sufferings. Indulgences which are habitual, keep us in ease, and cannot be carried much farther. So that, with respect to the gratifications of which the senses are capable, the difference is by no means proportionable to the apparatus. Nay, so far as superfluity generates fastidiousness, the difference is on the wrong side.

It is not necessary to contend that the advantages derived from wealth are none (under due regulations they are certainly considerable), but that they are not greater than they ought to be. *Money* is the sweetener of human toil; the substitute for coercion; the reconciler of labour with liberty. It is, moreover, the stimulant of enterprise in all projects and undertakings, as well as of diligence in the most beneficial arts and employments. Now, did affluence, when possessed, contribute nothing to happiness, or nothing beyond the mere supply of necessaries, and the secret should come to be discovered, we might be in danger of losing great part of the uses which are at present derived to us through this important medium. Not only would the tranquillity of social life be put in peril, by the want of a motive to attach men to their private concerns, but the satisfaction which all men receive from success in their respective occupations, which collectively constitutes the great mass of human comfort, would be done away in its very principle.

With respect to *station*, as it is distinguished from riches, whether it confer authority over others, or be invested with honours which apply solely to sentiment and imagination, the truth is, that what is gained by rising through the ranks of life, is not more than sufficient to draw forth the exertions of those who are engaged in the pursuits which lead to advancement, and which in general are such as ought to be encouraged. Distinctions of this sort are subjects much more of competition than of enjoyment; and in that competition their use consists. It is not, as hath been rightly observed, by what the *Lord Mayor* feels in his coach, but by what the *apprentice* feels who gazes at him, that the public is served.

As we approach the summits of human greatness, the comparison of good and evil, with respect to personal comfort, becomes still more problematical, even allowing to ambition all its pleasures. The poet asks, 'What is grandeur, what is power?'

The philosopher answers, 'Constraint and plague: *et in maximâ quâque fortunâ minimum licere.*' [The higher the fortune, the greater the want of free-will and enjoyment.] One very common error misleads the opinion of mankind on this head—namely, that universally, authority is pleasant, submission painful. In the general course of human affairs, the very reverse of this is nearer to the truth. Command is anxiety, obedience ease.

Artificial distinctions sometimes promote real equality. Whether they be hereditary, or be the homage paid to office, or the respect attached by public opinion to particular professions, they serve to *confront* that grand and unavoidable distinction which arises from property, and which is most overbearing where there is no other. It is of the nature of property not only to be irregularly distributed, but to run into large masses. Public laws should be so constructed as to favour its diffusion as much as they can. But all that can be done by laws, consistently with that degree of government of his property which ought to be left to the subject, will not be sufficient to counteract this tendency. There must always, therefore, be the difference between rich and poor; and this difference will be the more grinding when no pretension is allowed to be set up against it.

So that the evils, if evils they must be called, which spring either from the necessary subordinations of civil life, or from the distinctions which have naturally, though not necessarily, grown up in most societies, so long as they are unaccompanied by privileges injurious or oppressive to the rest of the community, are such as may, even by the most depressed ranks, be endured with very little prejudice to their comfort.

The mischiefs of which mankind are the occasion to one another, by their private wickednesses and cruelties—by tyrannical exercises of power—by rebellions against just authority—by wars—by national jealousies and competitions operating to the destruction of third countries—or by other instances of misconduct, either in individuals or societies—are all to be resolved into the character of man as a *free agent*. Free agency, in its very essence, contains liability to abuse. Yet if you deprive man of his free agency, you subvert his nature. You may have order from him and regularity, as you may from the tides or the trade-winds, but you put an end to his moral character, to virtue, to merit, to accountableness, to the use indeed of reason: to which must be added the observation, that even the bad qualities of mankind have an origin in their good ones. The case is this: human passions are either necessary to human welfare, or capable of being made, and in a great majority of instances, in fact, made, conducive to its happiness. These passions are strong and general; and perhaps would not answer their purpose unless they were so. But strength and generality, when it is expedient that particular

circumstances should be respected, become, if left to themselves, excess and misdirection. From which excess and misdirection, the vices of mankind (the causes, no doubt, of much misery) appear to spring. This account, whilst it shows us the principle of vice, shows us at the same time the province of reason and of self-government; the want also of every support which can be procured to either from the aids of religion; and it shows this without having recourse to any native gratuitous malignity in the human constitution. Mr. Hume, in his posthumous Dialogues, asserts indeed of *idleness*, or aversion to labour (which he states to lie at the root of a considerable part of the evils which mankind suffer), that it is simply and merely bad. But how does he distinguish idleness from the love of ease? or is he sure that the love of ease in individuals is not the chief foundation of social tranquillity? It will be found, I believe, to be true, that in every community there is a large class of its members whose idleness is the best quality about them, being the corrective of other bad ones. If it were possible in every instance to give a right determination to industry, we could never have too much of it. But this is not possible, if men are to be free. And without this, nothing would be so dangerous as an incessant, universal, indefatigable activity. In the civil world, as well as in the material, it is the *vis inertiæ* which keeps things in their places.

NATURAL THEOLOGY has ever been pressed with this question —Why, under the regency of a supreme and benevolent Will, should there be in the world so much as there is of the appearance of *chance?*

The question, in its whole compass, lies beyond our reach; but there are not wanting, as in the origin of evil, answers which seem to have considerable weight in particular cases, and also to embrace a considerable number of cases.

I. There must be *chance* in the midst of design: by which we mean, that events which are not designed, necessarily arise from the pursuit of events which are designed. One man travelling to York meets another man travelling to London. Their meeting is by chance, is accidental, and so would be called and reckoned, though the journeys which produced the meeting were both of them undertaken with design and from deliberation. The meeting, though accidental, was nevertheless hypothetically necessary (which is the only sort of necessity that is intelligible): for if the two journeys were commenced at the time, pursued in the direction, and with the speed in which, and with which, they were in fact begun and performed, the meeting could not be avoided. There was not, therefore, the less necessity in it for its being by chance. Again, the rencounter might be most unfortunate, though the errands upon which each party set out upon his jour-

ney were the most innocent or the most laudable. The by-effect may be unfavourable, without impeachment of the proper purpose, for the sake of which the train, from the operation of which these consequences ensued, was put in motion. Although no cause acts without a good purpose, accidental consequences like these may be either good or bad.

II. The *appearance of chance* will always bear a proportion to the ignorance of the observer. The cast of a die as regularly follows the laws of motion as the going of a watch; yet because we can trace the operation of those laws through the works and movements of the watch, and cannot trace them in the shaking and throwing of the die (though the laws be the same, and prevail equally in both cases), we call the turning up of the number of the die *chance*, the pointing of the index of the watch, *machinery*, *order*, or by some name which excludes chance. It is the same in those events which depend upon the will of a free and rational agent. The verdict of a jury, the sentence of a judge, the resolution of an assembly, the issue of a contested election, will have more or less of the appearance of chance, might be more or less the subject of a wager, according as we were less or more acquainted with the reasons which influenced the deliberation. The difference resides in the information of the observer, and not in the thing itself; which, in all the cases proposed, proceeds from intelligence, from mind, from counsel, from design.

Now when this one cause of the appearance of chance—namely, the ignorance of the observer—comes to be applied to the operations of the Deity, it is easy to foresee how fruitful it must prove of difficulties, and of seeming confusion. It is only to think of the Deity, to perceive what variety of objects, what distance of time, what extent of space and action, his counsels may, or rather must, comprehend. Can it be wondered at, that of the purposes which dwell in such a mind as this, so small a part should be known to us? It is only necessary, therefore, to bear in our thought, that in proportion to the inadequateness of our information, will be the quantity in the world of apparent chance.

III. In a great variety of cases, and of cases comprehending numerous subdivisions, it appears, for many reasons, to be better that events rise up by *chance*, or, more properly speaking, with the appearance of chance, than according to any observable rule whatever. This is not seldom the case even in human arrangements. Each person's place and precedency in a public meeting may be determined by *lot*. Work and labour may be *allotted*. Tasks and burdens may be *allotted*:—

> ——Operumque laborem
> Partibus æquabat justis, aut *sorte* trahebat.
>
> [Each to a proper share of toil confined—
> By rule apportioned, or by *lot* assigned.]

Military service and station may be *allotted*. The distribution of provision may be made by *lot*, as it is in a sailors' mess; in some cases also the distribution of favours may be made by *lot*. In all these cases it seems to be acknowledged that there are advantages in permitting events to chance superior to those which would or could arise from regulation. In all these cases also, though events rise up in the way of chance, it is by appointment that they do so.

In other events, and such as are independent of human will, the reasons for this preference of uncertainty to rule appear to be still stronger. For example, it seems to be expedient that the period of human life should be *uncertain*. Did mortality follow any fixed rule, it would produce a security in those that were at a distance from it, which would lead to the greatest disorders; and a horror in those who approached it, similar to that which a condemned prisoner feels on the night before his execution: but, that death be uncertain, the young must sometimes die as well as the old. Also, were deaths never *sudden*, they who are in health would be too confident of life. The strong and the active, who want most to be warned and checked, would live without apprehension or restraint. On the other hand, were sudden deaths very frequent, the sense of constant jeopardy would interfere too much with the degree of ease and enjoyment intended for us, and human life be too precarious for the business and interests which belong to it. There could not be dependence either upon our own lives or the lives of those with whom we are connected, sufficient to carry on the regular offices of human society. The manner, therefore, in which death is made to occur, conduces to the purposes of admonition, without overthrowing the necessary stability of human affairs.

Disease being the forerunner of death, there is the same reason for its attacks coming upon us under the appearance of chance, as there is for uncertainty in the time of death itself.

The *seasons* are a mixture of regularity and chance. They are regular enough to authorise expectation, whilst their being in a considerable degree irregular, induces, on the part of the cultivators of the soil, a necessity for personal attendance, for activity, vigilance, precaution. It is this necessity which creates farmers; which divides the profit of the soil between the owner and the occupier; which, by requiring expedients, by increasing employment, and by rewarding expenditure, promotes agricultural arts and agricultural life, of all modes of life the best, being the most conducive to health, to virtue, to enjoyment. I believe it to be founded in fact, that where the soil is the most fruitful, and the seasons the most constant, there the condition of the cultivators of the earth is the most depressed. Uncertainty, therefore, has its use even to those who sometimes complain of it the most. Sea-

sons of scarcity themselves are not without their advantages. They call forth new exertions; they set contrivance and ingenuity at work; they give birth to improvements in agriculture and economy; they promote the investigation and management of public resources.

Again, there are strong intelligible reasons why there should exist in human society great disparity of *wealth* and *station;* not only as these things are acquired in different degrees, but at the first setting out of life. In order, for instance, to answer the various demands of civil life, there ought to be amongst the members of every civil society a diversity of education, which can only belong to an original diversity of circumstances. As this sort of disparity, which ought to take place from the beginning of life, must, *ex hypothesi*, be previous to the merit or demerit of the persons upon whom it falls, can it be better disposed of than by chance? *Parentage* is that sort of chance: yet it is the commanding circumstance which in general fixes each man's place in civil life, along with everything which appertains to its distinctions. It may be the result of a beneficial rule that the fortunes or honours of the father devolved upon the son; and, as it should seem, of a still more necessary rule, that the low or laborious condition of the parent be communicated to his family; but with respect to the successor himself, it is the drawing of a ticket in a lottery. Inequalities of fortune, therefore, at least the greatest part of them—namely, those which attend us from our birth, and depend upon our birth—may be left, as they are left, to *chance*, without any just cause for questioning the regency of a Supreme Disposer of events.

But not only the donation, when, by the necessity of the case, they must be gifts, but even the *acquirability* of civil advantages, ought perhaps in a considerable degree to lie at the mercy of chance. Some would have all the virtuous rich, or at least removed from the evils of poverty, without perceiving, I suppose, the consequence, that all the poor must be wicked. And how such a society could be kept in subjection to government has not been shown: for the poor—that is, they who seek their subsistence by constant manual labour—must still form the mass of the community; otherwise the necessary labour of life could not be carried on; the work would not be done, which the wants of mankind in a state of civilisation, and still more in a state of refinement, require to be done.

It appears to be also true that the exigencies of social life call not only for an original diversity of *external* circumstances, but for a mixture of different faculties, tastes, and tempers. Activity and contemplation, restlessness and quiet, courage and timidity, ambition and contentedness, not to say even indolence and dulness, are all wanted in the world; all conduce to the well going on of

human affairs, just as the rudder, the sails, and the ballast of a ship all perform their part in the navigation. Now since these characters require for their foundation different original talents, different dispositions, perhaps also different bodily constitutions; and since, likewise, it is apparently expedient that they be promiscuously scattered amongst the different classes of society, can the distribution of talents, dispositions, and the constitutions upon which they depend, be better made than by *chance?*

The *opposites* of apparent chance are constancy and sensible interposition; every degree of *secret* direction being consistent with it. Now of *constancy*, or of fixed and known rules, we have seen in some cases the inapplicability; and inconveniences which we do not see, might attend their application in other cases.

Of *sensible* interposition we may be permitted to remark, that a Providence always and certainly distinguishable, would be neither more nor less than miracles rendered frequent and common. It is difficult to judge of the state into which this would throw us. It is enough to say that it would cast us upon a quite different dispensation from that under which we live. It would be a total and radical change. And the change would deeply affect, or perhaps subvert, the whole conduct of human affairs. I can readily believe that, other circumstances being adapted to it, such a state might be better than our present state. It may be the state of other beings; it may be ours hereafter. But the question with which we are now concerned is—How far it would be consistent with our condition, supposing it in other respects to remain as it is? And in this question there seem to be reasons of great moment on the negative side. For instance, so long as bodily labour continues, on so many accounts, to be necessary for the bulk of mankind, any dependency upon supernatural aid, by unfixing those motives which promote exertion, or by relaxing those habits which engender patient industry, might introduce negligence, inactivity, and disorder, into the most useful occupations of human life; and thereby deteriorate the condition of human life itself.

As moral agents, we should experience a still greater alteration; of which more will be said under the next article.

Although, therefore, the Deity, who possesses the power of winding and turning, as he pleases, the course of causes which issue from himself, do, in fact, interpose to alter or intercept effects which, without such interposition, would have taken place, yet it is by no means incredible that his Providence, which always rests upon final good, may have made a *reserve* with respect to the manifestation of his interference, a part of the very plan which he has appointed for our terrestrial existence, and a part conformable with, or in some sort required by, other parts of the same plan. It is at anyrate evident that a large and

ample province remains for the exercise of Providence, without its being naturally perceptible by us; because obscurity, when applied to the interruption of laws, bears a necessary proportion to the imperfection of our knowledge when applied to the laws themselves, or rather to the effects which these laws, under their various and incalculable combinations, would of their own accord produce. And if it be said that the doctrine of Divine Providence, by reason of the ambiguity under which its exertions present themselves, can be attended with no *practical* influence upon our conduct; that although we believe ever so firmly that there is a Providence, we must prepare, and provide, and act as if there were none; I answer, that this is admitted: and that we further allege, that so to prepare, and so to provide, is consistent with the most perfect assurance of the reality of a Providence; and not only so, but that it is probably one advantage of the present state of our information that our provisions and preparations are not disturbed by it. Or if it be still asked—Of what use at all, then, is the doctrine, if it neither alter our measures nor regulate our conduct? I answer again, that it is of the greatest use, but that it is a doctrine of sentiment and piety, not (immediately at least) of action or conduct; that it applies to the consolation of men's minds, to their devotions, to the excitement of gratitude, the support of patience, the keeping alive, and the strengthening of every motive for endeavouring to please our Maker; and that these are great uses.

Of all views under which human life has ever been considered, the most reasonable in my judgment is that which regards it as a state of *probation*. If the course of the world was separated from the contrivances of nature, I do not know that it would be necessary to look for any other account of it than what, if it may be called an account, is contained in the answer, that events rise up by chance. But since the contrivances of nature decidedly evince *intention*, and since the course of the world and the contrivances of nature have the same Author, we are, by the force of this connection, led to believe that the appearance under which events take place is reconcilable with the supposition of design on the part of the Deity. It is enough that they be reconcilable with this supposition; and it is undoubtedly true that they may be reconcilable, though we cannot reconcile them. The mind, however, which contemplates the works of nature, and in those works sees so much of means directed to ends, of beneficial effects brought about by wise expedients, of concerted trains of causes terminating in the happiest results; so much, in a word, of counsel, intention, and benevolence—a mind, I say, drawn into the habit of thought which these observations excite, can hardly turn its view to the condition of our own species, without endeavouring to suggest to itself some purpose, some design, for which

the state in which we are placed is fitted, and which it is made to serve. Now we assert the most probable supposition to be, that it is a state of moral probation; and that many things in it suit with this hypothesis, which suit no other. It is not a state of unmixed happiness, or of happiness simply: it is not a state of designed misery, or of misery simply: it is not a state of retribution: it is not a state of punishment. It suits with none of these suppositions. It accords much better with the idea of its being a condition calculated for the production, exercise, and improvement of moral qualities, with a view to a future state, in which these qualities, after being so produced, exercised, and improved, may, by a new and more favouring constitution of things, receive their reward, or become their own. If it be said that this is to enter upon a religious rather than a philosophical consideration, I answer that the name of Religion ought to form no objection, if it shall turn out to be the case that the more religious our views are, the more probability they contain. The degree of beneficence, of benevolent intention, and of power, exercised in the construction of sensitive beings, goes strongly in favour not only of a creative, but of a continuing care—that is, of a ruling Providence. The degree of chance which appears to prevail in the world requires to be reconciled to this hypothesis. Now it is one thing to maintain the doctrine of Providence along with that of a future state, and another thing without it. In my opinion, the two doctrines must stand or fall together. For although more of this apparent chance may perhaps, upon other principles, be accounted for than is generally supposed, yet a future state alone rectifies all disorders; and if it can be shown that the appearance of disorder is consistent with the uses of life as a *preparatory* state, or that in some respects it promotes these uses, then, so far as this hypothesis may be accepted, the ground of the difficulty is done away.

In the wide scale of human condition, there is not perhaps one of its manifold diversities which does not bear upon the design here suggested. Virtue is infinitely various. There is no situation in which a rational being is placed, from that of the best-instructed Christian down to the condition of the rudest barbarian, which affords not room for moral agency; for the acquisition, exercise, and display of voluntary qualities, good and bad. Health and sickness, enjoyment and suffering, riches and poverty, knowledge and ignorance, power and subjection, liberty and bondage, civilisation and barbarity, have all their offices and duties; all serve for the *formation* of character: for when we speak of a state of trial, it must be remembered that characters are not only tried, or proved, or detected, but that they are generated also, and *formed*, by circumstances. The best dispositions may subsist under the most depressed, the most afflicted fortunes. A

West Indian slave, who, amidst his wrongs, retains his benevolence, I, for my part, look upon as amongst the foremost of human candidates for the rewards of virtue. The kind master of such a slave—that is, he who, in the exercise of an inordinate authority, postpones in any degree his own interest to his slave's comfort—is likewise a meritorious character; but still he is inferior to his slave. All, however, which I contend for is, that these destinies, opposite as they may be in every other view, are both *trials;* and equally such. The observation may be applied to every other condition; to the whole range of the scale, not excepting even its lowest extremity. *Savages* appear to us all alike; but it is owing to the distance at which we view savage life, that we perceive in it no discrimination of character. I make no doubt but that moral qualities, both good and bad, are called into action as much, and that they subsist in as great variety in these inartificial societies, as they are or do in polished life. Certain at least it is, that the good and ill treatment which each individual meets with, depends more upon the choice and voluntary conduct of those about him, than it does or ought to do under regular civil institutions and the coercion of public laws. So again, to turn our eyes to the other end of the scale—namely, that part of it which is occupied by mankind enjoying the benefits of learning, together with the lights of revelation—there also the advantage is all along *probationary.* Christianity itself—I mean the revelation of Christianity—is not only a blessing, but a trial. It is one of the diversified means by which the character is exercised: and they who require of Christianity that the revelation of it should be universal, may possibly be found to require that one species of probation should be adopted, if not to the exclusion of others, at least to the narrowing of that variety which the wisdom of the Deity hath appointed to this part of his moral economy.*

Now if this supposition be well-founded—that is, if it be true that our ultimate, or our most permanent happiness, will depend, not upon the temporary condition into which we are cast, but upon our behaviour in it—then is it a much more fit subject of *chance* than we usually allow or apprehend it to be, in what manner the variety of external circumstances which subsist in the human world is distributed amongst the individuals of the species. 'This life being a state of probation, it is immaterial,' says Rousseau, 'what kind of trials we experience in it, provided

* The reader will observe that I speak of the revelation of Christianity as distinct from Christianity itself. The *dispensation* may already be universal. That part of mankind which never heard of CHRIST'S name, may nevertheless be redeemed—that is, be placed in a better condition, with respect to their future state, by his intervention; may be the objects of his benignity and intercession, as well as of the propitiatory virtue of his passion. But this is not 'natural theology;' therefore I will not dwell longer upon it.

they produce their effects.' Of two agents who stand indifferent to the moral Governor of the universe, one may be exercised by riches, the other by poverty. The treatment of these two shall appear to be very opposite, whilst in truth it is the same: for though in many respects there be great disparity between the conditions assigned, in one main article there may be none; namely, in that they are alike trials—have both their duties and temptations, not less arduous or less dangerous in one case than the other; so that, if the final award follow the character, the original distribution of the circumstances under which that character is formed, may be defended upon principles not only of justice, but of equality. What hinders, therefore, but that mankind may draw lots for their condition? They take their portion of faculties and opportunities, as any unknown cause or concourse of causes, or as causes acting for other purposes, may happen to set them out; but the event is governed by that which depends upon themselves, the application of what they have received. In dividing the talents, no rule was observed: none was necessary: in rewarding the use of them, that of the most correct justice. The chief difference at last appears to be, that the right use of more talents—that is, of a greater trust—will be more highly rewarded than the right use of fewer talents—that is, of a less trust. And since, for other purposes, it is expedient that there be an inequality of concredited talents here, as well, probably, as an inequality of conditions hereafter, though all remuneratory, can any rule, adapted to that inequality, be more agreeable, even to our apprehensions of distributive justice, than this is?

We have said that the appearance of *casualty*, which attends the occurrences and events of life, not only does not interfere with its uses as a state of probation, but that it promotes these uses.

Passive virtues, of all others the severest and the most sublime, of all others perhaps the most acceptable to the Deity, would, it is evident, be excluded from a constitution in which happiness and misery regularly followed virtue and vice. Patience and composure under distress, affliction, and pain; a steadfast keeping up of our confidence in God, and of our reliance upon his final goodness at the time when everything present is adverse and discouraging; and (what is no less difficult to retain) a cordial desire for the happiness of others, even when we are deprived of our own: these dispositions, which constitute perhaps the perfection of our moral nature, would not have found their proper office and object in a state of avowed retribution; and in which, consequently, endurance of evil would be only submission to punishment.

Again: one man's sufferings may be another man's trial. The family of a sick parent is a school of filial piety. The charities of

domestic life, and not only these, but all the social virtues, are called out by distress. But then misery, to be the proper object of mitigation, or of that benevolence which endeavours to relieve, must be really or apparently casual. It is upon such sufferings alone that benevolence can operate. For were there no evils in the world but what were punishments, properly and intelligibly such, benevolence would only stand in the way of justice. Such evils, consistently with the administration of moral government, could not be prevented or alleviated—that is to say, could not be remitted in whole or in part, except by the authority which inflicted them, or by an appellate or superior authority. This consideration, which is founded in our most acknowledged apprehensions of the nature of penal justice, may possess its weight in the Divine counsels. Virtue, perhaps, is the greatest of all ends. In human beings, relative virtues form a large part of the whole. Now relative virtue presupposes not only the existence of evil, without which it could have no object, no material to work upon, but that evils be, apparently at least, *misfortunes;* that is, the effects of apparent chance. It may be in pursuance, therefore, and in furtherance, of the same scheme of probation, that the evils of life are made so to present themselves.

I have already observed, that when we let in religious considerations, we often let in light upon the difficulties of nature. So in the fact now to be accounted for, the *degree* of happiness which we usually enjoy in this life may be better suited to a state of trial and probation than a greater degree would be. The truth is, we are rather too much delighted with the world than too little. Imperfect, broken, and precarious as our pleasures are, they are more than sufficient to attach us to the eager pursuit of them. A regard to a *future* state can hardly keep its place as it is. If we were designed, therefore, to be influenced by that regard, might not a more indulgent system, a higher or more uninterrupted state of gratification, have interfered with the design? At least it seems expedient that mankind should be susceptible of this influence when presented to them—that the condition of the world should not be such as to exclude its operation, or even to weaken it more than it does. In a religious view (however we may complain of them in every other), privation, disappointment, and satiety, are not without the most salutary tendencies.

CHAPTER XXVII.

CONCLUSION.

In all cases wherein the mind feels itself in danger of being confounded by variety, it is sure to rest upon a few strong points, or perhaps upon a single instance. Amongst a multitude of proofs, it is *one* that does the business. If we observe in any argument that hardly two minds fix upon the same instance, the diversity of choice shows the strength of the argument, because it shows the number and competition of the examples. There is no subject in which the tendency to dwell upon select or single topics is so usual, because there is no subject of which, in its full extent, the latitude is so great, as that of natural history applied to the proof of an intelligent Creator. For my part, I take my stand in human anatomy; and the examples of mechanism I should be apt to draw out from the copious catalogue which it supplies, are the pivot upon which the head turns, the ligament within the socket of the hip-joint, the pulley or trochlear muscles of the eye, the epiglottis, the bandages which tie down the tendons of the wrist and instep, the slit or perforated muscles at the hands and feet, the knitting of the intestines to the mesentery, the course of the chyle into the blood, and the constitution of the sexes as extended throughout the whole of the animal creation. To these instances the reader's memory will go back, as they are severally set forth in their places: there is not one of the number which I do not think decisive; not one which is not strictly mechanical; nor have I read or heard of any solution of these appearances which in the smallest degree shakes the conclusion that we build upon them.

But of the greatest part of those, who, either in this book or any other, read arguments to prove the existence of a God, it will be said that they leave off only where they began; that they were never ignorant of this great truth, never doubted of it; that it does not, therefore, appear what is gained by researches from which no new opinion is learned, and upon the subject of which no proofs were wanted. Now I answer, that by *investigation* the following points are always gained in favour of doctrines even the most generally acknowledged (supposing them to be true)—namely, stability and impression. Occasions will arise to try the firmness of our most habitual opinions; and upon these occasions it is a matter of incalculable use to feel our foundation; to find a support in argument for what we had taken up upon authority. In the present case, the arguments upon which the

conclusion rests are exactly such as a truth of universal concern ought to rest upon. 'They are sufficiently open to the views and capacities of the unlearned, at the same time that they acquire new strength and lustre from the discoveries of the learned.' If they had been altogether abstruse and recondite, they would not have found their way to the understandings of the mass of mankind; if they had been merely popular, they might have wanted solidity.

But secondly, what is gained by research in the stability of our conclusion, is also gained from it in *impression*. Physicians tell us that there is a great deal of difference between taking a medicine and the medicine getting into the constitution. A difference not unlike which, obtains with respect to those great moral propositions which ought to form the directing principles of human conduct. It is one thing to assent to a proposition of this sort, another, and a very different thing, to have properly imbibed its influence. I take the case to be this: perhaps almost every man living has a particular train of thought, into which his mind glides and falls when at leisure from the impressions and ideas that occasionally excite it; perhaps also the train of thought here spoken of, more than any other thing, determines the character. It is of the utmost consequence, therefore, that this property of our constitution be well regulated. Now it is by frequent or continued meditation upon a subject, by placing a subject in different points of view, by induction of particulars, by variety of examples, by applying principles to the solution of phenomena, by dwelling upon proofs and consequences, that mental exercise is drawn into any particular channel. It is by these means at least that we have any power over it. The train of spontaneous thought, and the choice of that train, may be directed to different ends, and may appear to be more or less judiciously fixed, according to the purpose in respect of which we consider it; but in a *moral view*, I shall not, I believe, be contradicted when I say, that if one train of thinking be more desirable than another, it is that which regards the phenomena of nature with a constant reference to a supreme intelligent Author. To have made this the ruling, the habitual sentiment of our minds, is to have laid the foundation of everything which is religious. The world thenceforth becomes a temple, and life itself one continued act of adoration. The change is no less than this—that whereas formerly God was seldom in our thoughts, we can now scarcely look upon anything without perceiving its relation to him. Every organised natural body, in the provisions which it contains for its sustentation and propagation, testifies a care on the part of the Creator expressly directed to these purposes. We are on all sides surrounded by such bodies; examined in their parts, wonderfully curious; compared with one another, no less wonderfully diversified. So that the

mind, as well as the eye, may either expatiate in variety and multitude, or fix itself down to the investigation of particular divisions of the science. And in either case it will rise up from its occupation, possessed by the subject, in a very different manner, and with a very different degree of influence, from what a mere assent to any verbal proposition which can be formed concerning the existence of the Deity—at least that merely complying assent with which those about us are satisfied, and with which we are too apt to satisfy ourselves—will or can produce upon the thoughts. More especially may this difference be perceived in the degree of admiration and of awe with which the Divinity is regarded, when represented to the understanding by its own remarks, its own reflections, and its own reasonings, compared with what is excited by any language that can be used by others. The works of nature want only to be contemplated. When contemplated, they have everything in them which can astonish by their greatness: for of the vast scale of operation through which our discoveries carry us, at one end we see an intelligent Power arranging planetary systems—fixing, for instance, the trajectory of *Saturn*, or constructing a ring of two hundred thousand miles diameter, to surround his body, and be suspended like a magnificent arch over the heads of his inhabitants; and at the other bending a hooked tooth, concerting and providing an appropriate mechanism for the clasping and reclasping of the filaments of the feather of the humming-bird. We have proof not only of both these works proceeding from an intelligent agent, but of their proceeding from the same agent; for in the first place, we can trace an identity of plan, a connection of system, from Saturn to our own globe; and when arrived upon our globe, we can, in the second place, pursue the connection through all the organised, especially the animated, bodies which it supports. We can observe marks of a common relation, as well to one another as to the elements of which their habitation is composed. Therefore one Mind hath planned, or at least hath prescribed, a general plan for all these productions. One Being has been concerned in all.

Under this stupendous Being we live. Our happiness, our existence, is in his hands. All we expect must come from him. Nor ought we to feel our situation insecure. In every nature, and in every portion of nature which we can descry, we find attention bestowed upon even the minutest parts. The hinges in the wings of an *earwig*, and the joints of its antennæ, are as highly-wrought as if the Creator had nothing else to finish. We see no signs or diminution of care by multiplicity of objects, or of distraction of thought by variety. We have no reason to fear, therefore, our being forgotten, or overlooked, or neglected.

The existence and character of the Deity is, in every view, the most interesting of all human speculations. In none, however, is

it more so than as it facilitates the belief of the fundamental articles of *Revelation*. It is a step to have it proved that there must be something in the world more than what we see. It is a further step to know that, amongst the invisible things of nature, there must be an intelligent Mind concerned in its production, order, and support. These points being assured to us by Natural Theology, we may well leave to Revelation the disclosure of many particulars which our researches cannot reach, respecting either the nature of this Being as the original cause of all things, or his character and designs as a moral governor; and not only so, but the more full confirmation of other particulars, of which, though they do not lie altogether beyond our reasonings and our probabilities, the certainty is by no means equal to the importance. The true theist will be the first to listen to *any* credible communication of Divine knowledge. Nothing which he has learned from Natural Theology will diminish his desire of further instruction, or his disposition to receive it with humility and thankfulness. He wishes for light: he rejoices in light. His inward veneration of this great Being will incline him to attend with the utmost seriousness not only to all that can be discovered concerning him by researches into nature, but to all that is taught by a revelation which gives reasonable proof of having proceeded from him.

But above every other article of revealed religion, does the anterior belief of a Deity bear with the strongest force upon that grand point which gives indeed interest and importance to all the rest—the resurrection of the human dead. The thing might appear hopeless, did we not see a power at work adequate to the effect, a power under the guidance of an intelligent Will, and a power penetrating the inmost recesses of all substance. I am far from justifying the opinion of those who 'thought it a thing incredible that God should raise the dead:' but I admit that it is first necessary to be persuaded that there *is* a God to do so. This being thoroughly settled in our minds, there seems to be nothing in this process (concealed as we confess it to be) which need to shock our belief. They who have taken up the opinion, that the acts of the human mind depend upon *organisation*, that the mind itself, indeed, consists in organisation, are supposed to find a greater difficulty than others do in admitting a transition by death to a new state of sentient existence, because the old organisation is apparently dissolved. But I do not see that any impracticability need be apprehended even by these; or that the change, even upon their hypothesis, is far removed from the analogy of some other operations which we know with certainty that the Deity is carrying on. In the ordinary derivation of plants and animals from one another, a particle, in many cases minuter than all assignable, all conceivable dimensions; an aura, an effluvium, an infinitesimal, determines the organisation of a future body—does no

less than fix whether that which is about to be produced shall be a vegetable, a merely sentient, or a rational being; an oak, a frog, or a philosopher; makes all these differences; gives to the future body its qualities, and nature, and species. And this particle, from which springs, and by which is determined, a whole future nature, itself proceeds from, and owes its constitution to, a prior body: nevertheless, which is seen in plants most decisively, the incepted organisation, though formed within, and through and by a preceding organisation, is not corrupted by its corruption, or destroyed by its dissolution: but on the contrary, is sometimes extricated and developed by those very causes; survives and comes into action when the purpose for which it was prepared requires its use. Now an economy which nature has adopted, when the purpose was to transfer an organisation from one individual to another, may have something analogous to it, when the purpose is to transmit an organisation from one state of being to another state: and they who found thought in organisation, may see something in this analogy applicable to their difficulties; for whatever can transmit a similarity of organisation, will answer their purpose, because, according even to their own theory, it may be the vehicle of consciousness, and because consciousness carries identity and individuality along with it through all changes of form or of visible qualities. In the most general case—that, as we have said, of the derivation of plants and animals from one another —the latent organisation is either itself similar to the old organisation, or has the power of communicating to new matter the old organic form. But it is not restricted to this rule. There are other cases, especially in the progress of insect life, in which the dormant organisation does not much resemble that which encloses it, and still less suits with the situation in which the enclosing body is placed, but suits with a different situation to which it is destined. In the larva of the libellula, which lives constantly, and has still long to live, under water, are descried the wings of a fly, which two years afterwards is to mount into the air. Is there nothing in this analogy? It serves at least to show that even in the observable course of nature, organisations are formed one beneath another; and amongst a thousand other instances, it shows completely that the Deity can mould and fashion the parts of material nature so as to fulfil any purpose whatever which he is pleased to appoint.

They who refer the operations of mind to a substance totally and essentially different from matter (as most certainly these operations, though affected by material causes, hold very little affinity to any properties of matter with which we are acquainted), adopt perhaps a juster reasoning and a better philosophy; and by these the considerations above suggested are not wanted, at least in the same degree. But to such persons as find, which some

persons do find, an insuperable difficulty in shaking off an adherence to those analogies which the corporeal world is continually suggesting to their thoughts; to such, I say, every consideration will be a relief which manifests the extent of that intelligent Power which is acting in nature, the fruitfulness of its resources, the variety, and aptness, and success of its means; most especially every consideration which tends to show that, in the translation of a conscious existence, there is not, even in their own way of regarding it, anything greatly beyond, or totally unlike, what takes place in such parts (probably small parts) of the order of nature as are accessible to our observation.

Again: if there be those who think that the contractedness and debility of the human faculties in our present state seem ill to accord with the high destinies which the expectations of religion point out to us, I would only ask them whether any one, who saw a child two hours after its birth, could suppose that it would ever come to understand *fluxions;** or who then shall say, what further amplification of intellectual powers, what accession of knowledge, what advance and improvement, the rational faculty, be its constitution what it will, may not admit of, when placed amidst new objects, and endowed with a sensorium adapted, as it undoubtedly will be, and as our present senses are, to the perception of those substances, and of those properties of things, with which our concern may lie.

Upon the whole, in everything which respects this awful, but, as we trust, glorious change, we have a wise and powerful Being (the author, in nature, of infinitely various expedients for infinitely various ends) upon whom to rely for the choice and appointment of means adequate to the execution of any plan which his goodness or his justice may have formed, for the moral and accountable part of his terrestrial creation. That great office rests with *him:* be it *ours* to hope and to prepare, under a firm and settled persuasion that, living and dying, we are his; that life is passed in his constant presence; that death resigns us to his merciful disposal.

* See Search's Light of Nature, *passim*.

EDINBURGH:
PRINTED BY W. AND R. CHAMBERS.